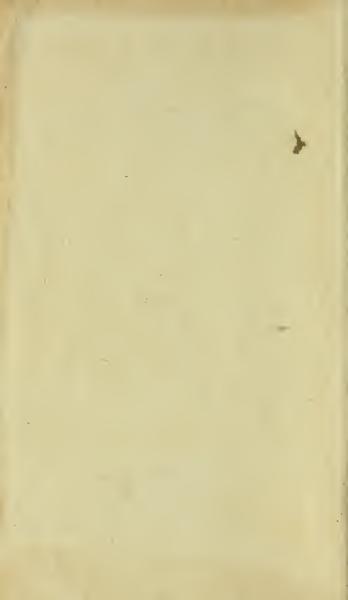




Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2008 with funding from Microsoft Corporation





FRONTISPIECE.



Attach'd by Sickness, and to Pain a Prey, I keep my Humour chearful; still, and gay, With sour Grimace, and magisterial Pride Those canting Sots the Stoicks Pain defid, Yet fell beneath the Burthen, when 'twas try'd; None but my Self did e'er that pitch attain, To sport with Misery, and jest in Pain.

THE WHOLE

Comical Works

Monf. SCARRON.

In Two Volumes.

Containing his comical All his Novels and Histo-Romance of a Company Three Parts complete.

VOL. II. of Stage-Players. In His felect Letters, Cha-Three Parts complete. racters, &c.

A great Part of which never before in English.

Translated by Mr. Tho. Brown, Mr. Savage, and Others.

---Ridiculum acri Fortius & Melius Magnas plerumque secat res. Hor. Rebus in Angustis facile est contemmere Vitam: Fortiter ille facit, qui miser esse potest.

Vol. I.

The SEVENTH EDITION, Revis'd and Corrected

LONDON:

Printed for D. BROWNE, C. HITCH and L. HAWES. J. CLARKE, H. WHITRIDGE, J. SUCKBURGH. C. BATHURST, J. RIVINGTON and J. FLETCHER, W. Johnston, J. Ward, P. Davey and B. Law. T. Caston and R. Whithy.

M DCC LIX.



CHARACTER

OF

Monf. SCARRON's Works.

In a LETTER from

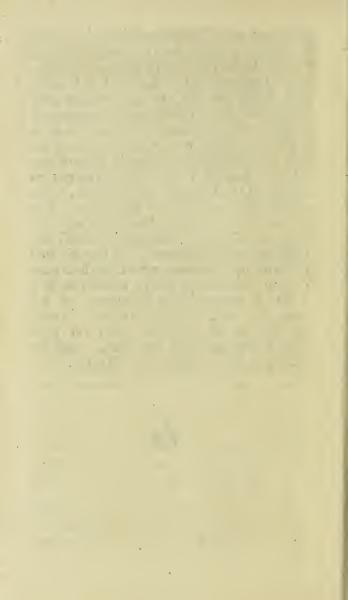
The Famous Monf. DE BALZAC to Monfieur COSTAR.

英文英 H E Book you fent me from T & Monsieur Scarron, was a very acceptable Present, and such an One as I am obliged to set a great Value upon fo long as I live. I had fcarce opened it, but it performed a Cure on me, and gave me Ease in a cruel Fit of the Spleen, which had certainly done my Business, had not this Cordial come fo feafonably to my Relief. I hope it will work greater Cures, if I often apply it. Perhaps it will rid me of my pensive Melancholy, and philosophical Sadness: Perhaps it will teach me to rhime, to make me chearful by Contagion. To deal plainly with you, this Friend of ours, Monf. Scarron, is a strange Sort of a Gentleman. With all his Diftempers he has fomething in him, tho' I know not how to describe it, better than Health, I mean a stupid insensible Health; for I need not to tell you that the Arabians call Joy the Quinteffence and Elixir of a lively active Health. Now fince you are A 3 defirous

defirous to know my different Thoughts of our Author, and require me to fay fomething. particular on this Head, I must tell you he is either the most diffembling or the most resolute Man in the Universe. I farther add, that he is a living Testimony that Mankind is not so effeminate as is commonly believed, unless Pain uses him more gently than it does other Men. One that has convers'd with his Writings, and fees him so merry in his Afflictions, would think that the Executioner flattered the Sufferer. I never see him laugh in the Midst of his Torments, but he makes me think his Pain does not give him any Smart, but only Titillation. In short, I will affirm, that Prometheus, Hercules, and PhiloEtetes in our Fables, to fay nothing of Job in his real History, speak abundance of great and many Things in the Height of their Pains, yet nothing that is gay and cheerful. Among the Ancients, I have frequently met with those Griefs that have been fedate and calm, which have appeared to be wife and eloquent, but I never found a Grief that was cheerful till now; or a Soul that was able to dance a Saraband or Jig in a paralytical Body. So pleafant a Prodigy as this, deferves the Confideration of our curious Virtuofos. History ought not to forget it; and if ever the Whim takes me to fet up for an Historian, as I am already an Historiographer, I shall reckon this among the greatest Wonders of our Age, which has been fo fruitful in Miracles. What would

would not your Friend Seneca have said upon fo noble a Subject, he that took fo much Pleasure to treat of these Matters, and so often fought Opportunities of doing it? Is it not a plain Case, that the arrogant and haughty Virtue, whichis so extravagantly commended by him, and who pretends to be at ease even in Phalaris's Bull, nay, maintains that Pain itself is a Bleffing, falls infinitely short of this easy and humble Virtue, which can put in Execution the Paradoxes of the Stoicks, without the least Touch of their Ostentation? Let us therefore conclude in Honour of our Author, either there is something of Extasy and Possession in his Distemper, and that his Soul performs it's Functions a-part, without concerning itself with his Body; or else that he is a Man of extraordinary Resolution and Vigour, and in the perpetual Dispute between his Soul and his Body, the nobler Part finds those Advantages over the others, which the Stronger use to have over the Weaker.







TO THE

Courteous READER.

That never faw me.

Nknown Friend, who never faw's me in thy Life, Af II As and perhaps never troubled thy self much about it, because there is no great Matter to be got by the Sight of Such a Fellow as I am: Be it known to thee, that neither am I desirous thou shouldst see my Person, but that I have been informed that some facetious Gentlemen make themselves merry at the Expence of an unhappy Wretch, and describe me another Sort of a Monster than really I am. Some affirm my Rump-bone sticks out like the Ace of Spades, by the Same Token that it preforates all my Breeches, and that I am set upon a Table in a Cage, where I chatter like a blind Magpy. Others will tell you, and sever to it too if you would have them, that my Hat is fastened to a Cord which runs through a Pully, and that I pluck it up or let it down, as often as I am to compliment any Friend that does me the Honour of a Visit.

I therefore thought myself obliged in Conscience and all that, to prevent their telling so many horrid Lies, and for that Reason have ordered my Picture to be engraven, as thou sess it

To the Courteous READER.

in the Beginning of this Book. I know thou wilt grumble, Courteous Reader, for every Reader in the World is a Grumbletonian more or less; and for my Part, I can grumble as well as the best of ye, when it is my Turn to be a Reader: Thou wilt grumble in thy Gizzard, I say, and snarl and quarrel, and huff, and puff, because for sooth, I show thee my Backside. But prithee, old Friend, don't be too Choleric. Affure thyself I did not do it with a Design to turn my Breech upon the Company; but only because the Convexity of my Back is more proper to receive an Inscription than the . Concavity of my Stomach, which is wholly covered by the Penthouse of my Head, that hangs over it, and because the Situation, or rather the irregular Plan if my Person may be seen as well behind as before. I am not such a Coxcomb as to pretend to make a Present to the Public (for by those jolly Damsels the nine Muses, I swear and protest I never dreamed in my Life of seeing my Head stamped in a Medal) but I would have had my Picture drawn, if I could have found a Painter bold enough to take my Phyz in Black and White. For want of a Picture, therefore, I'll describe myself to thee as near as I can.

I am past Thirty, as thou mayst see by the Back of my Chair. If I live to be Forty, I shall add the Lord knows bow many Missortunes to those I have already suffered for these eight or nine Years past. There was a Time when my Stature was not to be found fault with, tho' now it is of the Smallest. My Sickness has taken me shorter by a Foot: My Head is somewhat too big considering my Height, and my Face is full enough in all Conscience for one that carries such a Skeleton of a Body about him. I have Hair enough.

To the Courteous READER.

on my Head not to fland in need of a Perizvig, and it is gray too, in Spight of the Proverb. My Sight is good enough, the' my Eyes are large; they are of a blue Colour, and one of them is sunk deeper into my Head than the other, ruhich was occasioned by my leaning on that Side. My Nose is well enough mounted. My Teeth, which in the Days of Yore looked like a Row of Square Pearl, are now of an Ashen Colour, and in a few Years more, will have the Complexion of a Smallcoal Man's Saturday Shirt. I have lost one Tooth and a half on the left Side, and two and a half pree fely on the Right, and I have two more that fland somewhat out of their Ranks. My Legs and Thighs in the first Place compose an obtuse Angle, than an equal one, and lastly an acute. My Thighs and Body make another, and my Head leaning perfectually over my Belly, I fancy makes me not very unlike the Letter. Z. My Arms are shortened as well as my Legs, and my Fingers as well as my Arms. In short, I am a living Epitome of human Misery. This, as near as I can give it, is my Shape. Since I am now got fo far, I will e'en tell thee something of my Humour. Under the Rose be it spoken, Courteous Reader, I do this only to fwell the Bulk of my Book, at the Request of the Bookseller, the poor Dog it seems being afraid he should be a Loser by this Impression, if he did not give the Buyer enough for his Money: Were it not for this, a Digression of this Nature would be to no Purpose as avell as a thousand more. But to our Comfort be it said, ours is not the first Aga wherein People have played the Fools out of Complaifance, not to reckon the Follics they commit of their own Heads.

I was always a little Choleric, a little given to my Guts, and a little Lazy. I frequently call my Man Son of a Whore

To the Courteous READER.

and Fool, and a little after falute him Sir. I hate no Man, and could wish all the World did the same by me. I am as blithe as a Bird when I kave Money, and should be much more, were I in Health. I am merry enough in Company. I am content enough when alone. I bear all my Ills pretty patiently. And now as I humbly conceive, the Porch is big enough for the House, and it is high Time for me to conclude.



TABLE

OFTHE

CHAPTERS

IN THE

COMICAL ROMANCE.

<u> </u>
The FIRST PART.
Chap. Page.
I. K Company of Strollers come to the Town of
A Mans
What Sort of Man la Rapiniere was 2
III. 無無無 What deplorable Success the Play had 5
IV. Wherein farther mention is made of Monsieur la Rap-
piniere, and of what happened that Night at his
House 8
V. Which contains no great Matter . 10
VI. The Adventure of the Chamber-pot: What Disturb-
ance Rancour made that Night in the Inn: The Ar-
rival of Part of the Strolling Company: Doguin's
Death; and other memorable Occurrences. 14
VII. The Adventure of the Litters 18
VIII. Wherein are contained many Things necessary to be
known, for the understanding of this true History 20
IX. The History of the Invisible Mistress 23
X. How Ragotin received a Blow on the Fingers with a
B usk 39
XI. Which contains what you will find, if you will but take
the Pains to read it

XII. A

The CONTENTS.

XII. A Combat in the Night	48
XIII. The History of Destiny and Mrs. Star	53
XIV. How the Curate of Domfront was carried away	70
XV. The Operator, or Mountebank's Arrival in the	Inn.
A Continuation of the History of Destiny and Star.	A
Serenade	74
XVI. The opening of the Stage, with other Matters of	f no
less Consequence	99
XVII. The ill Success of Ragotin's Civility	103
XVIII. The Continuation of the History of Desliny	and
Star	105
XIX. Some Reflections which are not amiss. Rago	tin's
new Disgrace, and other Things, which you may	read
if you please	115
XX. The shortest in this present Book. Ragotin's Fast	l'off
bis Horse, and something of the like Nature which	hap-
pened 29 Roquebrune	120
XXI. Which perhaps will not be found very entertaining	122
XXII. The Imposter outwitted, a Novel	125
XXIII. An unexpetted Misfortune, which prevented	the
acting of the Play.	143
The SECOND PART.	-\$
	Page
I. Thich ferve only as an Introduction to the rest	148
II. VV Of the Boots	151
III. The History of Mrs. Cave	155
VIV. How Destiny found Leander	165
V. Leander's History	167
VI. A cuffing Battle; the Death of mine Hoft, and	
memorable Matters	171
	VII.

The CONTENTS.

WHI. Ragotin's panie Fear, attended by several	Mishaps.
The Adventure of the dead Body. A Shower	
Boxes, and other surprizing Accidents, worth	
a Place allotted them in this true History	175
VIII. What became of Ragotin's Foot	183
IX. Another of Ragotin's Misfortunes	188
X. How Madam Bouvillon could not resist acertain	n Tempta-
tion; and besides, bow she got a Bunch in	
head	191
XI. Of what perhaps will entertain the least of	the whole
Book	195
XII. Which it may be will be as little diverting a.	the fore-
going	200
VXIII. An unhandsom Action of the Sieur la Raj	piniere;
and a farther Account of Madam Star's and	Destiny's
Travels	205
XIV. The Judge in her own Cause, a Novel	209
VXV. A matchless Piece of Impudence in the Sieur	· la Rap-
piniere	239
XVI. Ragotin's Misfortune	241
VXVII. Some Passages between the little Ragotin	and the
great Baguenodiere	250
XVIII. Which has no Occasion for a Title	256
XIX. Of the two Rival Brothers, a Novel	258
XX. How Ragotin's Sleep came to be disturbed	283
The THIRD PART.	I
Chap	Page
Chap W Hich may ferve for an Introduction to Part	the third
	286
II. Where you will find Ragotin's Design	290
	III. Lean-

The CONTENTS.

III. Leander's Project and Harrangue, together with	Ra-
gotin's being admitted among the Strollers	292
IV. Of Leander's Departure; the Strollers going for A	len-
go 1, and Ragotin's Missiriune	298
V. What happened to the Strollers between Vivain	ana
Alengon, together with another Misfortune of R.	ago-
tin's	304
VI. Of Saldagne's Death	310
VII. The Sequel of Mrs. Cave's History	316
VIII. The End of Mrs. Cave's History	325
IX. How Rancour undeceived Ragotin concerning Ma	idam
Star; together with the Arrival of a Coach fun	ll of
Gentry, and some other Comical Adventures of Ri	ago-
tin's	324
X. The History of the Prior of St. Lewis, and the	Arri-
val of Monf. Nerville	330
XI. Resolution of Destiny's marrying with Star, and L	ean-
der with Angelica	341
XII. What happened in the Journey to Fresnaye, as like	τυἐ∫ε
another Misfortune of Ragotin's	344
XIII. The Continuation and Conclusion of the Prior of	St.
	346
XIV. Verville's Return, accompanied by Monsieur la	Ga-
rouffiere. The Actors and Actre Jes Marriages; toge	ther
with an Adventure of Ragotin's	368
XV. The two Jealous Ladies, a Novel	374
XVI. The Capricious Lady, a Novel	379
XVII. Ragotin's Despair and Death, with the End	d of
the Comical Romance.	386



SCARRON'S

Comical Romance.

${f P}$ A R ${f T}$ ${f I}.$

CHAP. I.

A Company of Strollers come to the Town of Mans.

RIGHT Phæbus had already performed above half his Career; and his Chariot having past the Meridian, and got on the Declivity of the Sky, rolled on swifter than he defired. Had his Horses been willing to have made use of the Slopingness of the Way, they might have sinished the Remainder of the Day in less than half a Quarter of an Hour: But instead of pulling amain, they curvetted about, snuffling a briny Air, which set them a neighing, and made them sensible that they were near the Sea, where their Father is said to take his Rest every Night.

Night. To speak more like a Man, and in plainer Terms; it was betwixt five and fix of the Clock, when a Cart came into the Market-place of Mans: This Cart was drawn by two Yoke of lean Oxen led by a breeding Mare, who had a Colt that skipped to and fro like a filly Creature as he was. The Cart was laden with Trunks, Portmanteaus, and great Packs of painted Clothes, that made a Sort of Pyramid; on the Top of which fat a Damfel, in a half City, half Country Drefs. A young Man, as poor in Clothes as rich in Mien, walked by the Side of the Cart: He had a great Patch on his Face (which covered one of his Eyes, and half of one Cheek) and carried a long Birding-Piece on his Shoulder, wherewith he had murthered feveral Magpies, Jays, and Crows, which having strung together, made him a Soit of Bandileer; at the Bottom of which hung a Hen and Goofe, that looked as if they had been taken from the Enemy by Way of Plunder. Instead of a Hat he wore a Night-cap, tied about his Head with Garters of several Colours; and which was, without doubt, a Kind of unfinished Turbant. His Doublet was a Grifet-Coat, girt about with a Leather Thong; which served likewise to support a Rapier so very long, that it could not be used dextroufly without the Help of a Rest. He wore a Pair of Breeches tucked up to above the Middle of his Thighs, like those that Players have when they represent an ancient Hero. Instead of Shoes he wore Tragic Buskins, bespattered with Dirt up to the Ancles. An old Man, something more regular in his Dress, tho' in very ordinary Habit, walked by his Side. He carried a Base-viol on his Shoulders; and because he stooped a little as he went, one might have taken him at a Distance for a great Tortoise walking upon his hind Feet. Some Critic or other will perhaps find Fault with the Comparison by reason of the Disproportion between that Creature and a Man: But I speak of those great Tortoises that are to be found in the Indies; and besides, I make bold to use the Simile upon my own Authority. Let's return to our strolling Company. They passed by the Tennis Court at the Hind; before which were then assembled several of the chief Men of the Town. The Novelty of our Strollers Equipage, and the Noise of . the Mob, who by this Time had gathered about the Cart. drew the Eyes of all those honourable Burgo-Masters upon our unknown Travellers. Amongst

the rest, a + Lieutenant to the Pro-+ An under Sheriff.

vost, la Rappiniere by Name, made

up to them, and with the Authority of a Magistrate, asked them, Who they were? The young Man, whom I described before, without offering to pull off his Turbant, (because with one Hand he held his Gun, and with the other the Hilt of his Sword, lest it should beat against his Legs) answered him, That they were Frenchmen by Birth, and Players by Profession: That his Stage-Name was Destiny; his old Comrade's Rancour; and the Gentlewoman (who fat roofling like a Hen on the Top of their Baggage) Cave. This odd Name fet some of the Company a laughing; whereupon the young Stroller added, That the Name of Cave ought not to feem more strange to Men of Wit, than those of la Montagne, Valley, Rose or Thorn, The Converfation ended with the Noise of Blows, curfing, and swearing, that was heard before the Cart. This Squabble had been occasioned by the Servant of the Tennis-Court's falling foul upon the Carter, without faying why, or wherefore; yet the Reason was, because his Oxen and Mare had been a little too free with a Truss of Hay that lay before the Door. However, the Combatants were at length parted; and the Mistress of the Tennis-Court, who loved to hear a Play more than a Sermon or Vespers, out of unheard-of Generofity in a Keeper of a Tennis-Court, bid the Carter let his Cattle eat their Bellies full. He took her at her Word: And whilst the hungry Beasts were feeding, the Author rested a while, and bethought himself what he should say in the next Chapter.

CHAP. II.

What Sort of Man la Rappiniere ques.

HE Sieur la Rappiniere was at that Time the Droll or Jester of Mans; for you must know there is not a Town in France, tho' never so small, but has such an Animai B 2

mal belonging to it The City of Parishas feveral in each Ward; and I my felf might have been the Lester of mine had I been willing to undertake it. But every Body knows, 'tis a long Time fince I have forfaken all the Vanities of this World. To return to Monsieur la Rappiniere; he foon renewed the Converfation which the Squabble had interrupted, and asked the young Player, Whether their Company confifted only of Mrs. Cave, Monsieur Rancour and himfelf? Our Company, answered he, is as compleat as that of the Prince of Orange, or of his Grace the Duke of Epernon; but through a Misfortune that befel us at Tours, where our rattle-headed Door-keeper happened to kill one of the Fuzileers of the Intendant of the Province, we were forced to fly in a hurry, and in the fad Pickle you fee us. Those Fuzileers of the Intendants, said la Rappiniere, have been as t oublesome to you Strollers at la Flesche: Ay, a l'ox take them faid the the Mistress of the Tennis-Court, If they could help it we should have no Plays. Nay, answered the old Stroller, had we but the Keys of our Trunks, we might entertain the Town for four or five Days, for all them, before we reach Alençon, where the rest of our Company are to rendezvous. This Player's Answer made every Body to prick up their Ears: La Rappiniere offe ed an old Gown of his Wife's to Cave; and the Tennis-Women two of three Suits of Clothes, which had been left with her in Pawn, to Desliny and Rancour. But, added some of the Standers by, there are but three of you. No Matter for that, replied Rancour, for I once acted a whole Play myfelf, and represented the King Queen and the Ambassador with my single Person. I made use of a salse treble Tone when I personated the Queen; I fpoke thro' the Nose for the Ambassador, and addressed myfelf to the Crown which I placed upon a Chair; and as for the King, I refumed my Seat, Crown and Gravity, and lowered the Key of my Voice to a Bafe. Now, to convince you of this, if you will fatisfy our Carter, defray our Charges in the Inn, and lend us what Clothes you can spare, we will act still before Night; otherwise we must beg leave to go to drink, or rest ourselves, for w? are come a great Way. The Company liked the Prope al,

but that Devil ia Rappiniere, who was ever hatching some Mischief or other, said there was no Occasion for any other Clothes, than those of two young Men of the Town, who were then playing a Set at Tennis, and that Mrs. Cave in her ordinary Dress, might pass for any Thing in a Play. No sooner said but done; in less than half a Quarter of an Hour the Strollers drank three or four Glasses of Winsapiece, shifted themselves; and the Company, who by this Time had encreased to a full Audience, having taken their Places in an upper Room, a dirty Cloth, instead of a painted Curtain, was drawn up, which discovered Desting lying on a Quilt, with a Strawberry Basket on his Head, in the room of a Crown, rubbing his Eyes, like one who had waked out of his Sleep, and mouthing in the Tone of Mondori, the Part of Herod, which begins thus:

Injurious Phantom, that distrubs my Reft.

The Patch which almost covered one Half of his Face, did not hinder him from shewing himself an excellent Player: Madam Cave acted to Admiration the Parts of Marianne and Salone; Rancour pleased every Body with his Actions; and the Play was carrying on to a happy Conclusion; when the Devil, who never sleeps interposed, and made the Tragedy end, not with the Death of Marianne, and Herod's Despair, but with a thousand Custs, and Boxes on the Ears, as many Kicks, numberless Oaths; and last of all, a Verbal Process and Information, which was taken out by la Rapipiniere, the most skilful of all Men in those Marters.

CHAP. III.

What deplorable Success the Play had.

IN all the inferior Towns of the Kingdom, there's senerally a Tennis-Court, whither all the idle People are used to refort, some to play, others only to look on. 'Tis in those Places where cursing and swearing passes for a Rhetorical Flourish, and where the absent are murthered with the Tongues of Backbiters and Bullies; no Man escapes

B 3

Scot-

Scot-free; there all live in open Defiance, and every Body is admitted to rail, according to his Talent. 'Twas in one of these Tennis-Courts, if my Memory fails me not, that I left three comical Persons, reciting Marianne before an honourable Company; at which prefided Monsieur la Rappiniere. Now while Herod and Marianne were telling each other their Faults, the two young Men, whose Cloaths they had fo freely borrowed, came into the Room in their Drawers, each of them with his Racket in his Hand, having neglected to get themselves rubbed, that they might come and hear the Play. They were not long in the Room before they perceived that Herod and Phercres had their Cloaths on; when the most passionate of the two addressing himself to the Waiter of the Tennis-Court; Thou Son of a Bitch, faid he to him, Why didst thou give my Cloaths to that Mountebank? The innocent Waiter, who knew him to be a brutish Sort of a Man, told him with great Humility, that he had no Hand in it. Who then, Scoundrel? added he. The poor Fellow durst not accuse la Rappiniere in his Prefence; but he himself the most insolent of all Men, rifing from his Seat, told him, 'Twas I; What have you to fay to it; That you are a Rascal, replied the other; and at the same Time gave him a plaguy Blow over the Pate with his Racket. La Rappiniere was fo furprized to be firuck first, whereas he used to be beforehand with all Men, that he flood motionless, either thro' Amazement, or because he was not yet angry enough, and that 'twas not a small Provocation that could make him resolve to fight, tho' it were but at Fifty-Cuffs. Nay, perhaps the Quarrel had gone no farther, had not his Man, who was more choleric than he, fallen foul upon the Aggreffor, and dealt him a found Cuff on the Chops, and in the Middle of his Face, and afterwards in a great many other Places where he could find room to imprint his Fury. La Rappiniere charged him behind, and worked on him like one that had received the first Provocation: A Relation of his Adversaries invested la Rappiniere after the same Manner. This Relation was attacked by one of la Rappiniere's Friends, in order to make a Diversion: This Combatant was assaulted by another, and this last again by another.

In thort, the whole Audience divided into Parties; fome curit and fwore; others called Names; all beat one another. The Tennis-Woman, who faw her Goods broken to pieces, rent the Air with doleful Cries. In all Probability they had murdered one another with Stools, Kicks, and Cuffs, had not some of the Magistrates of the Town (who happened at that Time to be walking in the Piazza of the Market-place, with des Esfars, Seneschal of Mayne) ran with all Speed to the Squabble. Some proposed to throw two or three Pails full of Water on the Combatants: which perhaps might have been fuccessful; however, they at length gave over fighting, theo' Weariness: Besides two Capuchins, who out of Charity flung themselves into the Field of Battle, procured, tho' not a firm, Peace betwixt the contending Parties, yet a Sort of Truce; during which a Negotiation was let on foot, without derogating from the Informations that were taken on both Sides, in order to a Trial in due Course of Law. Definy, one of the Strollers, performed Wonders at boxing; whose great Actions are talked of to this very Day in the Town of Mans, according to the faithful Account delivered by the two young Men that raised the Squabble, whom he particularly engaged, and almost cuffed to death; besides a great many others of the Enemy, whom he disabled with the first Blow. Having loft his Patch in the Scuffle, People took Notice his Face was as fine as his Shape. The bloody Nofes were handsomly washed with clean Water: Those that had their Bands torn, put on others instead of them; Cataplasms were applied where Need required; fome few Stitches ferved to darn many a torn Doublet; and the Houshold-Goods were fet in their proper Places, tho' not so found and whole as they were before. In short, a Moment after, there remained nothing of the Fight but a great Spight and Animofity, which appeared in the Faces of those of both Parties. The poor Strollers went out a long while after the Combat with la Rappiniere, who was still for making Speeches. In their Way from the Tennis-Court to the Market-place, they were invested by feven or eight Bullies, with Swords in their Hands; la Rappiniere, according to Custom, was in a great Fright, and indeed not without Cause, had not Destiny

Destiny generously thrust himself between him and a Sword which was about to run him through; however he could not so well parry the Thrust, but that he received a small Wound in the Arm. Thereupon he drew his Rapier, and in the twinkling of an Eye, beat two Swords out of the Hands of the Enemy, broke two or three Skulls, batte ed and flashed as many Faces, and discomfitted so dextrously the Gentlemen of the Ambuscade, that all the By standers unanimously confessed, they never had seen so valiant a Champion. This abortive Plot had been laid against la Roffiniere, by two Squires, whereof one married the Sifter of him who begun the Fight with a great Blow with a Racket, by which, in all Likelihood, la Rappiniere had been spoiled for ever, but for the valiant Protector, whom Providence had raifed for him in the Person of our flout Player. This Benefit melted his Heart of Flint, insomuch, that he would not suffer the miserable Remains af a scattered Company of Strollers to lodge in an Inn; but brought them to his own House, where the Carter having laid down the firolling Furniture, returned Home to his Village.

CHAP. IV.

Wherein farther Mention is made of Monsteur la Rappiniere; and of what happened that Night at his House.

Adam la Rappiniere received the Company with a great deal of Civility, as being the most submissive of Wives; she was indifferently handsome, tho' so very lean and dry, that she never snuffed a Candle with her Fingers, but they presently catched Fire. I could relate thousand curious Stories about her, which I pass by for fear of being tedious. The first Compliments were scarce over when the two Ladies grew so well acquainted, that they began with My Dear, and My Dearest. La Rappiniere, who was as great a Braggadochie as any in the World, was no sooner come into the Room, but he bid somebody go to the Kitchin and Larder, and hasten Supper. This was a meer Rodomantade; for besides his Valet, who

likewise drest his Horses, there was no body in his House, but a young Maid, and an old lame Woman, as crazy as a mangy Dog. His Vanity was punished by an Accident, that filled him with Confusion; he was used to diet at the Tavern, at the Expence of Fools and Bubbles, whilft his Wife and his orderly Family we e reduced to feed on Soop and Cabbage, according to the Cultom of that Country: Now, being willing to make a Shew before his Gueits, and treat them nobly, he was going to flip behind his Back, some Money into the Hands of his Man, to setch fomething for Supper; but thro' the Awkardness either of the Servant or the Master, the Pence fell on the Chair he fat on, and from thence to the Ground. La Rappiniere looked blue upon it; his Wife blushed; the Man cursed; Cave was uneasy; Rancour, perhaps, did not mind it; and as for Destiny, I could not well learn what Effect it had upon his Mind. However, the Money was taken up, and whilft Supper was getting ready, they engaged in Conversation. La Rappiniere asked Destiny, Why he disguised: his Face with a Patch? He answered, He had great Reafon to do it; and as he had other Cloaths on by Accident, fo he likewife defigned to make his Face unknown to fome Enemies he had. At last Supper came in, good or bad: La Rappiniere drank so much, that he made himself fuddled; Rancour had his Load; Destiny supped like a sober well-bred Man; Cave like a familhed Player; and Madam la Rappiniere like one who had a Mind to lay hold of the Opportunity; that is to fay, fo very greedily, that she got a Surfeit. Whilft the Servants were at Supper, and the Beds making, la Rappiniere teazed his Guests with a thousand Stories full of Vanity. Destiny lay in a little. Room by himself; Cave in a Closet with the Chamber-Maid; and Rancour with the Valet I know not where. They all had a great Mind to sleep, some thro' Weariness, others for having supped too plentifully, and yet they slept but little; fo true it is, that there is nothing certain in this World. After her first Sleep, Madam la Rappiniere had an Inclination to go where Kings are forced to go themselves in Person; her Husband waked at the same Time, and the? he had not recovered his Drunkenness, yet he found B 5

10 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

himself alone: He called his Wise; no body answered: Whereupon he grew jealous, fell in a Passion; and instantly rose out of his Bed in a Fury. As soon as he was got out of the Chamber, he heard a stamping of Feet before him, and for fome Time followed the Noise thro' a little Gallery, that led to Desliny's Room. He found himself so near what he pursued, that he trod upon its Heels, and thinking it to be his Wife, he was going to lay hold on her, crying out, You Whore! But his Hands could catch nothing, and his Feet stumbling at the same Time, he fell down upon his Nofe, and felt fomething that was pointed running into his Breast: Thereupon he cried out after a most hideous Manner, Murder! Murder! I am stabbedwithout letting go his Wife, whom he thought he held by the Hair, and was struggling under him. His Cries and Oaths set all the House in an Uproar, and every body ran to his Assistance; the Maid with a Candle; Rancour and the Valet in their dirty Shirts; Cave in a tattered Petticoat; Destiny with a Sword in his Hand, and Madam la Rattiniere last of all, who, like all the rest, was not a little surprifed to fee her furious Husband grappling with a Shegoat, which was kept in the House to suckle some young Puppies, whose Dam happened to die. No Man was ever fo much out of Countenance, as la Rappiniere : His Wife, who prefently suspected the Truth of the Matter, asked him if he was mad? He answered, without knowing well what he faid, That he had taken the Goat for a Thief; Destiny guessed the Business; every one returned to his Bed, and made what Confiruction he thought fit upon the Adventure; as for the Goat, she was shut up again with her Puppies.

CHAP. V.

Which contains no great Matter.

HE Stroller Rancour, one of the principal Heroes of our Romance, for one alone will not ferve our turn; and fince there's nothing more perfect than the Hero of a Book; half a Dozen Heroes, or such as would be thought to, will do more Credit to mine than a single one, who might

might happen to be the least talked of, fince all human Things are subject to the Caprice of Fortune. Rancour I fay, was one of those Misanthropists, who hate every body, and do not love even themselves: Nay, I was told by feveral credible Persons, that no Man ever saw him laugh. He had a pretty deal of Wit, and an indifferent Talent in making doggrel Rhimes: He was not over-stocked with Honour or Conscience upon any Account; and be: fides, he was as malicious as an old Monkey, and envious as a samished Dog. He found sault with all of his Prosesfion, according to his Opinion; Bellerese was too affected; . Mindori too rough; Floridor wanted Spirit; and so of the rest; by which he infinuated, that he was the only Player without Fault; whereas he was fuffered in the Company, merely on the Score of his being an old Stander. When the Stage was reduced to Hardy's Plays, he acted the Parts of Nuries in a treble Tone, and with a Vizor; but fince the Stage had been improved, he overlooked the Door-keeper, acted the Parts of Confidents, Ambassadors, and Bailiffs Setters, when there was occasion to attend a King, murder any body, or fight a Battle. He fung but fcurvily the Tenor in Opera's, and was Jack-pudding in Farces. Upon these great Accomplishments, he had built an unsufferable Pride, which was attended with an unexhausted Faculty of railing and flandering, and a quarreifome Humour, which however was supported by a little Courage: All these made him to be feared by his Comrades, Destiny only excepted, with whom he was as tame as a Lamb, and shewed himself as reasonable as his natural Inclination would fuffer him. 'Twas once given out, that he was beaten by Destiny; but that Report did not continue, no more than that about his having so great an Assection for other Peoples Goods, that he would fometimes feize upon them clandestinely: Yet upon the Whole, he was the best Man in the World. I remember I acquainted you before, how he lay with la Rappiniere's Man, by Name Deguin: Now whether the Bed was none of the best, or that Doguin was but an ill Bed-fellow, it so happened, that he could not fleep a Wink all Night. He rose at break of Day, as well as Doguin, who was called up by his Master, when going bу

by la Rappiniere's Chamber, he stepped in to wish him good Morrow; la Rappiniere received his Compliment with the State of a country Provost, and scarce returned any of his Civilities; but as Players are used to act all Manner of Parts, fo Rancour was little concerned at it. La Rappiniere asked him a thousand Questions about the Stage, particularly, How long Destiny had been one of their Company? Adding, That he was a very good Player. All is not Gold that gliffers, replied Rancour: When I played the first Parts, he acted those of Pages; how the Devil should he now understand a Trade that he never learnt? He has not been long upon the Stage, and Players do not come up like Mushrooms, in one Night. Now he is liked, because he is young; but if you knew him tho:oughly as I do, you would not have half so good an Opinion of him; besides, he is as proud, as if he was lineally descended from St. Leavis, and yet he won't tell us who he is, nor whence he comes, no more than a handfome Phillis that accompanies him, under the Name of Sister, and grant Heaven she proves no worfe. As mean as I am, I faved his Life once in Paris, at the Expence of two great Wounds I received from a Sword; and he was fo unthankful for my good Office, that inflead of feeing me carried to a Surgeon, he fpent the whole Night in looking into the Dirt for a certain. Tewel enriched with Diamonds of Alençon; of which he faid, he was robbed by those that set upon us. La Rappiniere asked Rancour when this Mischance beself him? Upon Twelfth-day, on the New Bridge, answered Rancour. These last Words cast la Roppiniere and his Man Doguin into a great Trouble; they turned pale and blushed; then blushed and turned pale again; and L: Rappiniers shifted the Discourse so quicly, and with so great a Disorder, that Rancour began to wonder at it. The Hangman of the Town, and fome Archers, who came into the Room, interrupted their Conversation, at which Rancour was highly pleased; for he was sensible that what he had said, hadtouched la Rappiniere in a very tender Part; tho' he was not able to guess what Share he might have in the Adventure. In the mean Time Destiny, who had been the Subject of his Encomiums, was in no small Trouble: Rancour found' found him with Mrs. Cave, wasting his Breath to no Purpose, to make an old Taylor confess, that he did not conceive well, and had worked still worfe. The Matter in Dispute was this: At the taking the Play-house Furniture out of the Cart, Defliny having found two Doublets and a Pair of Breeches much worn out, had given them to this old Taylor to make out of them a more fashionable Suit, than the Trunk-Breeches he had on; now this Priclouse, instead of making one of the Doublets serve to mend the other, and the Breeches, thro' a Fault in Judgment, unworthy of a Man who had patched old Cloaths all his Life-time, mended both the Doublets with the best Pieces out of the Breeches; infomuch, that poor Defliny with fo. many Doublets and no Breeches, was reduced either to keep his Chamber, or to make all the Children run after. him, as they had done before, upon Account of his comical Habit. La Rappiniere's Generosity repaired the Mittake of the Taylor, who had the botched Doublet for his Pains, and Definy was presented with a Suit of Cloaths, the Spoils of a Highway-man, whom Rappiniere had caused to be broke upon the Wheel not long before. The Hangman, who happened to be the e, and had left those Cloaths in Custody of la Rappiniere's Maid, said very saucily, That they were his Fees ; but la Rappiniere soon silenced him, by threatning to turn him out of his Place. The Cloatha fitted Defliny to a Hair, and so out he went with la Rappiniere and Rancour: They all dined at a Tavern at the Expence of one of the Eurghers, who had Bufiness with la Rappiniere. As for Mrs. Cave, the passed her Time away in washing her dirty Nightrails, andkept her Landlady Company. The same Day Doguin having met two of thoseyoung Men whom he had beaten the Day before in the Tennis-Court, retured Home with two great Wounds in his Guts, and Abundance of Cudgel-blows on his Back. Now, because he was dangeroufly ill, Rancour having well fupped, went to the next Inn for a Bed, being almost tired to death with walking up and down the Town together with his Comrade Destiny, to attend Monsieur la Rappiniere,. who swore he would have Satisfaction for the Murder of his Man. CHAP:

CHAP. VI.

The Adventure of the Chamber-pot: What Disturbance Rancour made that Night in the Inn: The Arrival of Part of the Strolling Company: Doguin's Death; and other memorable Occurrences.

Rancour went into the Inn fomething more than half drunk: La Rappiniere's Maid, who introduced him, bid his Hostess get a Bed ready for him: Who have we here? said the Hostels; Faith, had we no other Customers, cur House-rent would be but ill paid. Hold your Tongne, Hussy, said the Husband: Monsieur la Rappiniere does us too much Honour: Quickly let a Bed be got ready for the Gentleman——Ay marry, but where shall one get it, said the Hostess; for there was but one left, and I parted just now with it to a Merchant of Lower-Maine. Hereupon the Merchant coming in, and hearing the Occasion of their Dispute, offered one half of his Bed to Rancour, whether out of Civility to la Rappiniere, or because he was of an obliging Nature, is uncertain; however, Rancour returned him Thanks, as far as his small Stock of Civility would go. The Merchant supped, the Hostess kept him Company, and Rancour, without much Entreaty, putting in for a Third, began to drink upon a new Score. They discoursed about Taxes, railed against Excisemen, settled the Nation, and unfettled their own Brains so much, especially the Inn-keeper, that he lugged his Purse out of his Pocket, and called for the Reckoning, having forgot that he was at Home, but his Wife and his Maid quickly after pulled him by the Shoulders into his Chamber, and laid him upon a Bed with his Cloaths on. Rancour told the Merchant, that he was troubled with a Strangury, and would be very forry if he should incommode him; to which the Merchant replied, that a Night would foon be over. Now you must take Notice, the Bed had no Ruelle, but was close to the Wall: Rancour went into it first, and the Merchant going after him into the Place of Honour, Rancour afked him for the Chamber-pot, what to do faid the Merchant:

Why, to put it by me, to avoid being troublesome to you, faid Rancour; the Merchant replied, he would give it him whenever he had Occasion for it; to which Rancour seemed unwilling to confent, protesting he should be extreme forry to trouble him. The Merchant fell a sleep without returning him an Answer, and scarce began to be in a found Sleep, before the malicious Stroller, (who could have parted with one of his Eyes, fo as he might make his Neighbour lose both his) pulled him by the Arm, and cried, Sir, Sir; the poor Merchant half asleep gaping and stretching, asked what he would have? Pray reach me the Chamber-pot, quoth Rancour; the Merchant leaned over the Bed, and having taken the Pot gave it to him, when putting himself in a pissing Posture, and having used all his Endeavours, or at least feemed to do so, muttered a thousand Oaths, and complained of his Distemper; he returned the Chamber-pot to the Merchant, without making a Drop of Water. The Merchant fet it on the Ground again, and stretching his Mouth as wide as an Oven, faid to Rancour, Truly Sir, I pity you, and fell afleep presently. Rancour suffered him to indulge his Drowfiness, till he snored as loud as the Drone-pipe of an Organ, and then the Traitor waked him again, and asked him for the Chamber-Pot with as much Malice as he had done before. The Merchant delivered it into his Hands with his usual Kindness; when Rancour put it to the Place thro' which one piffes, not so much with a Defign to leak, as to keep the Merchant awake : He cried out still louder than before, and was twice as long, endeavouring in vain to make Water; but at length defiring the Merchant not to give himself the Trouble to reach the Chamber-pot any more, he told him he would for the Future reach it himfelf: The poor Merchant, who at that Time wou'd have parted with half his Estate to have flept his Belly-full, answered him yawning, that he might do as he chought fit, and so set the Chamber-pot in its proper Place again: They bid one another good Night, after a very civil Manner, and the poor Merchant would have laid a round Sum, that he was going to take the best Nap he ever had in his Life. Rancour, who knew well enough where his Comedy would end, fuffered:

fuffered him to fall into a found Sleep, and then without making Conscience to wake a Man that reposed so innocently, laid his Elbow on the Pit of his Stomach. crushing him down with the whole Weight of his Body, and firetching forth the other Arm out of the Bed, like one that had a Mind to take up something from the Ground. The unfortunate Merchant, almost crushed and stifled to Death, started out of his Sleep, crying out in a most hideous Manner, Zouns, Sir, what do you mean? you have almost killed me - Rancour with as foft and gentle a Voice as that of the Merchant was loud and vehement, answered him, I ask your Pardon, I only designed to take the Chamber-pot-Udilife, cried the other, I had much rather give it to you, and not fleep all the Night long you have fo hurt me, that I shall feel it as long as I live. Rancour made him no Answer, but fell a pissing fo plentifully, and with much Force, that the very Noise of the Chamber-pot had been fufficient to wake the Merchant: At last he filled the Pot, and returned the Lord the Thanks with a villainous Hypocrify. The good Merchant wished him Joy as well as he could, for his plentiful Ejaculation of Urine, which gave him Hopes his Sleep would no more be interrupted: When the cursed Rancour (making as if he would fet the Chamber-pot on the Ground) let fall both Pot and Piss on his Face, Beard, and Breast, excusing himself only with, Sir, I cry your Mercy! The Merchant returned his Civility no Answer; for as soon as he felt himself drowned in Piss, he got out of Bed, roaring like a Madman, and calling for a Candle; Rancour, with a cunning Calmness, told him, Truly, 'tis a great Mischance! In the mean Time the Merchant raised the whole House with his continual roaring; and the Inn-keeper, his Wife, Maids and Servants, being come to know what the Matter was, he told them, They had put him to bed with the Devil, and defired to have a Fire lighted in another Room; they asked him, What ailed him? But he was in fuch a Passion, that he gave no Answer; and taking his Cloaths in a Fury, he went down into the Kitchin to dry himself, and there lay all Night stretched on a Bench by the Fire-fide. The Inn-keeper asked Rancour, What he haddone: done to him? To which Rancour with a counterfeit Ingenuity, answered, I do not know what he can complain of .- He awaked out of his Sleep, and roused me, crying out, Murder ; -- fure, he had some ill Dream or other, or is turned mad; for befides, he has bepift the Bed. Mine Hostess put her Hand upon it, and said, The Gentleman spoke truely, that her Quilt was wet through, and swore a great Oath, that she would make the Merchant pay for it: They bid Rancour good Night, and so went their Way. As for Rancour, he flept as peacefully as any honest Man might have done, and made himself amends for the bad Night he had at la Rappiniere's. However he rose earlier than he defigned, being called up by la Rappiniere's Maid, who came running to fetch him to Doguen, who was a dying, and defired to speak with him before he made his Exit. He ran to him much perplexed, to know what a dying Man, with whom he got acquainted but the Day before, might have to fay to him. But 'twas a Mistake of the Maid; for hearing the dying Wretch call for the Player, the took Rancour for Destiny; who when Rancour came, had just shut himself in Doguin's Chamber, being informed by the Priest who heard his Confession, that he had fomething of great Importance to communicate to him. He had not been there above a Quarter of an Hour, when la Rappiniere came Home, having been Abroad at breek a-day about some Business: He was told at his Arrival, that his Man was breathing his last, the Surgeons not being able to stop his Blood, (by reason one of his great Veins was broke) and that he defired to fee the Player Defliny before he died. And has he feen him, asked la Rappiniere very much disordered?-Answer was made, They were locked in together; at which Words he was in a Manner Thunder-struck, and ran in a great Fright and knocked at Doguin's Chamber-door, at the very same Time that Deftiny was opening it to call for Help; the fick Man being taken with a fainting Fit. La Rappiniere, with Trouble in his Face, asked him what his filly Servant had to say in him? I think he is light-headed, replied Destiny coldly; for he asked me Pardon a thousand Times, and I cannot tell that he ever offended me; however, let fomebody look

to him, for he cannot live long. Thereupon they made towards the Bed, and that very Instant, Doguin gave up the Ghost, at which la Rappiniere seemed rather pleased, These who were acquainted with him, than concerned. judged the Reason of it to be, because he owed him his Wages: But Desliny alone knew best of any, what he ought to think of it. In the mean Time two Men came into the House, whom our Stroller knew to be his Comrades, of whom we will fpeak at large in the following Chapter.

CHAP. VII.

The Adventure of the Litters.

HE youngest of the two Strollers who came to la Rappiniere's, was Destiny's Servant, of whom he learnt, that the rest of the Company were all arrived, except Mrs. Star, who had sprained her Foot three Leagues off Mans. How came you hither? Who told you we were here? Said Destiny to him; The Plague which is now at Alençon, hindered us from going thither, and stopped us. at Bonnestable, answered the Stroller, Olive by Name; and some Inhabitants of this Town we met by the Way, in. formed us you acted here; that you had fought, and was wounded; Mrs. Star is very much troubled at it, and defires you to fend her a Litter. The Keeper of the next Inn, who was come at the Report of Doguin's Death, faid he had a Litter at Home, and if they would pay him well, it should be ready to go by Noon, carried by two strong able Horse. The Strollers hired the Litter for a Crown, and took Chambers in the Inn for the whole Coinpany: La Rappiniere undertook to procure a Licence to act, for the Deputy-Governour; and about Noon, Destiny and his Comrades took their Journey towards Bonnestable; it being a very hot Day, Rancour slept in the Litter, Ohive was mounted on the hinder Horse, and the Inn-keeper's Man on the other before; Destiny trudged it on foot, with a Gun on his Shoulder, and his Man entertained him with what had befallen them from the Caftle of Loire, to a Village near Bonnestable, where Mrs. Star had sprained one of

her Feet as she lighted off her Horse. During this, two Men well mounted, and who hid their Faces with their Cloaks as they passed by Destiny, rode up to the Litter on that Side where it was uncovered, and finding in it but one Man asseep, he that was mounted on the best Horse, faid to the other, I verily believe all the Devils are this Day broke loose against me, and have turned themselves into Litters to plague me. Which said, he clapped Spurs to his Horse, and went his Way cross the Field, with his Companion after him. Olive called Destiny, and recounted to him the Adventure, the Meaning of which he could not understand, nor indeed did he much trouble himself about it. After they had gone a Quarter of a League farther, the Leader of the Litter, whom the Heat of the Sun had stunned, and made drowfy, brought it into a Quagmire, where Rancour was like to be overturned; the Horfes broke their Traces, and they were fain to unharness them, and pull them out of the Mire by Neck and Tail. They gathered the broken Remnants of their Wreck, and reached the next Village as well as they could. Now whilst the shattered Furniture of the Litter was resitting, Rancour, Olive and Destiny's Man, took a merry Cup at the Gate of an Inn that happened to be in the Villiage, when there came another Litter by, led by two Men on foot, which likewife stopped before the Inn. This Litter was scarce arrived, but there appeared another an hundred Steps behindit. I believe all the Litters in the Province have agreed to meet here, about some Business of Importance, in order to hold a general Council, faid Rancour; and methinks they ought to begin their Conferences; for 'tis not probable that any more will come. Nay marry, said the Hostes, here's another that will not flick out, I warrant you. - and in truth they espied a fourth, which came from Mans: This made them all laugh heartily, except Rancour, who never laughed, as I said before. The last Litter stopped with the rest, and in the Memory of Man, so many Lit. ters were never feen together. If those that looked for Litters, and whom we met a while ago, where here, they would have their Bellies full of them, faid the Leader of the first Litter, I have met with some of them, said the Second:

Second: So have we, faid he that conducted the Stroller's Litter; to which he that came last added, He was like to have been thrashed by them, Why so, asked Destiny? Because, answered he, They had a Design upon a certain Gentlewoman, who fprained her Foot, and whom we carried to Mans. I never faw Men fo furious and unreasonable; for they quarrelled with me, only because they missed of what they looked for. This made the Strollers prick up their Ears; and by the Answer of the Litter-man to two or three Questions they put to him, they were informed, that the Lady of the Lord of the Villiage where Mrs. S'ar fprained her Foot, had given her a Visit, and taken great Care to have her car ied fafe to Mans. The Conversation continued a little longer between the Litters; and they learnt of one another, that they were all fearched by the same Men whom the Strollers faw. The first Litter carried the Parson of Domfront, who came from the Wells of Bellesin, and went to Mans, in order to get the Physicians. of that Place to confult about his Dislemper. The second carried a wounded Officer, who returned from the Army. At last the Litters parted; those of the Parson of Demfront and of the Strollers went together to Mans, and the others where they thought fit. The fick Parson lighted at the fame Inn where the Strollers were quartered, being the Place where he used to lie on that Road. will leave him to take his Rest in his Room, and in our next Chapter we shall pay a Visit to the Strollers, to see what was doing in theirs.

CHAP. VIII.

Wherein are contained many Things necessary to be known, for the Understanding of this true History.

HE strolling Company consisted of Destiny, Olive. and Rancour, who had each of them a Servant, who all expected to be one Day, Actors in chief. Of those Servants, fome began to fpeak without blufhing, or being dashed out of Countenance. But amongst the rest, Destiny's Man acted indifferently well, understood what he faid, and

did not want Wit. Mrs. Star, and Mrs. Cave's Daughter played the principal Parts. Mrs. Cave acted the Queen, and the Mother; and fometimes Merry-Andrew's Wife in a Farce, Besides all these, they had a Poet or an Author with them; for all the Grocers Shops in the Kingdom were flored with his Works, both in Verse and Prose. This great Wit followed the Company almost against their Will; but because he was no Sharer, and that he spent his own Money with them, they suffered him to act under Parts, which he nevertheless generally murdered. They all perceived well enough, that he was in love with one of the two She-players; but however, he was so discreet, tho' a little crack-brained, that it was not yet discovered, which of the two he defigned to wheedle into Compliance, with the fair Hopes of making her immortal. He threatned the Company with a great many Plays of his own writing; but till then had spared them, and they only knew by Conjecture, that he was about one called Martin Luther, of which they found the first Act; which however he difowned, altho' it was written with his own Hand. When our Strollers first arrived, the Womens Chamber was continually crowded with the most impertinent Fops and Beaux of the Town, whose Eagerness notwithslanding was frequently cooled by the indifferent Reception they met with. They talked altogether about Plays, Poetry, Poets, and Romances; and there could not possibly have been more Noise unless they had been fighting. The Poet, among the rest, surrounded by three or four, who, without doubt, were the top Wits of the Town, laboured to perfuade them, that he had feen Corneille, craked many a Bottle with St. Amant and Beys, and loft a good Friend when Rotrou died. Madam Cave and her Daughter Angelica fet their Goods in order, with as great Tranquility, as if there had been no Body in the Room. 'Tis true, Angelica's fair Hands were now and then squeezed or kissed; for these Country Gentlemen are ever pulling and hauling; but a Kick on the Shins, a Box on the Ear, or a Biting, according as Occasion required, soon rid her of those hotfpurred Lovers; nor was she rude and impudent neither, but her free and gay Humour would not fuffer her to use much'

much Ceremony: As for her other Qualities, she had Wit and was very Honest. Mrs. Star was of a quite different Temper; for there never was a more modest, gentle, and good-natured Woman in the World; and besides she at that Time strained her Complaisance so far, that she could not find in her Heart to turn these ogling Fops out of her Chamber, tho' she felt a great Pain in her sprained Foot, and had therefore Occasion for Rest. She lay in her Cloaths, on a Bed surrounded by four or five of these whining fighing Coxcombs, stunned by Abundance of Puns and Clinches, which pass for good Jests in the Country, and often forcing a Smile upon hearing Things she did not like. But this is one of the greatest Plagues of that Profession, which, together with their being obliged to laugh or weep, whether they have a Mind to it or no, takes very much from their Pleasure of being sometimes Emperors and Empresses, and of being stiled as fine as Angels, tho' they be little handsomer than Devils, or addressed to as young Beauties, tho' their Hair and Teeth be Part of their Furniture. There are a great many more Things to be faid upon this Subject, but we must use them sparingly, and place them in several Stations, for Variety's Sake. Let's return to Madam Star, beset with Country-Squires, the most troublesome of Men, all great Talkers, most of them very Impertinent, and amongst them some newly returned from the University. Among the rest appeared a little Man, who was a Widower, a Lawyer by Profession, and an Officer in a small Court of Judicature in the Neighbourhood; Since the Death of his little Wife, he sometimes threatned the Women to marry again; and fometimes the Clergy of the Province to turn Priest, nay, even a preaching Frelate. He was the greatest little Fool that ever ran madding about fince Orlando Furioso. He had studied Books all his Life-time; but tho' the chief End of Scholarship be the Knowledge of Truth, yet was he as great a Lyer as a Page, proud and obstinate as a Pedant, and so bad a Poet as to deserve drowning; if the Government would but have taken Care to rid the Kingdom of such a troublesome Race of rhiming Fools. As soon as Destiny and his Comrades came into the Room, without giving

them the Time to know who he was, he offered to read to them a Poem of his own making, called The Deeds and Atchievements of Charlemain, in four and twenty Books. This Proposal put all the Company into such a Fright as made their Hair stand an End; but Destiny, who in this general Terror preserved a little Judgment, told him smiling, that it was not possible for them to give him the Hearing before Supper. Well, quoth he, I will however read you a Story taken out of a Spanish Book, which was fent me from Paris, and of which I defign to make a regular Play. They shifted the Discourse three or four Times, on purpose to avoid hearing what they supposed to be in Imitation of Guy of Warwick, or Tom Thumb. But tho' they often interrupted him, yet did our little Man not lose Courage; infomuch, that with often beginning his Story, he at last forced them to hear him out; which however they did not repent, because the Tale proved to be a good one, and caused them to alter the ill Opinion they had of all that came from Ragotin, for fo was our Jack-in-a-Box called. You will find the faid Story in the following Chapter, not such as Ragetin told it, but such as I had it from one of the Hearers. Therefore you must know that 'tis not Ragotin now speaks, but myself.

CHAP. IX.

The History of the invisible Mistress,

ON Carlos of Arragon was a young Gentleman of the Family that bore that Name. He performed Wonders at the public Games, which the Viceroy of Naples entertained the People with, upon the Marriage of Philip the Second, Third or Fourth, for I have forgot whether. The next Day, after a running at the Ring, where he bore away the Prize, the Viceroy gave Liberty to the Ladies to go about the City in Disguise, and to wear Masks after the French Mode, for the Conveniency of Strangers, whom the public Rejoicings had invited thither. Upon that very Day Don Carlos put on his sinest Cloaths, and with many other Conquerors of Hearts, repaired

repaired to the Church of Gallantry. Churches are prophaned in these Countries, as well as in ours; and the House of God ferves for an Assembly to the Beaux and Coquets, to the eternal Shame of those who have the cersed Ambition of drawing Customers from other Churches to their own. These Abuses ought to be reformed, and there should be Persons appointed to turn Beaux and Coquets out of Churches, as well as to drive away Dogs and Bitches. I may be asked, What makes me concern myself about this? Truly you will fee more anon. However, let the Fool who is offended at it be fatisfied, that all Men of this World, are Fools as well as Liars, some more, some less; and I myself am perhaps a greater Fool than the rest, tho' I have more Frankness in owning it: And moreover, my Book being but a Heap of Follies, I hope every Fool will find his own Character in it, unless he be blinded by Self-love. To return to my Story: Don Carlos being in a Church, with feveral other Italian and Spanish Gentlemen, priding themselves in their fine Feathers, like proud Peacocks, three Ladies in Masks accosted him amidst all these sierce and gay Cupids, one of whom spoke to him thus, or to the same Effect: Signior Don Carlos, there is a Lady in this City, to whom you are very much obliged, for at all the Justs and Turnaments, her Wishes went still along with you in those Exercises, wherein you carried the Prize. What I find most Advantageous in this you tell me, answered Don Carlos, is to have it from the Mouth of a Lady who feems to be a Person of Merit; yet had I so much as hoped that any of the fair Sex had been on my Side, I would have taken more Care to deferve her Approbation. The unknown Lady replied he had given all the Proofs imaginable of his being a most dexterous and accomplished Gentleman, and that by his black and white Liveries, he had shewn he was not in Love. I never was well acquainted with the Meaning of Colours, answered Don Carlos, but this I know, that if I am not in Love, 'tis not so much on Account of my being indifferent, as because I am sensible I do not deserve to be beloved. They said to one another a thousand fine Things more, which I shall not relate, because

because I know nothing of them, and would be loath to compose Fictions, least I should wrong Don Carles and the unknown Lady, who had a great deal more Wit than I can pretend to, as I was lately informed, by a young Neopolitan who knew them both. In short, the Lady in the Mask declared to Don Carlos, that 'twas she who had an Inclination for him: He defired to fee her Face: which she refused, and told him, That he must not expect it yet; that she would look for a more proper Opportunity; and that, to let him know she feared not to trust herself alone with him, she would give him a Token. At these Words she pulled off her Glove, and having shewed the Spaniard the finest Hand in the World, presented him with a Ring; which he received with fo great a Surprize at the Adventure, that he almost forgot to make a Bow, and thank her upon her going from him. The other Gentlemen, who out of Civility had left him, being come to him again, he told them what had happened, and thewed them the Ring, which was of confiderable Value. Every one spoke his Thoughts upon this Adventure; and Don Carlos was upon this deep in Love with the unknown Lady, as if he had feen her Face. So great is the Power of Wit on those who have their Share of it. He was eight long Days without hearing from this Lady; but whether or no he was uneafy at it, I could never be well informed. In the mean Time he went every Day to divert himself at the House of a Captain of Foot, where several Men of Quality met to play. One Night having not been at Play, and going Home sooner than ordinary, he was called by his Name out of a Parlour in a great House. He went near the Window, which was latticed, and knew by the Voice that called him, that 'twas his Invisible Mistress, who said to him, Come near, Don Carlos, I expect you hear to decide our Controversy. You are but a Bragadocio, faid Don Carlos, you challenge with Infolence, and yet hide yourself for eight Days together, and then alas appear only through a lattice Window. We shall see one another nearer in Time, answered she: 'Tis not for want of Courage I have delayed being with you all this while, but I had a Mind to know you better before I difco.

discovered myself: You know that in Duels the Combatants ought to fight with Arms alike: Now if your Heart be not as free as mine, you would fight with Advantage, and therefore I have made Enquiries after you. And what Information have you got, answered Don Carlos? That we are much upon the Square, returned the Invisible Lady. But, faid Don Carlos, there's yet a great Inequality betwixt us; for, added he, you both fee and know who I am, whereas, I neither fee nor know who you are: Now confider pray, what I can judge of your concealing yourfelf, fince People feldom do fo when they have a good Defign. It is an easy Matter to impose at first upon a Man that mistrusts nothing, but he is not to be cheated twice; if you make use of me only to give another jealousy, I must freely tell you, that I am the most unsit Person for it in the World, and that I am good for nothing else befides loving you. Have you done with your rash Suspicions, faid the Invisible Lady; You may call them rash if you please, replied Don Carlos; however, they are not really fo. would have you to know, faid she, I am sincere; you will find me fuch in all our Intercourse; and I expect you 'should be so too. That's but reasonable, answered Don Carlos; but 'tis just likewise that I should see you, and know who you are. You shall be satisfied in that e'er it be long, faid the Invisible Lady; and in the mean Time hope with Patience; for that's the only Way for you to obtain what you expect from me. Now, that you may justify your Love to your Discretion, I am willing to let you know, that my Birth is not inferior to yours; that I have a Fortune sufficient to make you live with as great Magnificence as any Prince in the Kingdom; that I am rather handsome than ill favoured; and as for Wit, you have too much of that yourself not to discover whether I have any or no. She had no fooner made an End of her Speech, but she withdrew, leaving Don Carlos with his Mouth open, ready to answer her; so very much in love with a Person he never faw, and so perplexed about this odd Way of Proceeding, which might prove at laft.a Cheat, that he flood on the fame Place for above a Quarter ef an Hour, not knowing what to think of this extraordinary Adventure. He was not ignorant that there were a great many Princesses and Ladies of Quality in Naples; but knew likewise, that there were Abundance of greedy Courtezans in that City, eager after Strangers; great filts, and the more dangerous, as they were handfome. I cannot possively tell, whether he had supped at this Time, or wether he went to Bed without a

Supper.

Neither do I care to imtiate the Writers of Romances. who mark with great Exactness all the Hours of the Day. and make their Heroes rise betimes, relate their Adventures by Dinner-time, eat but little at Dinner, then resume the Story after Dinner, or retire into the thickest Part of a Wood, in order to entertain their ownfelves; unless when they have something to say to the Rocks and Trees: At Supper-time, they make them repair at the usual Hour, to the Place where they diet, there they figh and look penfive, instead of eating; and thence go to build Castles in the Air on some Tarrass-walk that looks towards the Sea, whilst the trusty Squire reveals, that his Master is such a one, Son to fuch a King; that he is the best Prince alive, and tho' he be still the handsomest of all Mortals, that he was quite another Man before Love had disfigured him. To return to my Story, Don Carlos repaired the next Day to his Post, where the Invisible Lady waited his coming: She asked him if he had not been much perplexed about their last Conversation, and if he had not doubted the Truth of what she told him. Don Carles, without anfwering'her Question, desired her to tell him what Danger the feared in discovering herself, since they were upon even Terms; and that the End of their Amours being honourable, it would have the Approbation of every Body? The Danger is very great, and you will have it in Time, faid the Invisible Lady: Once more be satisfied that I am true, and that in the Account I gave you of myfelf, I was rather modest than vain. Don Carlos did not press her any farther, their Conversation which continued some Time longer, encreased the mutual Love they had for each other; and so they parted, with Promises to meet every Day, at the appointed Hour and Place. The next Day C₂ arter 28

eafter there was a great Ball ar the Viceroy's, where Don Carlos hoped to know his Invisible Charmer; in the mean Time, he endeavoured to learn it at whose House she gave him those favourable Audiences, and was told by the Neighbours, that it belonged to an old Lady, Widow to a Spanish Captain, who had neither Daughters nor Nieces,. and lived very retired. He defired to wait on her, but she fent him Word, that fince her Husband died, she admitted of no Vifits, which fill perplexed him more and more. Don Carlos went in the Evening to the Viceroy's, where you may imagine there was a very fine and numerous Assembly, and nicely observed all the Ladies, in hopes to find out his unknown Mistress. He engaged in Conversation with feveral, but was disappointed in his Search. last he kept close to the Daughter of a Marquis of I know not what Marquifate, for 'twas the most disticult Thing to know in the World, especially at that Juncture, when every Body fet up for that Quality. She was young and handsome, and had a Voice not unlike that of the Perfen Le looked after: But at the long run, he found fuch great Disproportion betwixt her Wit and that of his Invisible, that he was forry that in so little Time, he had made fuch Progress with this fine Lady, that without any flattery to himself, he had Reason to believe she did not hate him. They danced feveral Times together, and the Ball being over, to the great Satisfaction of Don Carlos, he took his leave of his Captive, whom he left full of Pride; for having had to herfelf, in so fine an Assembly, a Cavelier who was envied by all the Men, and esteemed by all the Women. As foon as he came out of the Ball, he went in great Haste to his House, and from thence to the fatal Grate, which was not far off: His Lady, who was there already, asked him News of the Ball, although she had. been there herfelf. He told her very ingenicusly, that he had danced with a very beautiful Person, and entertained her all the Time the Ball lasted. She asked him several Questions in relation to her, which discovered her Jealousy: As for Don Carlos, he let her understand that he began to fuspect her Quality, by Reason she had not been at the Ball; the having taken Notice of it, used all the Charms

of her Wit to remove his Suspicions, and favoured him as far as was possible in the Conversation that past with a Grate between; adding withal, that in a short Time she would become visible. Hereupon they parted: Don Carlos very much in Doubt, whether he ought to believe her, and the fomewhat jealous of the fine Person he had entertained during the Ball. The next Day Don Carlos going to hear Mass at a certain Church, the Name of which I have forgot, offered holy Water to two veiled Ladies, who went to take some at the same Time with him: She who appeared in the better Cloaths of the two told him, the never excepted of any Civility, from one with whom the had a Quarrel to decide. If you are not too much in Hasle, answered Don Carlos, you may have Satisfaction in that this very Moment. Well, faid the unknown Lady, follow me then into the next Chapel. She led the Way, and Don Carlos followed, very much in Doubt, whether she was his unknown Mistress or not; for the' her Shape was the fame, yet he found some Difference between their Voices, this new Lady speaking somewhat thick: This is the Substance of what she told him, after the had thut herfelf up with him in the Chapel. All the City of Naples, Signior Don Carlos, talks of the high Reputation you have gained during that little Time you have been here; and every Body looks upon you, as the most accomplished Gentleman in the World: The only Thing that People wender at, is, your not taking Notice that there are in this City, some Ladies of Quality and Merit, who have a particular Esteem for you; they have difcovered to you as far as Decency would allow, and tho' 'tis their eager Defires to make you fenfible of it, yet they had rather you had not taken Notice of it, thro' Infensibility, than that you should have despised their Favours thro' Indifference. Among the rest, there's one of my Acquaintance who has so much value for you, as to hazard her own Reputation by telling you, that your last Night Adventures are discovered; that you rashly engage in an Amour with one you do not know, and that fince your Miffress conceals herfelf, she must either be assamed of her Lover, or. conscious of not deserving to be beloved herself. I. question

question not but the Object of your contemplative Love, is a Lady of great Quality and Wit; and that your Fancy has framed fuch a Mittress, as is worthy of Adoration upon all Accounts: But, Signior Don Carlos, believe not your Imagination at the Expence of your Judgment; trust not a Person who conceals herself, and engage no more in these Night-Conversations. But why should I disguise myself any longer? I myself am jealous of this Phantom of yours: I cannot bear you should speak with her; and fince I have declared my Mind fo far, I will fo thwart all her Designs, that I do not much question but I shall carry away the Prize, to which I have as much Right as she, fince I am not inferior to her, either in Beauty, Riches, Quality, or any Thing else that can befpeak Love: If you are wife, you will make use of this my Advice. When the had spoke these last Words, she went away without giving Don Carlos Time to answer her. He was going to follow her, but met at the Church Gate, a Man of Quality, who engaged him in a tedious Conversation, from which he could not rid himself. He reslected the Remainder of the Day upon this Adventure, and suspected, at first, the Lady at the Ball, to be the veiled Person that had appeared to him: Butthen calling to Mind that she had shewed Abundance more Wit than he had found in this, he was at a Loss what to think, and wished almost not to have been engaged with his unknown Mistress, that he might give himself entirely up to this: But then again, considering that he knew her no better than his Invisible, whose Wit had charmed him in all the Conversation he had had with her, he firmly resolved to be constant to his first Choice, without minding in the least the Threats. of the last Lady; for he was not to be wrought upon by Fear or Compulsion. That very Night he failed not to return to the grated Window at the usual Hour, where, in the Height of his Conversation with his Mistress, he was feized by four strong Men in Masks, who having disarmed him, hurried him by Force into a Coach that waited for them at the End of the Street. I leave the Reader to think, how many abusive Names he gave those Men in Disguise, and how he reproached them for attacking

him

him fo to Difadvantage: Nay, he endeavoured to win them. by Promifes, but instead of persuading them, he only made them to take more Care of him, and put himself out of Hopes, of being able to shew either his Strength or Courage. In the mean Time, the Coach and fix Horses drove on a full Trot, and having got out of the City, after an Hour's travelling, came into a great Yard, the Gate of which was kept open to receive it. The four Maskers alighted with-Don Carlos, holding him under the Arms, like an Ambasfador introduced to falute the Grand Signior : He was carried up one Pair of Stairs in the same Manner, where two Gentlewomen in Masks came to receive him at the Door of a large Room, each with a Candlestic in her Hand, when the four Men in Difguise took their leaves of him. with a profound Reverence. 'Tis probable they left him neither Sword nor Pistol; and that he did not forget to thank them for their extaordinary Care of his Person: And. yet perhaps he never thought on it; not but that he was a Man of good Breeding, but upon a Surprize, a flip in Pointof Civility ought to be forgiven. Neither will I tell you, whether the Candiestics the Gentlewomen had in their Hands were Silver, or only Silver gilt and engraven. for the Room, it was the most Magnificent in the World, and if you would know it, as well furnished as some Apartments in our Romances; namely the Ship of Zelman in Polexander, the Palace of Ibrahim in the illustrous Bassa, or the Room wherein the King of Affyria received Mandana in Cyrus, which together with the others I named before, is certainly a Book that has the best Furniture in the World. Now imagine what Surprize our Spaniard was in, to find himself in this stately Apartment with two speechless Gentlewomen in Masks, who having conducted him into another Chamber, still better furnished than the great Room, left him there all alone. Had he been of Don Quixot's Humour, he would have found sufficient Matter to please his Fancy, and imagined himself to be no less than Esplandian or Amadis: But our Spaniard was no more concerned than if he had been in his Inn, fave only that he had a great Regret for his Invisible Lady; and as he kept his Thoughts continually employed upon her, he found that Chamber: C.4:

32

Chamber more melancholy than a Prison, which never looks pleasant but on the Outside. He was easily persuaded, that these who had provided him so fair a Lodging were none of his Enemies; and doubted not, but the Lady who spoke to him the Day before in the Church, was the Conjurer that had raifed all these Enchantments. He admired, with himfelf, the Fancies of Women, and how foon they put their Defigns in Execution; as for his Part, he refolved to wait patiently the End of this Adventure, and be faithful to his Invisible Mistress, in Spite of all the Threa's and Promises he might receive in his new Lodging. A little while after, feveral Servants in Masks, and in very good Cloaths, came to lay the Cloth, and then ferved up Supper. Every Thing belonging to it was Magnificent; Music and Persumes were not forgotten; and Don Carlos not only gratified his Smelling and Hearing, but his Tafte alfo; for he eat and drank more than I thought a Man in his Condition could have done. But what's impossible to fo great a Courage! I forget to tell you that he washed his Mouth; for I am informed he took great Care of his Teeth. The Music played a while after Supper, but all being withdrawn, Don Carlos fetched many a Turn about the Room, reflecting on all these Enchantments, or perhaps on fomething else; then came in two Gentlewomen and a Dwarf, all in Masks, who, without asking him whether he had a Mind to go Bed or not, spread a magnificent Toilet, in order to undress him. He complied with them in every Thing? The Gentlewomen turned down the Bed-Cloaths, and then withdrew: The Dwarf pulled off his Shoes, Stockings, or Boots, and then his other Cloaths; all which being done without exchanging a Word. Don Carlos went to Bed, and slept pretty well for a Man in Love. At b eak of Day he was waked by the finging of Birds, that fluttered about in an Aviary; the Dwarf came to wait upon him, and brought him the finest Linnen in the World, and the best washed and perfumed: If you think fit, I shall not mention what he did till Dinner, (which was at least as good as his Supper had been) but pass to the first breaking of that profound Silence, which had been observed to that very Hour. A Gentlewoman in a Mask began to speak, by asking him if he would be pleased to see the Mistress of that inchanted Palace. Don Carlos said, she should be welcome: And a little while after she came in, attended by four Gentlewomen very richly Dressed.

Such were not Cytherea's Charms, When Drest in gay and loose Attire, . She stew to a new Lover's Arms, Upon the Wings of Soft Desire.

Never had our Spaniard feen a Person of more majestic Mein than this unknown Urganda. He was so transported, and surprized at the same Time, that he stumbled at every Bow and Step he made, as he led her into the next

Room, whither she directed him.

All the fine Things he had feen in the other Rooms I mentioned before, were nothing in Comparison to what he found in this last, which still received a new Brightness from the Lady in a Mask. They walked on the finest Foot-Carpet that ever was feen, fince Foot-Carpets have been in Fashion: There the Spaniard was placed in an Armchair in Spite of himself, and the Lady sitting by herself, on I know not how many fine Cushions over against him; she ravished his Ears with a Voice as sweet as an Harpsichord, speaking to him to this Effect. I doubt not, Signior Don Carlos, but you are much surprized at what has happened to you in my House since Yesterday; but if all that is not able to move you, yet by it you may fee I am as good as my Word; and from what I have done, you may guess what I am able to do. Perhaps my Rival, both by her Artifice, and the Advantage she has of having attacked you first, has made herself absolute Mistress of that Heart, which I nevertheless pretend to dispute my Right to with her: But a Woman is not to be discouraged by the first Disappointment; and if my Fortune, which is not to be dispised, with all that goes along with my Person, cannot persuade you to love me; yet shall I have the Satisfaction of not concealing myself out of Shame or Deceit, and chuse to be dispised through my Desects, rather than be beloved through my Artifice. As the spoke thefe C_{ς}

34 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

these last Words, she pulled off her Mask, and shewed Don Carlos the Heavens with all their Glories, or if you please, a Heaven in Miniature: The finest Head in the World, supported by the best Shape he ever admired before; in short, a Person all over Divine. By the Freshness of her Complexion, one would not have thought her to have been above fixteen Years of Age; but by a certain free and majestic Air, which young Perfons generally want, she appeared to be near Twenty. Don Carlos paufed a while before he answered her, being almost angry with his Invisible Lady, who hindered him from furrendering himself intirely to the finest Person he ever saw, and dubious what he should say or do: At last, after an inward Consict, which lasted so long, as to make the Mistress of the inchanted Palace uneasy, he took a firm Resolution not to conceal from her his inmost Thoughts; which, without any Manner of Question, was the best Thing he ever did in his Life. This is the Answer he gave her, which some have found a little too Blunt. Madam, I could not but own myfelf extreme happy in your Esteem, if my Stars would but fuffer me to love you. I fee, well enough, that I: leave the finest Person in the Universe, for one, who, perhaps, is only fuch in my Fancy; but, Madam, would you think me worth your Affection, if you found me capable. of Infidelity? And how can I be faithful, If I love you? Therefore, Madam, pity me, but blame me not: Or rather let us pity each other, and complain both; you of not obtaining what you defire, and I of not feeing what I love. He uttered these Words with such a melancholy Air, that the Lady might eafily perceive he spoke his true Sentiments. She used all the Arguments the could think of to perfuade him to alter his Mind, but he was deaf to her Prayers, and unconcerned at her Tears. She renewed the Attack several Times, but met still with a stout Resistance. At last she began to revile and reproach him, and told him,

> What Rage and Jealousy suggest. When they possess a Love-sick Breast.

and then she left him, not to pick Straws, but to curse a hundred Times his Missortune, which proceeded only from being being too happy. A Gentlewoman came a little while after to acquaint him, that he had the Liberty to walk in the Garden. He traversed all these fine Apartments, without meeting with any Body, till he came to the Staircase, at the Foot of which he saw ten Men in Masks, . who kept the Door, armed with Partizans and Carabines. As he was croffing the Court to go into the Garden, one of the Gentlemen of the Guard accosted him without looking him in the Face, and told him, as tho' he feared to be overheard: That an old Gentleman had trusted him with a Letter, which he had promifed to deliver into his own Hands, tho' his Life must answer for it, if he should be discovered; but that a Present of twenty Pistols, and a Promise of as many more, made him to run all Hazards. Don Carlos promised him Secresy, and went strait into the Garden, where he read the Letter, which was as follows:

You may judge what Pains I have felt fince I lost you, by those you ought to feel yourself, if you love me as much as I do you: However, my Uneasiness is something abated, by being informed of the Place where you are. 'Tis the Princess Porcia who stole you away; she's a Woman that ficks at nothing to please herself, and you are not the sirst Rinaldo, of that dangerous Armida. But I will soon break all her Inchantments, and disingage you from her Arms, to receive you into mine, which Favour you will descree if you are as constant as I wish you to be.

The Invifible Lady.

Don Carlos was so transported with Joy, to receive this News from his Lady, with whom he was really in Love, that he kissed the Letter a hundred Times over, and came back to the Garden-Door, to recompense the Messenger with a sine Diamond Ring he had on his Finger. He walked a little longer in the Garden, still wondering at the Princess Porcia, whom he often heard People report to be a young rich Lady, of the best Family in the Kingdom; but as he was a Person of strick Virtue, he conceived

36 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

uch an Aversion for her, that he resolved to break out of his Prison, even at the Hazard of his Life. As he came out of the Garden, he met a Gentlewoman unmasked, (for from that Time forward, every Body went barefaced in the Palace) who came to ask, if he would be pleased to have her Mistress eat with him? And I leave you to think whether he answered, she should be welcome. A little while after they ferved up Supper, or Dinner, for I have forgot which of the two it ought to have been : Porciaappeared more bright and handsome, I said just now, than Venus Cytherea, and it will not be amis, if, for Variety Sake, I now fay, than an Angel: She was charming in. every Respect, and during the Time they were at Table the Spaniard discovered so much Wit in her, that he was in a Manner forry, to find so many excellent Qualities, so ill bestowed on a Person of so high a Degree. He did all he could to appear in good Humour, and forced a pleafing. Countenance, although he was continually thinking upon his unknown Mistress; and burnt with Impatience to return to the Lattice-Window. As foon as the Table was cleared, they were left by themselves, and because Don. Carlos spoke not a Word, either out of Respect, or only to oblige the Lady to speak first, she broke Silence in these Words, I know not whether I ought to hope formething from the Gaiety I fancy I have discovered in your Face; and whether mine, which you have feen already, does, feem handsome enough to make you doubt, whether that of your Invisible Mistress, has more Charms to captivate your Heart. I do not conceal what I defigned to present you with, I exause I would not have you repent the acce, t. ing my Present; and though a Person who has been used to be instructed by others, be apt to be offended at a Denial; yet will I forgive you, provided you repair your past Offence, by giving me what I have more Right to than your Invisible: Therefore tell me your last Resolution, that if in Case it be not in my Behalf, I may at least find out new Reasons, strong enough to combate those, which I think I had to love you. Don Carlos thought she would have gone on with her Speech; but observing she spoke no more, and that, with Eyes fixed on the Ground, she ex-

pected her Doom from his Mouth; he resumed his former Resolution of telling her frankly, that he could never be her's, which he did in these Words: Madam, before I answer what you would know of me, I must defire you, that, with the same Frankness you expect from me, you would be pleased to tell me your Sentiments, about what I am going to propose to you. Suppose, added he, you had engaged a Man to love you, and that by all the Favours a Lady can grant without wronging her Virtue, you had obliged him to swear an inviolable Fidelity; would you not account him the bafest and most treacherous of Mankind, if he should fail in his Promise? And were I not that Villain, and that Traitor, if I should leave, for you, a Person who has Reason to think I love her? He was going to frame Abundance of Logical Arguments, in order to convince her; but she did not give him Time, and rifing abrubtly from her Seat, told him, That she plainly faw the Drift of his Discourse; that she could not but admire his Constancy, tho' fo much opposite to her own Quiet, that she would fet him at Liberty, and that the only defired him to stay till Night, to go back in the fame Manner he came. While the was speaking, she held her Handkerchief to her Eyes, as tho' she designed to conceal her Tears, and afterwards left the Spaniard a little concerned; yet so transported with Joy that he was to be again at Liberty, that he had not been able to conceal it, had he been the greatest Hypocrite in the World; and I verily believe, that had the Lady taken Notice of it, she would certainly have scolded at him for it. I know not whether 'twaslong before Night came, for, as I told you before, I don't trouble myself about marking the Time or Hours; you must be contented to know, that Night came at last, and that he went into a close Coach, and was set down at his Lodgings, after a pretty long Journey. As he was the best Matter in the World, so his Servants were like to die with Joy at the Sight of him, and almost stifled him with their Embraces; but they did not enjoy him long; for having provided himself with Arms, and taken two of his soutest Men along with him, he presently went to the Grated-Window in such great Haste, that those who accompaniedhim.

him, had much ado to keep Pace with him. He had no fooner given the usual Signal, but his Invisible Diety communicated herfelf to him; when they exchanged fuch foft and tender Expressions, that I can't forbear weeping whenever I think on them. At last the Lady told him, she had been lately affronted in that House, and therefore had fent for a Coach in order to leave it; but because it might be a long while coming, she defired him to fend for his, which might be fooner got ready; and that she would carry him to a Place, where she would no longer conceal her Face from him. The Spaniard needed no farther Intreaty, but ran like a Mad-man to his Men, whom he left: at the End of the Street, and sent for his Coach in all Haste, . The Coach being come, the Invisible Lady kept her Word, and went into it with Don Carlos. She directed the Coachman which Way he should drive, and bid him stop at a. great House, into the Court-Yard of which the Coach went by the Light of feveral Flambeaux, which were lightted at their Arrival. The Cavalier leading his Lady, went up Stairs into a very large Room, where he was a little uneasy, because she did not pull off her Mask. At last several Gentlewomen being come to receive them, with each a Candlestic in their Hands, the Lady was invisible no longer; but pulling off her Mask, let Don Carlos see, that the Lady at the Grated-Window, and the Princess Porcia, were but one Person. I will not endeavour to describe the pleasant Surprize of the Spaniard: The fair: Neopolitan told him, she had stolen him away a second Time to know his last Resolution; that the Lady at the Lattice had made over to her all her Pretentions, and added a thousand Expressions, no less obliging than ingenious. Don Carlos threw himself at her Feet, embraced her Knees, and devoured, as one may fay, her Hands with: Kisses: By that Means avoiding all the Impertinence and Nonfense which People generally speak when they are transported with Joy. The Raptures of his Passion being over, he used all his Wit and Eloquence to extol the agreeable Caprice of his Mistress, and exprest himself so well: to her Advantages, that he confirmed her, she was not mistaken in her Choice. She told him, she had been unwilling

willing to trust any Body but herself in a Thing, without which she could never have loved him; and that she would never have bestowed herself upon a Man less constant than himself. Thereupon the Princess Porcia's Relations came in, having had Notice given them of her Defign: And as they were the chief Men in the Kingdom, they easily obtained a Dispensation from the Archbishop for their Marriage. The same Night the Ceremony was performed by the Parson of the Parish, who was an honest Priest, and a good Preacher; and so 'twere needless to ask, whether he made a fine Exhortation upon the Subject. 'Tis faid, they got up late the next Day, which I am inclined to believe. The News was foon spread about, at which, the Viceroy, a near Relation of Don Carlos's was. fo overjoyed, that the public Rejoicings began a-new in Naples, where, to this Day, they talk of Don Carlos of Arragon, and his Invisible Mistress.

CHAP. X.

How Ragotin received a Blow on the Fingers with a Bufk.

R Agotin's Story had a general Applause, and he valued himlelf as much upon it, as if it had been his own; which fwelling his natural Pride, he began to treat the Men-players with Contempt, and afterwards accosting the Women, squeezed their Hands without their Consent, and offered to feel their Breasts; a Piece of Country Gallantry, which favours more of the Satyr than Gentleman. Mistress Star contented herself to force her soft, fair Hands from his dirty rough Clutches; but Mrs. Angelica her Companion, gave him withal, fmiling, a wrap on the Fingers with her Busk. He left them abruptly, without so much as speaking a Word, glowing with Rage and Confusion, and returned to the Men's Company, where every one spoke as fast as he could, without minding what the rest said. Ragotin silenced most of them, by demanding of them, with a superior Voice, what they thought of his Novel? A young Man, whose Name I have forgot, anfwered him bluntly, It was no more his than any Body's else in the Company, fince he had it out of a Book: Whereupon feeing one stick out of Ragotin's Pocket, he pulled

pulled it out; which the little Man perceiving, scratched his Hands to get it from him; but in Spite of Ragotin, he put it into another Man's Hands, from whom Ragotin endeavoured to fnatch it, to as little Purpose as before. The Book having got by this Time into a third Man's Hands, after the same Manner passed to five or six different. Hands more; which Ragotin however could not reach, because he was the shortest Man in the Company. last, having stretched himself five or fix Times in vain, torn half a dozen Pair of Cuffs, scratched as many Hands, and the Book still travelling about through the middle Region of the Chamber, poor Ragotin, who faw every Body laugh at his Expence, rushed liked a Mad-man upon the first Author of his Confusion, and dealt him several Blows on his Belly and Thighs, not being able to reach higher. The Hands of his Adversary, who had the Advantage of the Place, fell five or fix Times fo perpendicular, and heavy on the Top of his Head, that the Crown of his Hat funk down to his very Chin; which fo shook the Seat of his Reason, that the poor little Man did not, for some Time, know where he was. To compleat his Defeat, his Antagonist at parting, gave him a sound Kick on the Head. which, after a very sudden Retrogradation, made him to fall on his Breech at the Women-Players Feet. Now, if possible, I would have you to conceive the Rage and Fury of a little Man, more Proud than all the Sieurs in the Kingdom, at a Time when he was Cock-a-hoop about his Story; and that too, before Players, to whom he defigned to make Love; as you shall see anon, tho' he was yet ignorant, which of them had the greater Title to his Heart. To speak the Truth, his little Body thus tumbled on his Breech, did so lively represent the Fury of his Soul, by the different Motions of his Arms and Legs, that tho' his Face could not be feen, because his whole Head was enchased into his Hat, yet all the Company thought fit to join, and form, as it were, a Barrier 'twixt Ragotin and his Adversary; who, by this Means, got away, whilst the charitable Women-Players raised the poor little Man, roaring like a Lion in his Hat, which stopped his Eyes and Mouth, and almost hindered him from fetching his Breath. Now the

the Difficulty was, how to pull off this Hat of his; for its Crown being in the Form of a Butter-Pot, and the Mouth of it narrower than the Bottom, God knows whether a Head that got itself into it by Force, and whose Nose was so excessive large, was able to get out the same Way. This Misfortune had a good Effect; for his Anger being now at the Highest, without Doubt, its Effects had been answerable, had not his Hat, which suffocated him, made him to confult his own Preservation, rather than contrive the Destruction of another. He did not cry out for Help, because he had not the Use of his Tongue: But when the Company perceived he lifted up, in vain, his trembling Hands to his Head, in order to set it at Liberty, and stamped on the Floor with Rage and Indignation, biting his Nails to no Purpose, they all bent their Thoughts on his Relief. The first Efforts they used to pull off his Hat were fo violent, that he thought they had been going to pluck off his Head from his Shoulders: At last, being almost fpent, he made Signs with his Fingers to have it cut with a Pair of Scissars. Mistress Cave unclapst those she wore on her Girdle; and Rancour, who was to perform the Operation, having made a Shew of making the Incision over against his Face, (which did not a little fright him) at last, he slit his Hat behind his Head, from Top to Bottom. As foon as he had given Vent to his Face, all the Company fell a laughing to see it bloated, as if it had been ready to burst, upon Account of the vast Quantity of Spirits that had flushed to it; and besides, his Nose was a little excoriated. However, the Jest had gone no farther, had not a bungling Taylor advised him to get his Hat Fine-drawn. This unfeasonable Advice so revived his Anger, which was not entirely extinguined, that he laid hold of one of the Andirons, and threatned to throw it at the Company; which put the floutest of them all in such a Fright, that every one ran to the Door, in order to avoid the impending Blow. They pressed so fast upon one another, that not above one was able to get out; and he too by a Fall, his sparred Legs having entangled themselves with those of the Rest. Ragotin fell a laughing in his Tu:n, which gave all the Company fresh Courage; they

42 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

returned him his Book, and the Players lent him an old Hat. He fell into a violent Passion against the Man who used him so scurvily; but being somewhat more vain than Revengful, he told the Players, with the Air of one that was going to promife fome extraordinary Thing, that he had a Mind to make a Play out of this Story of his, and would contrive it so well, that he was fure to get as much Reputation by that fingle Piece, as other Poets had in all their Lives gained by feveral. Destiny told him, they Story he had related was very entertaining, but would, by no Means, fit the Stage. Sure, faid Ragotin, you won't pretend to teach me, I would have you to know, that my Mother was Seamstress to the Poet Garnier, and I myself have one of his Ink-horns at Home. Destiny replied, that even Garnier would get no Reputation by it, if he was to do it himself. But what Difficulty do you find in it, asked Ragotin. The Difficulty, answered Desting, is in that it cannot be brought into a regular Play, without committing a great many Faults, both in Point of Decorum and Judgment. As for that, faid Ragotia, at Man of my Parcs, may make new Rules whenever he pleases. Pray consider, added he, What a new and magnificent Thing it would be, to represent a great Church-Gate in Front of the Stage, before which twenty Beaux more or less, with as many Ladies, should appear and fpeak a thousand fine Things to one another, would it not ravish all the Spectators with Admiration think you? I am so far of your Opinion, continued he, that one ought to observe Decorum and good Manners, and therefore would not make my Actors talk in the Church. Desting interrupted, to ask him, where they could get so many Gentlemen and Ladies? And how do they in Colleges, faid Ragotin, where they fight pitched Battles? I myself played at La Flesche, the Overthrow at the Bridge of So, added he, above a hundred Soldiers of the Queen Mother's Party appeared on the Stage, besides those of the King's Army, which was more numerous: And I remember, that by Reason of a great Shower that fell that Day and spoiled the Sport, 'twas reported, that all the Feathers of the Country Gentry, which had been borrowed on this Occasion.

Occasion, would never come to themselves again. Destiny, who took great Delight in hearing him utter all these judicious Things, replied, that Colleges had Scholars enough for that Purpose, whereas their Company did never confift in all of above feven or eight Persons: Rancour, who, you know, had ever been a malicious Dog, fided with Ragotin in this Manner, the better to help to make him rediculous, and told his Comrade, he was not of his Opinion; that he had been a Player before him, that a Church-Gate would be the finest Scene that ever was feen; and as for the necessary Number of Gentlemen and Ladies, that they might have some Flesh and Blood, and represent the rest with Pastboard. This fine Expedient of Pastboard, invented by Rancour, set all the Company a laughing: Ragotin laughed with the Rest, and swore he knew that Contrivance well enough, but had a Mind to keep it to himself. As for Coaches, added he, will it not be a Novelty in a Play? I formerly personated Toby's Dog, and did it so to the Life, that the whole Audience was so highly pleased with my Performance, taking me to be a real Dog. As for my Part, continued he, if wemay judge of Things by the Effects they work upon our Minds, I never faw Piramus and Thisbe acted in my Life, but I was less concerned at Erasmus's Death, than frighted by the roaring of the Lion. Rancour backed Ragotin's Reasons with others as rediculous, and by that Means, ingratiated himself so far into him, that Ragotin took him to Supper. All the other Impertinents left likewise the Players at Liberty; who 'tis probable had much rather go to Supper, than entertain these idle Coxcombs of the Town.

CHAP. XI.

Which contains what you'll find, if you'll but take the Pains to read it.

R Agotin carried Rancour to a Tavern, where he called for the best Things the House could afford. 'Tis thought he would not carry him to his own House, because

Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

fe his Commons were but indifferent; but I will fay mothing about that, for fear of passing rash Judgment: neither did I care to enquire much into the Truth of the Business, because I did not think it worth my while, especially having Matters of far greater Importance to relate. Rancour, who was a Person of great Discernment, and knew his Men at first Sight, no sooner saw a Brace of Partridges and Capon served up for two People, but he began to think, that Ragotin had some Design or other, and did not treat him fo well, either upon Account of his own Merit, or to repay the Civility he had recieved from him, in maintaining his Story to be a good Subject for a Play. He therefore expected to hear fome new Extravagance from Ragotin, who, however, did not discover. his Thoughts at first, but continued talking about his Novel. Notwithstanding he at length repeated several Lampoons he had made upon most of his Neighbours, some Cuckolds that were nameless; and other Women: He fung drunken Catches, and shewed Rancour Abundance of Acroflics and Anagrams; which are generally the first Things with which your paultry Rhimers begin to plague Men of Seufe. Rancour made him a complete Coxcomb; by crying up all he heard, with Eyes lifted to Heaven, and two e like a losing Gamester, that he never heard any Thing so fine in his Life: Nay, he was so transported, that he made a Shew of pulling off his Hair in an Extafy of Pleasure. He told him now and then, 'tis a great Misfortune both for you and us, that you do not leave off all other Bufiness and write for the Stage; for in such Case, in two or three Years Time, Corneille would be no more talked of, than Alexander Hardy is now. I am, added he, an abfolute Stranger to Flattery; but to encourage you, must needs own, I no sooner faw you, but I read in your Face, that you was a great Poet; and you may be fatisfied by my Comrades; what I told them about it. I am feldom mistaken: I can fmell a Poet at two Miles Distance; and therefore as foon as ever I cast my Eyes on you, I was acquainted with your Genius, as well as if I had brought you up. All this fulfome Stuff went down with Ragotin as glib

glib as feveral Glasses of Wine, which he drank at the same Time, and which intoxicated his Brain, as much as Rancour's Commendations swelled his Vanity. As for Rancour, he eat and drank very heartily, crying out now and then, for God's Sake, Monsieur Ragotin, improve your Talent: Once more let me tell you, you are much to blame, not to make your Fortune and ours. For my Part, I scraul a little Paper sometimes as well as other People, but if I could make Verses half so good as those you have been reading to me, I should not have been so hard put to it to keep Life and Soul together, but would live upon my Income as well as Mondory. Therefore. Monfieur Ragotin, once more, pray write; and if this next Winter we do not eclipse the Companies of the Hostel de Burgogne, and des Marez, may I never tread the Stage more without breaking one of my Arms or Legs. I'll fay no more, and so let's drink. He was as good as his Word; for having put a double Quantum into a Glass, he drank Monsieur Ragotin's Health to Monsieur Ragotin himself, who pledged him after the same Manner, and returned his Civility with drinking the Health of the Women-Players. This he drank Cap in Hand, and in fuch a Rapture, that as he fet the Glass down on the Table, he broke its Foot, without taking Notice on't; however, he afterwards attempted three or four Times to fet it upright but finding it impossible, he at last flung it over his Head; when pulling Rancour by the Sleeve, he let him know he had had the Honour of breaking a Glassin drinking the Players Health: It vexed him a little that Rancour did not laugh at it; but, as I faid before, he was rather an envious than a rifible Animal. Rancour asked him, What he thought of their Women? ____ The little Man blushed, without giving an Answer: But Rancour putting the same Question to him again, at last, what by his stuttering, blushing, and broken Speech, he gave Rancour to understand, that he liked one of the Players extremely. But which of them, quoth Rancour? The little Man was so disordered for having faid fo much, that he answered, I don't know - Nor I neither, faid Rancour. This Reply cast him into a greater Diforder, infomuch, that with a bewil-

dered Look, he faid, 'Tis, 'tis - He repeated the fame Words five or fix 'Times over again; at which the Stroller growing impatient, cried, I like your Choice, she's a very beautiful Person. This put him quite out of Countenance, infomuch, that he could never tell which he loved most; tho' it may be he knew nothing of the Matter himfelf, or that his Passion was rather Lust than Love. At last, Rancour maming Mrs. Star, he said, 'Twas she with whom he was in Love: For my Part, I verily believe, that had he named either Angelica, or her Mother Cave, he would have forgot the Blow he had received with a Busk from the one, and the Age of the other, and given himself Body and Soul to the very first that Rancour had named. So great was the Confusion of Goatisti Ragotin. The Stroller, however, made him drink a good Bumper, which carrying off Part of it, pledged him with another; which done, looking about the Room, he whifpered, as tho' it were a great Secret he was about to tell, tho' there was no Body. Well, your Wound is not mortal, quoth Rancour, and you have addressed yourself to one who is able to cure you, provided you will be but ruled by him, and keep Counsel; not but your Enterprize is a little Difficult; for Mrs. Star is a very Tygress, and her Brother Destiny a Lion: But still she does not see Men every Day like you, and I know not what I can do; let's drink out our Liquor, and To-morrow will be Day; they drank each a Glass of Wine, which interrupted their Conversation for a while. After this, Ragotin recounted all his Accomplishments and Riches, and told Rancour, that a Nephew of his, was Clerk to a Financier; that this Nephew had contracted great Friendship with the Partizan de Ralliere, during the Time he was at Mans, to fettle an Excife-Office there, by the Means of which Nephew's Interest he endeavoured to give him, Hopes that he would procure him fuch a Pension from the King as his Players in Ordinary had. He told him likewife, That if any of his Relations had Children, he could prefer them in the Church, by Reason his Niece had married the Brother of a certain Miss, kept by the Steward of an Abbot of that Province, who had good Livings in his Gift. Whilft

Whilst Ragotin was thus relating what great Interest he had, Rancour, who, the more he drank, the more Thirsty he grew, was still filling both the Glasses, which were emptied in an Instant, Ragotin not daring to refuse any Thing from the Hands of a Man from whom he expected fuch a great Piece of Service. In short, they swilled it about, till they had both their Fill. Rancour, according to his Custom, grew more serious, but Ragetin became fo dull and heavy, that he laid down his Head on the Table, and fell asleep. Rancour called one of the Maids to make a Bed ready for him, because no Body was up at his Inn. The Maid told him, she had as good make two, for she was sure Monsieur Ragotin wanted one as well as he. In the mean Time he slept and snored as heartily as ever he had done in his Life, for all the Noise they made while they were putting clean Sheets on two of the three Beds that were in the Room: But when the Maid came to wake him, and acquaint him his Bed was ready, he called her a thousand Whores, and threatned to beat her. At last, Rancour, having turned him in his Chair, towards the Fire, at which the Sheets were aired, he rubbed and opened his Eyes, and fuffered himself to be undressed without repining. They got him into his Bed as well as they could; and Rancour, having first made the Chamber-Door fast, went into his. About an Hour after, Ragotin got up, to what Purpose I never yet could learn. He rambled a long Time about the Room, not knowing where he was; and having overturned all the Chairs and Tables he met in his Way, and tumbled himself down several Times, without being able to find his Bed again; he went at last to Rancour's, and pulling his Bed-cloaths, made him to start out of his Sleep. Rancour asked him, What he would have? I am looking for my Bed, faid Ragetin -'Tis on the left Hand of mine, replied Rancour. The little drunken Man however took to the Right, and thrust himself betwixt the Rug and Matrass of the third Bed, which had neither Feather-Bed, Quilt, nor Sheets, and there he flept all Night very quietly. Rancour got up and dreffed himself before Ragotin waked; when he asked him, Whether 'twas to do Penance that he had left his Bed to fleep

on Straw? Ragotin was positive that he never got up, and that the Room must be haunted. The Inn-keeper hearing this, stood up for the Reputation of his House, and picking a Quarrel with Ragotin, threatned to sue him for giving it an ill Name. But I have sufficiently exercised your Patience with this tedious Story of Ragotin's Debauch, and therefore let us return to the Strollers Inn.

CHAP. XII.

A Combat in the Night.

Am too much a Man of Honour not to advertise the courteous Reader, that if he be offended at all the filly Trifles he has already found in this Book, he will do well not to go on with the reading of it; for upon my Conscience, he must expect nothing else, altho' the Volume should swell to the Bigness of that of the Grand Cyrus: and if from what he has read, he doubts what will follow, perhaps I am in the fame Quandary as well as he: For one Chapter draws on another, and I do with my Book as some do with their Horses, putting the Bridle on their Necks, and truffing to their good Conduct. But perhaps I have a fixed Defign, and without filling my Chapters with Examples for Imitation, shall instruct with Delight, after the same Manner as a drunken Man creates in us an Aversion for Drunkenness, and yet may sometimes divert us with his merry Impertinence. Let's end this moral Reflection, and return to our Strollers, whom we left in the Inr. As foon as their Room was cleared, and Rancour had got thither with Ragotin, the Door-keeper they left our Tours came into the Inn, with a Horse-load of Goods, and fat down to Supper with them. By this Person, and what they had learnt from one another, they understood how the Intendant-of the Province could do them no Harm, having had much ado to escape the Hands of the boistrous Mob, with his Fuziliers. Destiny told his Comrades how he had got away in his Turkish Habit, with which he defigned to represent Merrets's Soliman; and that being informed that the Plague was at Alençon, he was come to Mans with Cave and Rancour, with the same Equipage we have described in the Beginning of these, most true, tho' little Heroical Adventures. Mrs. Star acquainted them also with the good Offices she had received from a Lady at Tours, whose Name never came to my Knowledge, and how, by her Means, she had been conducted as tar as a Village near Bonestable, where the sprained her Foot as the alighted off her Horse. She added that hearing the Company was gone to Mans, she got herself carried thither in a Litter, which the Lady of that Village had lent her with a great deal of Civility. After Supper, Destiny alone staid in the Lady's Chamber; Cave loved him as if he had been her own Son; Mrs. Star was no less dear to her; and her Daughter and only Heiress Angelica, loved Destiny and Star, like a Brother and Sister. She did not yet exactly know who they were, nor upon what Account they had turned Players; but she had taken Notice, that though they called one another Brother and Sister, yet were they better Friends than near Relations; that Destiny paid to Star the greatest Respect imaginable; that the was extreme modelf and virtuous: And as Destiny had a great deal of Wit, and seemed to have a liberal Education, so Mrs. Stars looked more like a young Lady of Quality, than a Stroller. Now Definy and Star were beloved by Cave and her Daughter, because they really deserved their Love, both by their good Qualities, and the mutual Friendship which they naturally had for two Players, who had as much Merit as any in France, tho' they never had the good Fortune to tread either of the two Theatres in Paris, which are the Non plus ultra of French Players. Those who do not understand these three little Latin Words (which come fo Pat in my Way, that I could not refuse to place them here) may be pleased to ask some Latinist of their Acquaintance the Meaning of them. To end this Digression; Destiny and Star did not scrupie: to express their mutual Fondness before Cave and Angelica, and shew the extreme Joy they had to see each other aiter fo long an Absence. They related, as pathetically as ever they could, how uneasy they were about each other; and Destiny acquainted Mrs. Star, that the last Time they acted at Tours, he thought he had spied their inve-

sterate Persecutor amongst the Croud of their Auditors, altho' he had his Cloak about his Face: And that as he went out of the City, not finding himself able to refift him, if he had offered to attack him, he had disguised himself, by putting a great Patch on his Face. He told her afterwards, how many Litters they met with when they when to fetch her; adding, he was much mistaken if their common Enemy was not the same unknown Perfon, who had fearched fo nicely all the Litters, as you have feen in the feventh Chapter. Whilft Defliny was speaking, poor Mrs. Star could not forbear shedding some few Tears: Destiny was sensibly touched with them; and having comforted her as well as he could, added, that if she would but suffer him to use the same Endeavours in feeking out their Enemy, as he had used, till then, in avoiding him, he would foon free her from his Profecutions, or lose his Life in the Attempt. These last Words redoubled her Grief: Destiny had not Courage enough to forbear grieving likewise: and Cave and her Daughter, who were of a tender and compassionate Temper, greived also, either out of Complaifance, or thro' a Contagion. I cannot tell whether Destiny wept, but this I know, the Women and he were filent a long While; and in the mean Time every one wept as they thought fit. At last Cave renewed the Conversation which Tears had interrupted, and reproached Destiny and Star, that, tho' during the Time they had lived together, they might have been convinced how much she was their Friend, yet they reposed so little Confidence in her and her Daughter, that they were still unacquainted with their Birth and Quality; adding, she had not met with Crosses enough in her Life, to enable her to advise unfortunate Persons, such as they two seemed to be. To which Deftiny answered, that their not discocovering themselves to her, was not out of any Distrust, but because he thought the Recital of their Misfortunes could not but be very tedious; telling her withal, that he would be ready to entertain her with the Story of their Adventures, whenever the was willing to throw any Time away upon the hearing of it. Cave was glad of this Opportunity to fatisfy her Curiofity; and her Daughter, who had 1

had the same Inclination, being sat near her on Star's Bed, Defliny was about to begin his Story, when they heard a great Noise in the next Chamber. Destiny flood liftning a while; but the Noise and Squabble increasing, and some Body crying out, Murther, Help, Murther, --- He, with three Leaps, got out of the Chamber, at the Expence of his Doublet, which Cave and Angelica had torn as they were going to stop him. He went into the Chamber from whence the Noise came, which was so dark that he could not see his own Nose; and where the Fiftycuffs, Boxes on the Ears, and several confused Voices of fighting Men and Women, together with the hollow Noise of naked Feet stamping on the Floor, made an hideous and frightful Uproar. He ran very rashly amongst the Combatants, and in one Moment received a Cuff on one Side, and a Box on the Ear on the other; which changed his good Intention of parting those Hobgoblins, into a violent Thirst of Revenge. He began to set his Hands a-going, and made a Flourish with his two Arms, by which many a maimed Chops were belaboured, as it afterwards appeared by his bloody Fifts. The Scuffle lafted fo long, that he received twenty Cuffs more, which he however returned, with double the Number. In the Heat of the Fight, he felt himself bit on the Calf of the Leg, when clapping his Hands to the Place, he met with fomething hairy, which he for that Reason took to be a Dog; but Cave and her Daughter, who appeared at the Chamber-Door at that Interim with a Candle, like the Fire of St. Helmo after a Storm, discovered to Destiny that he was amidst seven Persons in their Shirts, who having been in close Conflict before, began to let one another go, as foon as the Light appeared: This Tranquility however did not last long. The Inn-keeper, who was one of the naked Combatants, grappled the Poet a-new; Olive, who was also amongst them, was attacked by the Inn-keeper's Man, another of the Combatants; Destiny went to part them, whereupon, the Hostess, who was the Animal that had bit him, and whom he had taken for a Dog, by Reason she was bare-headed, and had short Hair, slew at his Face, assisted by two Maids, as naked and bare-headed as herself. D 2

The Shrieks and Cries filled the Air once more, the Cuffs and Boxes made the Room to ring again, and the Fight grew still warmer and warmer. At last, several Persons who waked at the Noise, came into the Field of Battle, parted the Combatants, and procured a fecond Suspension of Arms. Now the Question was to know the Occasion of the Quarrel, and what fatal Accident had brought seven naked Perfons into one Room. Olive, who feemed the least concerned, faid, that the Poet being gone out of the Room, he faw him come running back as fast as he could, followed by the Inn-keeper, who feemed to have a Mind to beat him; that the Hostess following her Husband fell foul of the Poet; that as he was going to part them, a Servant and two Maids fell upon him; and that the Light happening to go out at the same Time, made the Fight last longer than it would otherwise have done. Now it was the Poet's Turn to speak for himself: He said, that having made two of the finest Stanza's that ever were written fince Stanza's were in Fashion; and fearing to lose them, he went to the Maid of the Inn for a Candle, which she scornfully refused to give him; whereupon, the Inn-keeper called him Rope-dancer; which he returned by called him Cuckeld. He had no sooner spoke this last Word, but the Hoft, who was within reach, gave him a good Slap on the Chops; you would have thought they had made a fighting Confort together; for as foon as the Box on the Ear was given, the Inn-keeper's Wife, his Man and his Maids rushed upon the Strollers all together, who received them with found Cuffs. This last Encounter was more fierce and obflinate than either of the other two. Definy having closed with a lufty Wench, and tucked up her Smock, gave her a thousand Flaps on the Buttocks; Olive, who saw the Company pleased with it, did the fame to the other Maids. The Inn-keeper was busy with the Poet; and the Hostess, the most Furious of all the Combatants, was feized by fome of the Spectators; which made her to fly into fuch a Passion, that she cried out Thieves! Thieves! Her Cries awaked la Rappiniere, who lived overagainst the Inn. He caused the Door to be broke open, and judging by the Noise he heard, there could be no less. than

than feven or eight People killed, he parted the Fray in the King's Name; and having learnt the Caufe of all the Difturbance, exhorted the Poet not to make any more Verses in the Night-time, and was like to have beaten the Inn-keeper and his Wife, for giving a hundred abusive Names to the Players, whom they called Jack-puddings and Tumblers, fwearing withal, to turn them out of Doors the next Day; but la Rappiniere, to whom the Inn-keeper owed Money, threatning to arrest him, his Mouth was foon stopped. La Rappiniere, after the Fray, went Home, the rest returned to their Chambers, and Destiny to that of the Players, where Cave defired him not to defer any longer relating the History of his, and his Sister's Adventures. He told her, he was ready to fatisfy her Curiofity, and began his Relation after the Manner you shall find in the following Chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

The History of Destiny and Mrs. Star. P. 127 12

Was born in a Village near Paris, and might make you believe I came of a very illustrious Family, fince no Body can disprove what a Stranger says of himself; but I am too generous, and too much a Lover of Truth, to deny the Meanness of my Extraction. My Father wasone of the topping and most substantial Men in his Village, whom I have often heard to fay, that he was a poor Gentleman's Son; that he had spent his Youth in the Wars, where, having got nothing but dry Blows and empty Pokets, he betook himself to the Service of a rich Parisian Lady, in the Quality of her Gentleman Usher; and that having scraped together a Sum of Money in this Place, (because he was also the Steward and Caterer of the House, and had the Knack of emptying his Miftress's Purse to fill his own Pockets) he married an old Waiting-Woman of the Family, who died foon after, and left him all she had got in her Service. Being foon weary of the Condition of a Widower, and no less than that of a Servant, he married a Country-woman, who furnished his Lady's House with Bread: And 'tis to this last Marriage that I owe my

D 3

Birth.

54 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

Birth. My Father was called Gariquet; what Country he was of, I could never yet learn; and as for my Mother's Name, it fignifies nothing to my Story. Let it suffice, that the was more covetous than my Father, and my Father more covetous than she, and that they had both a pretty large Conscience. My Father had the Honour of being the Inventor of the Piece of Flesh tied with a String to the Pot-handle, which having boiled a confiderable Time, may be taken out again, and serve several Times to make Soop. I could tell a hundred more Particulars of his good Husbandry, which gained him, with Justice, the Reputation of a Man of Wit and Invention; but for fear of being too tedious, I will content myself with relating only two, which may feem incredible, tho' they are most certainly true. He had bought up a great Quantity of Corn, with a Defign to fell it very dear, in Case the Year should prove bad; but the Harvest being plentiful, and Corn falling in its Price, he was so possessed with Dispair, and the Devil, that he had an Inclination to hang himfelf. One of his Neighbours, who happened to be in the Room when he entered upon that noble Defign, and had hid hertelf for fear of being feen, (for what Reason I know not) was not a little furprized, when she saw him hang dangling on one of the Joiks of the Cieling. She immediately ran to him, crying out, Help, Help, and began to cut the Rope; and by the Help of my Mother, who came in at the Noise, got it from his Neck: Perhaps they repented the doing of fo good an Action, for he beat them both to Mummy; and made that poor Woman pay for the Rope she had cut, by stopping some Money he owed her. other Prank is no less Strange: He grudged himself whatever he eat, and his Wife being brought to Bed of a Boy, the Fancy took him in the Crown, that she had Milk enough to nourish both his Son and himself; and hoped, that by fucking his Wife he should save Bread, and live upon a Food of easy Digestion. My Mother's Wit was much inferior to his, tho' her Avarice was as great; but tho' she did not invent Things as my Father did, yet having once conceived them, she put them in Execution with more Exactness than he could. She therefore tried to nourish

of

both her Son and Husband with her own Milk, and ventured also to feed upon it herself, with so much oblinacy, that the little innocent Creature was foon starved to Death; and my Father and Mother were so weakned, and famished, that when they returned to Meat, they surfeited themselves and fell both sick upon it. Sometime after my Mother went with Child with me, and having happily. brought forth a most unhappy Creature, my Father went to Paris, to defire his Mistress to sand Godmother to his Son, together with an honest Church-man, residing at his Village, where he had a Benefice. As he was returning Home in the Evening, to avoid the Heat of the Day, and passed thro' a great Street in the Suburbs, the Houses whereof were for the most Part a building; he saw afar off by the Moon-shine, somewhat that glittered in his Eyes, as he was crossing the Street. He did not think it worth while to enquire what it was; but hearing the Groans of one in Pain, at the same Place where what he had feen vanished out of his Sight, he boldly entered one of those unfinished Buildings, where he found a Woman sitting alone on the Ground. The Place she was in, received fusficient Light from the Moon, to let my Father perceive that she was very young, and very richly clad, having on a Gown of Silver Tiffue, which was the glittering Thing my Father faw the Moment before. You must not queition that my Father, who did not want Resolution, was less surprized than the young Lady; for the was in a Condivion, that nothing worse could happen to her. This Consideration gave her the Assurance to speak first and tell my Father, that if he was a Christian, he would take pity on her; that she was in Labour ready to be brought to Bed, and that the Maid she had sent for a trusty Midwife, not returning, she had sliped away from her House without waking any Body, her Maid having left the Door open, that she might come in again without making any Noise. She had scarce made an End of this Relation, but the was delivered of a Child which my Father received into the Lappet of his Cloak. He acted the Midwise as well as he could, and the young Lady conjured him to carry away the little Creature with all Speed, to take care

D 4

of it; and not to fail two Days after, to go to an old Churchman she named to him, who would give him Money, and all necessary Orders for nursing the Child. At this Word Money, my Father, who had a penurious Soul, was going to display all the Eloquence of a Gentleman-Ufher, but she would not give him Time; she put into his Hands a Ring, for a Token to the Priest he was to go to from her; caused him to swaddle the young Creature in her Neck-handkerchief, and fent him away in Haste, notwithstanding his Unwillingness to leave her in that Condition she was in. I am inclined to believe, she had much ado to get Home again; as for my Father, he returned to his Village, gave the Child to his Wife, and did not fail two Days after, to go to the old Priest, and shew him the Ring. He learnt from him, that the Child's Mother was a young Lady of a very good Family, and very rich; that the had had this Child by a Scotch Lord, who was gone into Ireland to raise Soldiers for the King's Service ; and that this Foreign Nobleman had promifed her Marriage. Moreover, the Priest told him, that by Reason of her precipitate Delivery, she was fallen desperately sick, and being in that Extremity, had confessed all to her Father and Mother, who instead of chiding her, endeavoured to comfort her, by Reason she was an only Child: That the Thing was yet a Secret in the House, and therefore affured my Father, that if he would but take Care of the Child, and keep Counsel, his Fortune should be made. Thereupon he gave him fifty Crowns, and a Bundle of all Sorts of Things necessary for a Child. My Father returned Home after he had well dined with the Priest. I was put out to Nurse, and the Stranger kept at Home in my Stead. A Month after, the Scotch Lord came back, and having found his Mistress so very ill, that she could not live much longer, he married her one Day before she died, and so was no sooner a Husband, than a Widower. He came two or three Days after to our Town, with the Parents of his Wife. There they began to weep a-fresh, and were like to stifle the Child with Kisses; my Father had Reason to be thankful to the Scotch Lord for his Generofity, and the Relations of the Child did not forget him him befides. They returned to Paris very much fatisfied with the Care my Father and Mother took of the Boy, whom they would not yet take Home with them, because the Marriage was still kept secret, for some Reafons which never came to my Knowledge. As foon as I was able to walk, my Father took me Home, to keep the young Earl of Glaris Company (for fo he was called by his Father's Name.) The Natural Antipathy faid to have been between Jacob and E/au in the very Womb of their Mother, was never greater than that which was between the young Earl and me. My Father and Mother loved him tenderly, and had an Aversion for me, tho' I was the more hopeful Boy of the two: There appeared. nothing but what was mean in him. As for me, I feemed to be what I was not, and rather an Earl's Son than Gariquet's; and if am at last no more than a wretched Player, 'tis undoubtedly, because Fortune had a Mind to be revenged upon Nature, for defigning to make me fomething without her Help; or, if you please, because Nature is fometimes willing to favour those whom Fortune is unkind to. I shall pass over in Silence, the Infan-. cy of two young Clowns, (for Glaris was fuch by Education as well as myself) fince our most memorable Adventures were nothing but Abundance of Fifty-cuffs. In all the Quarrels we had, I always got the better of him, except when my Father and Mother fided with him, . which they did so often and with so much Heat, that my Godfather, Monsieur Saint Sauveur by Name, was highly offended at it, and demanded me of my Father. He made him a Present of me with great Joy, and my Mother had yet less Regret than he to part with me. Thus I was at my Godfather's well clad, well fed, much careffed, and never beaten. He spared no Costs to make. me read and write; and as foon as I was fit to learn Latin, he obtained of the Lord of our Village, who was a very civil Gentleman, and very rich, that I should study with two of his Sons, under a learned Man he had from Paris, and to whom he gave a very good Salary. This Gentleman, the Baron de Arques by Name, took great Care to have his Sons well educated. The eldeft, called D 5 Saint Saint Far, was a handsome Gentleman, but as untractably rough and brutish in his Nature, as ever Man was ; to make amends, the younger Brother was both handfomer than Saint Far, and had a Vivacity of Mind, and Greatness of Soul equal to the Beauty of his Body. In fhort, I do not think there ever was a more hopeful young Gentleman than Verwelle, for this was the younger Brother's Name. He honoured me with his Friendship, and as for me, I loved him like a Brother, and ever iespected him as a Master. As for Saint Far, he had none but ill Inclinations, and I cannot better Express the Sentiments he had both for his Brother and me, than by telling you, that he loved not his Brother more than me, for whom he had a great Indifference; and that he hated me no more than he did his Brother, whom he loved but little. His Diversions were different from ours, for he loved nothing but Hunting, and quoted Books of Morality; whereas Vervelle feldom went out a Hunting, and took great Delight in Reading; wherein I agreed wonderfully with him, as I did in every Thing else, without being put to the trouble of doing any Thing out of Complaisance, as in Duty I ought. The Baron d' Arques had a large Library of Romances: Our Tutor, who had never read any in his College, and who, at first, forbid us the reading of them, having condemned them a hundred Times before the Baron d' Arques, to render them as odious to him, as he found them delightful, grew at last so much in love with them himself, that, having devoured both the old and the new ones, he confest that the reading of good Romances, was as instructive as pleafant, and no less proper to inspire young People with noble Sentiments, than the reading of Plutarch. He therefore encouraged us to read them, as earnestly as he had difcouraged us before, and first of all advised us to peruse the Modern; but these were not yet suitable to our Palates; and till we were Fifteen, we were much more delighted with reading Amadis de Gaul, than Aftrea, and other fine Romances that have been made fince, by which the French have shewn to the World, as they have by a thousand Things besides, that if they do not invent so much as other Nations, yet do they nevertheless bring the Inventions of

others to a far greater Perfection. We therefore bestowed upon the reading of Romances, the greatest Part of the Time we had allowed us for Diversion. As for Saint Far, he called us the Ruyters, and went abroad every Day either to hunt, or beat the poor Country Fellows, which he did with wonderful Success. The Inclination I had to do well, gained me the Favour of the Baron d' Arques, : who loved me no less than if I had been his near Relation. He would not fuffer me to leave his Sons, when he fent them to the Academy, but fent me thither along with them, and that rather as a Companion than a Servant. There we staid about two Years to learn our Exercises, at the End of which, a Man of Quality related to the Baron d' Arques, raising Soldiers for the Venetians, Saint Far and Vervelle persuaded their Father to let them go to Venice with their Kinsman. The good old Gentleman desired I would still accompany them, and Monsieur de Saint Sauveur my Godfather, who loved me extremely, gave me very generously Bills of Exchange for a considerable Sum, to make use of, in Case those I had the Honour to accompany, should be unwilling to bear my Charges. We went the longest Way about on Purpose to see Rome, and the other fine Cities of Italy, in each of which we staid a confiderable Time, excepting those which are in the Spaniard's Hands. I fell fick at Rome, and the two Brothers went on their Journey; the Gentleman under whose Conduct they were, being willing to lay hold on the Opportunity of the Pope's Gallies, which were putting out to Sea to join the Venetian Army, near the Streights of the Dardanels, where they waited for the Turks. Vervelle was extraordinary forry to leave me, and I almost mad to part from him, at a Time, when by my Services I might, in fome Measure, have deserved the Love he had for me. As for Saint Far, I believe he left me with as much Indifference, as if he had never feen me; and I never thought on him, but only because he was Brother to Vervelie. who lest me as much Money as he could spare; but whether Saint Far was confenting, I cannot tell. Thus I was left fick at Rome, having no other Acquaintance besides my Landlord, a Fleming Apothecary, who took extraor-

dinary Care of me during my Illness, and who, as far as I can judge, had more Skill in Physic, than the Italian Doctor who looked after me. At last I recovered, and gathered Strength enough to go and view the most remarkable Places in Rome, where Strangers find abundantly wherewithal to entertain their Curiofity. I took a fingu-"lar Delight in viewing the Vines, (thus are called feveral Gardens, finer than the Tuilliries in Paris, which Cardinals and other Persons of Quality keep with much Cost in Rome, rather out of Vanity than for their own Entertainment, fince they never, or at least, very feldom go there themselves.) One Day as I was walking in one of the finest, I saw, at the Turning of the Wall, two Women very genteely dieffed, whom two young Frenchmen stopped, and would not let go, unless the Youngest of them unvailed her Face. One of those two Frenchmen, who looked like the Master of the other, had even the Infolence to offer to unvail her by Force, whilst his Man held the other, who was bare-faced. I was not long debating what I should do on this Occasion, but presently told those rude Men, that I was resolved not to suffer them to offer Violence to those Ladies. They were both very much furprized, for I spoke with such a Resolution, as would have danted them, had they had their Swords as well as myfelf. The two Ladies came over to me, and the young Frenchman, chufing rather to be baulked than beaten, told me as he went off; Sir, for all your hectoring, we shall meet you in some other Place, where our Swords shall not hang all on one Side. I answered, I would not hide myself: His Man followed him, and so I staid with the two Women. She that had no Vail on, looked to be about Five and Thirty: She returned me Thanks in good Irenck, without any Mixture of Italian, and told me amongst other Things, that if all Frenchmen were like me, the Italian Women would not scruple to live after the French Fashion. After that, to reward the Service I had done them, the added, that fince I hindred that rude Frenchman from feeing her Daughter against her Will, 'twas reafonable I should see her of her own Accord; therefore, faid she, Leenora, lift up your Vail, and let the Gentleman

fee that we are not altogether unworthy of the Honour of being under his Protection. She had scarce done speaking, but her Daughter put aside her Vail, or rather discovered a Sun which dazled my Eyes. I never beheld fo beautiful an Object in my whole Life; she cast three or four Times her Eyes on me, as it were by Stealth, and as they still met with mine, the innocent Blushes which overspread her Face, made her to look as handsome as an Angel. I perceived the Mother was very fond of her, for the seemed to share the Pleasure I had in gazing upon her. Now, by Reason I was little used to these Adventures, and that young People are eafily dashed out of Countenance in strange Company, I made them but indifferent Compliments when they went away, and gave them, perhaps, but an indifferent Opinion of my Wit. I was angry with myfelf for not asking their Habitation, and that I did not offer to wait upon them thither; but twas preposterous to run after them, I went to the Door-keeper to inquire whether he knew them, but we were a long While before we could understand one another, because he spoke no better French, than I did Italian. At last, rather by Signs than otherwise, he gave me to understand, that they were unknown to him, at least he would not own he knew them. I returned to my Fleming Apothecary, in a very different Disposition of Mind from what I was in when I came out; that is to fay, very amorous, and very much in Pain to know whether that beautiful Leonora was a Courtezan or an honest Woman, and if she had as much Wit as her Mother, who feemed to have a great deal. I abandoned myself to Thought, and flattered myself with a thousand fair Hopes, which entertained me a while, but disquieted me much more, when I considered that Impossibility of my Wishes. Having framed a thousand frivolous Defigns, I refolved at last to feek them out, not thinking it possible for them to remain long invisible in Rome, (which is not a populous City,) especially to a Man so much in Love as I was. That very Day I looked for them whereever I thought it most likely to find them, and returned home at Night, more tired and uneasy than I was when I went out. The next Day I fought them still with more Diligence

Diligence, yet did nothing but tire and disquiet myself. By my peeping thro' the Lattice-Windows, and my hafty running after all the Women that bore the least Resemblance of my Leonora, I was taken a hundred Times, both in the Streets and in the Churches, for the greatest Fool among those Frenchmen who have contributed most to their disparaging their Nation at Rome. 'Tis Matter of Wonder. how I could gather Strength at a Time, when I suffered like one in Hell: However, my Body recovered, whilst my fick Mind remained fo divided betwixt Honour and Love, which kept me at Rome, that I often doubted whether I should obey the frequent Letters I received from Verville, who conjured me by the Ties of Friendship, to come to him, without using the Rights he had to command me. At last, all my Endeavours to find out my unknown Lady, proving Ineffectual, I paid my Landlord, and got my little Equipage ready, in order to depart. The Day before I was to fet out, Signior Stephano Vanberge (for fo was my Landlord called) told me, he defigned to give me a Dinner at a Mistress's House of his, and at the same Time make me confess, that he had not made an ill Choice for a Fleming; adding withal, that he would not carry me to her before I was to go away, because he was a little jealous. I promised to wait on him, rather out of Complaifance than Inclination; and accordingly we went about Dinner-time. The House we went into had neither the Appearance nor Furniture of an Apothecary's Mistress. Having traversed a very fine Palour, we entered a magnificent Room, where we were received by Lonora and her Mother. You may imagine how much I was agreeably furprized. The Mother of that beautiful Daughter came towards me, to be faluted after the French Way ; and I must needs own, that she kissed me, rather than I her; I was fo amazed, that I fcarce could fee any Thing, neither did I hear one Word of the Compliment she made At last I recovered both my Senses and Sight, and faw Leonora more Beautiful and Charming than be ore, but had not the Assurance to salute her. I was sensible of my Fault as scon as I had committed it; but instead of repairing it, blushed as much out of Shame, as she did out

of Modesy. Her Mother told me, she designed to return me Thanks before I went away, for the Pains I had taken to find out their Habitation; and this fill increased my Confusion. The pulled me into

a * Ruelle, adorned after the French Fashion,

where her Daughter did not follow us, because I suppose, she did not think it worth her While to join Conversation with so dull a Fellow as I seemed to be. She staid with Signior Stephano, whilst, with her Mother, I acted the Part of a Clown to the Life. She was fo civil, to find Matter to keep up the Conversation herself; which she did very ingeniously; tho' nothing can be more Difficult, than to shew one's Wit with those that have none. For my Part, I never was fuch a Blockhead in my Life; and if she was not tired with me then, she never could be fure with any Body. Amongst other Things, to which I scarce answered, Yes or No, she told me she was a French Woman born, and that Signior Stephano would imform me of the Reasons which staid her in Rome. By this Time, Dinner being ready, she was fain to pull me along to the Table, as she had pulled me before to the Ruelle; for I was fo disordered, that I did not know how to set one Foot before t'other I was the same dull Loggerhead both before and after Dinner; during which, the only Thing I did with Assurance, was to stare upon Leonora. I fancy the was uneasy at it, and therefore to punish me for it, never lifted up her Eyes all the while. Had the Mother been filent, the Dinner had been like a Carthufian Meal; but she discoursed Signior Stephano about the Affairs of Rome, at least I fancy so, for I am not very sure of it. At last we rose from Table, to the great Comfort of every Body, except myfelf, whose Distemper grew worse and worse every Moment. When we went to take our Leaves, they faid a thousand obliging Things to me, which I only answered with the ordinary Compliments used at the Bottom of a Letter: However, I did something more at Parting than I did when I came in, for I saluted Leonora, and by that Means compleated my Ruin. Stephano was not able to get one fingle Word from me in all our Way home. I locked myself up in my Room, without pulling

64 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

pulling off either my Cloak or Sword. There I revolved. in my Mind whatever had happened to me. Leonora prefented herself to my Fancy, more Beautiful then ever she had appeared in my Sight. I remembred how dull and filly I was before the Mother and the Daughter; and as often as I thought on it, was so ashamed, that I could not forbear blushing. I wished to be rich, cursed my mean Extraction; and then fancied to myfelf, a thousand lucky Adventures, advantageous both to my Fortune and Love. At last, having nothing in my Thoughts but how to. frame a plaufible Pretence to stay, and not finding any to my liking, I grew fo desperate, as to wish to fall fick again, to which I had already no small Disposition. I defigned to write to Leonora; but all my Pen could produce did not please me, and so I put into my Pocket the Beginning of a Letter, which perphaps I had not dared to fend, had it been finished. Thus, having disquieted myself to little Purpose, and not being able to banish Leonora from my Thoughts, I resolved to go by the Vine where she appeared to me first, to abandon myself entirely to my Pasfion, and pass by her Door once for all. This Vine was well fituated in one of the remotest Parts of the City, and in the Midst of several old uninhabited Buildings; as I. paffed along, pensive and melancholy under the Ruins of a Portico, I heard fome Body stalk behind me, and at the fame Time felt myself run thro' under the Reins. I prefently faced about, and instantly drew my Sword; and finding I had to do with the Servant of the young Frenchman I mentioned before, I was like to return him at least as good a Pass as he had made at me by Treachery: But as I pushed at him without being able to close with him, because he maintained a running Fight, and endeavoured to parry, his Master came out from among the Ruins of the Portico, and attacking me behind, dealt me fuch a stunning Blow on the Head, and a great Thrust in the Thigh, as made me to fall down. There was no Likelihood of my escaping at so cheap a Rate; but because in an ill Action People feldom preferve a Prefence of Mind, the Servant wounded his Master in the Right Hand; and at the same Time two Minime Friars of the Trinity of the Mount ,

Mount passing by, and seeing me treacherously assaulted, ran to my Assistance, whereupon my Assistance made their Escape, and left me wounded in three several Places. Those good Friars happened to be Frenchmen, to my great Comfort; for in so remote a Place, had an Italian seen me in this Condition I was in, he would rather have avoided than fuccoured me, lest being found doing me a good Office, he was suspected of being himself my Murtherer. Whilst one of these charitable Friars received my Confesfion, the other ran to my Lodging, to acquaint my Landlord with my Disaster: He came instantly to me, and caused me to be carried, half dead, to my Bed. With so many Wounds, and fo much Love, 'twas no Wonder if I fcon fell into a most violent Fever. My Life was dispaired of by all, and I had no Reason to hope better than the Rest. In the mean Time, my Passion for Leonora was so far from abating, that it was rather increased, tho' my Strength grew still weaker and weaker. Wherefore, not being able to support so heavy a Burthen, without easing myself of it, nor resolved to die, without letting Leonora know, that 'twas for her Sake only that I wished to live, I called for a Pen and Ink. They thought I was Light-headed; but I was so earnest in protesting that they would drive me into Despair in Case they should deny me what I requested, that Signior Stephano, who had taken Notice of my Passion, and was fo clear Sighted as to guess at my Design, gave Orders that I should have all Things necessary to write; and as he knew my Intention, he staid all alone in the Room. I perused what I had scribled a little before with Defign to make use of some Thoughts which came then into my Head upon the same Subject, and then wrote thus to Leonora.

"I no fooner faw you, but 'twas out of my Power " to forbear loving you; my Reason did not oppose my " Passion, but told me, as well as my Eyes, that you " was the most lovely Person in the World; whereas it " should have represented to me, how unworthy I was " of your Heart. However, that would have ferved only " to exasperate my Disease with unprofitable Remedies, " and after having struggled a while, I must at last have " yielded

66 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

" yielded to the irrefishible Necessity of loving you, which you impose on all that see you. Well, I love you, my " charming Leonora, but with fo much Respect, that you " ought not to hate me for it, altho' I have the Boldness " to discover it to you: But how is it possible to die for " you, without boafting of it? And how can you refuse " to pardon a Crime, with which you cannot reproach " me long? I own your being the Cause of a Man's Death " is a Recompence not to be merrited. but by a great Number of Services, and you will, perhaps, envy me an Hap-" piness, which you procured me without Design. But do " not grudge it me, lovely Leonora, fince 'tis no more in " your Power to make me lose it, and that 'tis the only " Favour I ever received from Fortune, who will never " fufficiently reward your Merit, but by procuring you " Adorers as much above me, as all other Beauties in the " World are below yours. Therefore, I am not so vain 46 as to think that you will bestow the least Sentiments of

64 Pity on -

I was not able to make an End of my Letter; my Strength failed me on the Sudden; the Pen fell from my Hand, for my Mind went fo fast, that my Body could not keep Pace with it; else that long Beginning you have heard, had been but a small Part of my Letter; so much was my Imagination warmed by my Fever, and my Love. I was a long Time in a fainting Fit, without giving the least Sign of Life; which Signior Stephano perceiving, he opened the Chamber Door to fend for a Prieft. At that very Moment Leonora and her Mother came to visit me, having, it feems, been informed of my being wounded. Now as they thought this Accident befel me upon their Accounts, and for that Reason that they were the innocent Cause of my Death, they did not scruple to come to see me in the Condition I was in. My Trance lasted so long, that they went away before I was come to myself, very much afflicted, as one may imagine, and fully persuaded, that I would never recover. They read what I had been writing; and the Mother being more Curious than the Daughter, perused also the Papers I had lest on the Bed; amongst which there was a Letter from my Father. I

was a long Time struggling betwixt Life and Death; but at length Youth getting the upper hand, in a Fortnight's Time I was out of Danger; and in five Week's Time began to walk about the Room. My Landlord entertained me often about Leonora. He acquainted me with the charitable Visit she and her Mother had made me; at which I was over-joyed: And if I was a little troubled at their reading my Father's Letter, I was highly pleafed that my own had been read also. As often as I happened to be alone with Stephano, I could talk of nothing but Leonora. One Day, calling to Mind what her Mother told me, that he could inform me who she was, and what Reasons obliged her to stay in Rome. I defired him to acquaint me with what he knew of the Matter. He acquainted me, that she came to Rome with the French Ambassador's Lady; that a Man of Quality, a near Relation of the Ambassador's had fallen in Love with her; that in Time she loved him too, and that being married clandestinly, she had the beautiful Leonora by him: He informed me likewise, that that Nobleman had fallen out with all his Relations upon this Account, which obliged him to leave Rome and go to Venice with Madam la Boissiere (for this was her Name) till the Time of the Ambassy should be expired; that having brought her back to Roms, he furnished her a House, and gave her all Necessaries to live like a Person of Quality, whilst he staid in France, whither his Father had called him back, and whither he durst not carry his Mistress, or, if you please, his Wife; well knowing, that none of his Relations would approve his Match. I must confess, I could not sometimes forbear wishing, that Leonora was not the legitimate Daughter of a Person of Quality, that the Blemish of her Birth might excuse the Meanness of Mine; but however, I soon repented so criminal a Thought, and wished her Fortune answerable to her Merit. This last Thought cast me into Despair; for as I loved her more than my Life, I plainly forefaw, that I could never be happy without enjoying her, nor enjoy her without making her unhappy. When I began to recover, and that there was no other Remains of my Distemper, than a great Paleness in my Cheeks, occafroned by the vast Quantity of Blood I had lost, my young Masters

fection he ever had for me, and St. Far did not yet shew he hated me, as he has done fince. I recounted to them all my Adventures, except my falling in Love with Leonora; both expressed a great Desire of being acquainted with her, which my exaggerating the Merit both of the Mother and the Daughter encreased. A Man ought never to commend the Person he loves, before those who may love her also, fince Love enters at the Ears as well as the Eyes. This Folly has often been pernicious to those who have been guilty of it, which my own Experience will justify, as you shall see anon. St. Far asked me every Day when I defigned to carry him to Madam la Boiffiere: One Day, when he was more preffing than ordinary, I answered, I could not tell whether she would admit of his Visit or not, because the lived very retired. Nay, replied he, I now plainly fee you are in love with her Daughter; and adding, he knew how to go fee her without me, after a very blunt Manner. I was fo daunted, that he then firmly believed, what he barely suspected before. Afterwards he passed an hundred filly Jests upon me, and dashed me so out of Countenance, that Verville pitied me. He took me

away from his unmannerly Brother, and

* A Place to take carried me to the * Course, where I was the Air in, in a Coach, extremely melancholy, tho' Verville, out of a Kindness extraordinary in a Person as in Hide-Park. of his Age, and fo much above me by

his Quality, used all possible Means to divert me. In the mean Time, the ill-natured Saint Far, endeavoured to fatisfy himself, or rather, to ruin me. He went strait to Madam la Boissiere; where they took him at first for me, because he had my Landlord's Servant with him, who had often accompanied me thither; but had it not been for that, I believe he had never been admitted. Madam la Boissiere was very much surprized to see a Man she did not know: She told Saint Far, she could not imagine upon what Score, a Stranger did her the Honour of a Vifit. Saint Far replied very humbly, that he was the Master of of a young Fellow, who was so happy as to be wounded

in her Service.

Having begun his Compliment with an Account, which, as I was informed fince, pleafed neither the Mother nor Daughter; and these two ingenuous Persons, being unwilling to hazard the Reputation of their Wit, with a Person, who at first Dash discovered he had little, the rude Impertinent was meanly diverted by them, and they very much tired with him. But what made him almost mad, was his being denied the Satisfaction of feeing Leonora's Face, tho' he had begged her a thousand Times to lift up the Vail she commonly wore, as all unmarried Ladies do at Rome. At last this accomplished Courtier being tired with tiring of them, rid them of his troublesome Visit, and returned to Signior Stephano's with little Advantage from the ill Office he had done me. Ever fince that Time, as 'tis ordinary with illustured People to hate those whom they have injured, he dispised me to that Degree, and disobliged me fo often, that I had a hundred Times forgot the Respect I owed to his Quality, if Verwille, by his conftant Priendfhip, and repeated Kindnesses, had not made me amends for his Brother's Brutality. I was not yet acquainted with the ill Office he had done me, tho' I often felt the Effects of it; I found, indeed, Madam la Boissiere more reserved to me, than when we were firit acquainted; but being fiill as civil as before, I did not take Notice of my being trou. blefome. As for Leonora, the appeared very thoughtful before her Mother, but when not observed by her, methought fhe was not fo melancholy, and cast on me more favourable Looks than I could have expected. Deftiny was thus relating his Story, and the Actresses listening very attentively, without shewing the least Inclination to sleep, when they heard the Clock strike two (in the Morning) Mrs. Cave put Destiny in Mind, that the next Day he was to accompany Monsieur la Rappiniere to a House about two or three Leagues out of Town, where he promised to give them the Diversion of Hunting. This made Destiny take his Leave of the Players, and retired to his own Chamber, where in all Probability he went to Bed: The other Players did the same, and the remaining Part of the Night was **fpent**

70 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

Spent in quiet; the Poet, as Luck would have it, having made no new Stanza's to disturb the general Repose.

CHAP. XIV.

How the Curate of Domfront was carried away.

Hose who have had so much spare Time to throw away upon the reading of the foregoing Chapters, may remember, if they have not forgot it, that the Curate of Domfront was in one of those Litters, which met four in a Company in a little Village, by an Accident which perhaps had never happened before; tho'every one knows four Litters may sooner meet together, than four Mountains. This Curate then, who lodged in the fame Inn where our Players quartered, having had a Consultation of the Physicians of Mans about his Disease, and being told by those grave Doctors in very elegant Latin, that he was troubled with the Gravel, which the poor Man knew but too well before; and likewise having dispatched some Business which never came to my Knowledge: This good Prieft, I fay, having done all this, fet out from that Inn about nine o'Clock in the Morning, to return to the Spiritual Conduct of his Flock. One of his Nieces, drest like a Gentlewoman, but whether she was so or not, fignifies little, placed herself at the fore Part of the Litter, at the good Man's Feet, who was very thick and short. A Peasant, by Name William, led the fore Horse by the Bridle, by special order from the Curate, for fear he should stumble; and the Curate's Servant, one Julian, took Care to drive the hinder; which was however to reflive, that he was often obliged to push him forward with his Shoulders. The Curate's Chamber-pot, which was of yellow Brass, and glistered like Gold, having been newly scoured in the Inn, hung on the right Side of the Litter, which made it to look more Magnificent than the Left, which was only adorned with a Hat in a Pastboard Case, which the Cyrate had received from the Paris Mesfenger, for a Gentleman of his Acquaintance, who had a House near Domfront. About a League and half from the Town, while the Litter jogged leifurely on in a hollow Way, fenced '

fenced on both Sides with thick Hedges, as strong as Walls, three Horsemen second by two Men on Foot, slopped the venerable Caravan. One of them, who seemed to be the Captain of the rest, with a most terrible Voice cried, Death and Furies, the first Man that offers to speak a Word, I'll pistol him, and with that clapped the Muzzle of his Pistol within two Inches of William, the Country-fellow's Nose, who led the horse Litter. Another did the like to Julian, and one of the Footpads levelled his Gun at the Curate's Neck, while he flept very quietly in the Litter, by which Means he was freed from the terrible Fright that had feized his little peaceful Retinue. These villainous Rogues, drove the Litter with more Haste than the dull Horses that carried it were willing to make. Never was Silence better observed in so violent an Action: The Curate's Niece was more dead than alive: William and Julian wept, without daring so much as to open their Mouths, by Reason of the terrible Apparition of Fire-arms; and the Curate slept on, as I said before. One of the Horsemen detached himself from the main Body, and went a full Gallop before. In the mean Time the Litter reached a Wood, at the Entrance of which, the fore Horse, which perhaps was as much frighted as his Leaders, or else out of Spite, because they had forced him to go a quicker Pace, than his dull and heavy Constitution would permit him, put his Foot into a Wheel-trac, when he fell a flouncing fo fiercely, that the Cu ate waked at the Noise; and his Niece trundled down from the Litter on the lean Buttocs of the Jade. The good Man called Julian, who durst not so much as answer him; he then called his Niece, who was not fuch a Fool as to open her Mouth; and the Peafant being as hard-hearted as the rest, the Curate fell into a Passion in good Earnest. Some relate, he swore a great Oath, but I can hardly believe such a Thing of a Curate of Lower Mayne. The Curate's Niece had by this Time raifed herself up again from the Horses Buttocs, and fat in her Place, without daring to look on her Uncle; and the Horse having, with great Vigour, disingaged his Feet, went on faster than ever he did, notwithstanding the Curate's screaming out with his Reading-desk Voice, stop, stop. His repeated Cries scared the Horses,

who ran as if the Devil drove them, which made the Curate to cry fill the louder. Sometimes he called Julian, sometimes William, and oftner than the rest his Niece, to whose Name he added the Epithet of double Whore and Carrion, However, she might have spoke if she had been willing; for the Man who made her to observe so religious a Silence, was gone to meet the Horsemen who rode before, about forty or fifty Yards from the Litter. But the Fear of the Carabine, made her infenfible of her Uncle's hard Words; who seeing himself so obstinately disobeyed, began at last to howl and cry out, Help, Help, Murther, Murther. Thereupon, the Horsemen who rode before, and whom the Footmen had called back, came to the Litter, and made it stop. When one of them cried in a terrible Voice to William, What Fool is that, that makes such a Noise in the Litter? Alas, Sir, answered William, with fear and trembling, you know that better than I. The Horsemen gave him a found Knock on the Pate with the Butt end of his Piftol, and prefenting the Muzzle to the Niece, commanded her to unmask, and tell him who she was. The Curate, who from his Litter beheld all these Passages, and who had a Law-fuit with a Gentleman in his Neighbourhood, de Laune by Name, thought 'twas he that had a Mind to murther him. Whereupon, he cried out, Monfieur de Laune, I summon you before God Almighty, to answer for my Murther if you kill me : I am a consecrated Priest, tho' an unworthy one, and I'll have you excommunicated like a Cannibal. In the mean Time his Niece pulled off her Mask, and shewed to the Horseman a wild starting Face, which he did not know. This produced an unexpected Effect That paffionate Gentleman discharged one of his Putols into the Flank of the Horse that carried the fore Part of the Litter, and with the other shot one of his Footmen in the Head; faying, let all that give falle Intelligence have that for their Pains. And now it was, that the Curate and his Retinue's Fears began to redouble: He demanded their Confession. Julian and William fell on their Knees, and the Curate's Niece kept close to her Uncle. But those who put them in that terrible Fright, where already gone from them, and made the beat of their Way, as fait

25

as their Horses could drive, leaving to their Charge, the Body of the Fellow that was shot. Julian and William got up, flill Baking with the Remains of their Fears, and told the Curate and his Niece, that the Troopers were gone. Now they were fain to unharness the hindermost Horse, to fet the Litter upright; and William was fent to the next Town to get another Horse. In the mean Time the Curate was at a Lofs, what to think of these Accidents: He could not imagine, why they left him without robbing him; nor, for what Reason that Horseman had killed one of his own Men; at which, however, he was not fo much offended as at the Lofs of his poor murthered Horse, which in all Probability, had never quarrelled with that Stranger. Upon the whole Matter, he concluded that 'twas de Laune, who had defigned to murther him, and faid, he would have his Revenge. His Niece maintained. that 'twas not de Laune, whom she knew very well; but the Curate had a Mind it should be he, that he might have an Occasion to indite him for an Affault, hoping to get him condemned upon the Deposition of some Knights of the Post, whom he expected to find at Goron, where he had some Relations. At length Julian espying another Company of Men on Horseback making towards them, betook himself to his Heels as fast as he could. The Curate's Niece feeing Julian upon the Flight, thoughthe had some Reason for it, and therefore scampered away also, which put the Curate entirely beside himself, not knowing what to make of fo many ext: aordinary Accidents. At last he himself espied the Horsemen whom Julian had feen before, and what is worse, he saw them coming up directly towards him. This Troop was composed of nine or ten Horsemen, in the Midst of whom there was a Wretch bound Hand and Foot, on a little forry Ho:se, with a pale downcast Look, like one that was carrying to be hanged. The Curate began to fay his Prayers, recommending himself to God Almighty's Mercy, and not forgetting the Horse that was lest alive: But he was very much furprized, and comforted at the same Time, to find that 'twas la Rappiniere with some of his Men. La Rappiniere asked him what he did there, and whether 'twas he that had killed the Man that lay dead near the Horse's Side.

The Curate told him the whole Adventure, still assiming, that 'twas de Laune that had Way-laid him, of which la Rappiniere made a verbal Process at large. One of his Archers went to the next Village, to get the dead Body removed, and returned with the Curate's Niece and Julian, who by this Time had recovered their Fright, and had met William with a fresh Horse for the Litter. The Curate returned safe to Domfront, where, as long as he lives, he will relate how he was fet upon, and carried away. The dead Horse was eaten up by the Wolves, or Massif Dogs; the Body of the dead Man was buried I know not where, and la Rappiniere, Destiny, Rancour and Olive, la Rappiniere's Mirmidons, and the Prisoner, went back to Mans. This is the Success of la Rappiniere and the Stollers hunting, who catcht a Man instead of a Hare.

CHAP. XV.

The Operator, or Mountebank's Arrival at the Inn. A
Continuation of the History of Destiny and Star. A
Serenade.

OU may be pleased to remember, that by the forego-ing Chapter, one of those that set upon the Curate of Domfront, left his Companions, and went full Gallop I know not whither. Now, as he was fourring on a main in a deep aud narrow Way, he espied, afar off, some Men on Horseback, making directly towards him; he would have wheeled about to fhun them, but turning too fhort, and with more Haste than good Speed, his Horse sprung up so fuddenly, that he fell down backwards with his Rider under him. La Rappiniere and his Fellows observing this, thought it was very strange, that a Man who came in such post Haste towards them, should endeavour to avoid them with the like Speed. It gave them therefore just Cause of Suspicion, especially to la Rappiniere, who was very susceptible in his own Nature; besides that, his Office obliged h'm to make the worst Interpretation of Things in dubious Cases. His Suspicion encreased to a high Degree, for when he came near the Man who had one Leg under the Horse,

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance.

he took Notice that he was not so much dismaid at his Fall, as that it was before such a Person as he. Now confidering it could be no prejudice to him to aggravate his Fright, and knowing how to discharge his Office, as well as any Provost in France, he drew near him, and faid to him, What! are you caught in a Trap, honest Man? Well, I'll take Care you shall not get such another Fall. This amazed the poor Fellow much more than the Fall had done; when la Rappiniere and his Harpies saw in his Countenance fuch visible Signs of a guilty Conscience, that any other Provoit, less forward than he, would have arrested him without any more a-do: He therefore commanded his Men to help get him up, and bind him Hand and Foot on his own Horse. He soon afterwards met the Curate of Domfront in the Diforder you have read of, with a dead Person murthered, and a Horse shot through, which confirmed him still the more in his Suspicions, to which the Prisoner's great Disorder and change of Colour, was no fmall Addition. Destiny serveyed him more arnestly than the rest, imagining he knew him, tho' where he had feen him he could not perfectly call to mind. He scratched his dull Pate all the Way he rode, to awake his drowfy Memory; yet could not remember where he had feen this suspected Person. At length they arrived at Mans, where la Rappinere committed the supposed Malefactor to prison, while the Strollers who were to open their Stage the Day followlowing, retired to their Irm, to get all Things in a Readiness for that Purpose. They were reconciled to the Innkeeper, and the Poet who was as generous as any Poet in the World, would needs treat them at Supper. Ragotin, was then in the Inn, for he could not refrain coming thither, ever fince he had been smitten with Madam Star, was invited by the Poet amongst the rest, who was so much a Fool, as to invite also those that had been Spectators of the Combat, which had been fought the Night before betwixt the Players and the Inn-keeper's Family, in their Shirts and Smocks. A little before Supper began, the jolly Company was farther incenfed by the Arrival of an Operator, and his Retinue; which confilted of his Wife, an old Black-a-more Maid, a Monkey, and two Footmen.

E 2

cour was his Acquaintance of a long standing, and therefore there past great Civilities betwixt them: Nor would the Poet, who was eafily acquainted with People, part with him nor his Wife, before he had prevailed upon them, by his high Compliments, which founded loud, and fignified little, only to come and honour him with thier Presence at Supper. Well, sup they did, where nothing happened that -was remarkable, only they drank plentifully, and eat proportionably. Ragetin fed his Eyes on Madam Star's Face, which intoxicated him more than the Liquor he had fwallowed. He spoke but very sparingly all the while they were at Table, tho' the Poet gave him a fair Opportunity of wrangling, flatly condemning Theophile's Verses, of whom Ragotin was a great Admirer. The She Players engaged a while with the Operator's Wife, a Spanish Woman, and pretty agreeable. They afterwards withdrew into their Chamber, whither Destiny waited on them, to profecute and end his Story, which Cave and her Daughter died with Impatience to hear. Star in the mean Time svas studying her Part, when Destiny having taken a Chair near the Bed-fide, whereon Cave and her Daughter fat, went on with his History after the following Manner.

Hitherto you have found me very amorous, and much in pain, to know what Effect my Letter had wrought on Leonora and her Mother's Minds; you shall find me more in Love yet, and in the greatest Despair imaginable. I waited every Day on Madam la Boiffiere and her Daughter, fo blinded with Passion, that I did not take Notice of the Coldness of their Reception, nor did I consider that my too frequent Visits might become importunate. Madam La Boissiere has been weary of my Company, ever since Saint Far acquainted her who I was: Yet she could not civilly forbid me the House, after what I had suffered on her Account. As for her Daughter, if I may judge by what she has done fince, I may say she pitied me, tho' contrary to her Mother's Will, who kept fo watchful an Eye over her, that we could never have an Opportunity to meet in private. But to speak the Truth, tho' this fair Vir in was much less Cold to me than her Mether, yet .durft durit not the thew me the least Token of her Favour before her Mother; so that I was on the Rack, and my affiduous Visits, served only to make me the more hateful to those whom I designed to please. One Day Madam la Roiffere having received Letters from France, which obliged her to go abroad as foon as the had read the Contents of them, the feut immediately for a Coach, and Signior Stepkano to accompany her, not daring to go alone after theun lucky Rencounter, wherein I had engaged on her Account. I was myself nearer at Hand, and more sit to be her 'Squire, than the Gentleman she had fent for; however she would not except of the least Service from a Person, whoms the intended speedily to rid herself of. As Luck would have it, Stephano was not to be found; fo that she was compelled to fnew before me, how uneafy she was, that the had no Body to go along with her, that I might have the Opportunity to offer myself; which I did withas much Joy, as she could have regret to be necessitated to take me along with her. I conducted her to a certain-Cardinal, who was then Protector of the French, and who by good Fortune, gave her Audience upon the first M: tien the made. The Bufiness was doubtless of great Importance, and no small Difficulty; for she was a long Time with him in a private Grotto, or covered Fountain, in the Midft of a fine Garden, whilk all the Cardinal's Followers walked into those Parts of the Garden they had more Fancy to. Now was I got into a large Walk of Orange-Trees alone, with the beautiful Leonora, a Bleffing I had often wished for before in vain; and yet was now more Modest and Paint-hearted, than ever I had been. I cannot tell whether she took Notice of it or not, or whether it was her Goodness which made her to speak first to me after this Manner: My Mother, faith she, will have just Reason to quarrel with Signior Stephano for failing us to Day, and being the Occasion of the Trouble we give you to wait here so long. And I am infinitely obliged to him, replied I, for procuring me, tho' without Defign, the greatest Happiness I ever hope to enjoy. I am too far upon the Score of Obligations towards you, faid she, to omit any Thing that may prove your Advantage; therefore, pray let me know E 3

wherein the Happiness confists you mention to be procured by him, that I may share your Joy, if it be such as will not offend a Maiden's Ear. I fear, faid I, you will make that Joy to cease-I! answered she; No, I never was envious of any Man's Prosperity, much less of a Perfons who has ventured his Life on my Account. 'Tis not your Envy that I fear, answered I-What other Motive, ecturned the, can there be to make me oppose your Felicity? Your Disdain, said I. I shall be much rerplexed, added she, till you let me know what I should disdain, and which Way this Difdain may concern you. I could foon unfold this Riddle, faid I, but I cannot tell whether you will be pleased to understand it. Do not let me hear it then, replied she; for when we have such Doubts, is thews the Thing is not to be easily understood, or is such as may displease. I must consess, I have admired a hun. dred Times since, how I was able to answer her, my Mind being less intent upon what the faid, than full of Fears of her Mother's Return, and losing the Opportunity of cntertaining her with my Love. However, at last I mustered up all my Assurance, and without prolonging a Conversation, which did not carry me fast enough to the Point I aimed at; I told her, not minding her last Words, That I had long fought an Opportunity to speak with her, thereby to confirm what I had prefumed to express in my Letter; which yet I durst not have undertaken, but on the Knowledge that she had seen that Writing. To this I added, a great Deal of what I had written, and faid moreover, that being upon my Departure to ferve the Pope in the War he was making on some Princes of Italy, and refolved to die there, fince I found myself unworthy to live for her; I would intreat her only to tell me, what Sentiments she would have entertained for me, had my Fortune been answerable to the Ambition I had to love her. She told me with a Blush, that my Death wouldnot be indifferent to her; and therefore, added the, if you are still of the same obliging Temper towards your Friends, do not let us lose one who has been so serviceable to us; or at least, if you will needs die, for some greater Reason than what you have just now expressed; yet defer your

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance. 79

Death, till we have feen one another in France, whither my Mother and myself are suddenly returning. I pressed her to explain, more clearly, the Sentiments she had for me, but her Mother was by this Time come so near us, that the could not have fatisfied me, if the had intended it. Madam la Boiffiere looked but coldly upon me, perhaps, because I had an Opportunity to entertain her Daughter, who likewife feemed fomewhat uncafy, which made me to flay but a little While with them, after their being returned Home. I left them, highly pleafed with my Adventure, putting the best Interpretation on Leonora's Answer I could. The next Day I omitted not to wait upon them according to my Cuitom: I was told they were gone abroad, and the same Answer I received for three Days together, for I was not discouraged by the first or second Denial. In fine, Signior Stephane, advised me to go no more, because Madam la Boissiere would not suffer me to see her Daughter; adding, he took me to be a Man of more Senfe, than to expole myfelf to a Refusal. Then he acquainted me with the Reason of my Difgrace: Leonora's Mother had caught her writing a Letter to me, it seems; having feverely reproved her for which, the afterwards gave fired Orders, that her People should always deny their being within, whenever I came to pay my Visit to them: And then I likewise discovered the ill Office Saint Far had done me, and that ever fince that Time, the Mother had been very much displeased with my Visits. As for the Daughter, Stephano affured me, my personal Merit would have made her to wave my mean Birth and Fortune, could she but have gained her Mother's Confent; who was too haughty and covetous to be perfuaded to it. I shall not trouble you with the desperate. Thoughts this unwelcome News put me into: I was as much concerned at it, as if I had Injustice done me in being refused by Leonora, tho' I never durst hope to have the least Possession of her Heart: I railed at Saint Far, and had some Thoughts of fighting him; but then confidering how much I had been obliged to his Father and Brother, I had no other Refuge but my Tears. I wept like a Child, and was ever uneafy, but most of all in Company. Now came on the E 4 . fad

ful Moment of our Departure, and I was forced to go away, without taking my last Farewel of Leonora. We made a Campaign in the Pope's Army, where I courted Death as much as I could; but wherein Fortune difappointed me, as the had ever done in my other Attempts. I could not meet that Death which I fought for, but gained Reputation I aimed not at, tho' I had been proud of it at any other Time: Whereas, then I could cherish nothing, but the pleafing Remembrance of Leonora. Verville and Saint Far were at length recalled to France by the Baron d' Arques, who received them like a Father that doted on his Children. My Mother gave me a very indifferent Reception; and as for my Father, he dwelt at Paris with Count Glaris, who had chosen him Governor to his Son. The Baron d' Arques, who had been made acquainted with my Feats of Arms in the War of Italy, where I had faved Verville's Life, would needs have me to live with him in the Quality of a Gentleman, and Companion. He gave me leave to visit my Father at Paris, where I almost found less Welcome, than I had done from my Mother. Any other Person in his Station, that had had a Son so accomplished as myself, would certainly have presented him to the Scotch Earl, but my Father carried me out of his House in great Haste, as if he seared I should disgrace him: As he went about the Streets, he reproached me for being too fine and gallant; and told me, I feemed proud, and that it were better for me to learn a Trade, than thus to ftrut about with a Sword by my Side. You may imagine, this Discourse sounded but harsh in a young Man's Ears, that had been well educated, and gained some Reputation in the Wars, and who besides had dared to love a handsome young Lady, and declare his Passion to her. I must freely own, the Sentiments of Love and Respect, which a Son owes to his Father, could not make me refrain from looking on him as a very troublefome old Man. He led me about through three or four feveral Streets, with the same Civility and careffing Expressions, and then shook me off abruptly, charging me not to come near him any more. I was willing enough to obey this last Injunction, and therefore quitted him, to go and wait upon Monfieur Monsieur de Saint Sauveur, who received me like a Father indeed, and blamed my own Parents for their unnaturalness; promising withal, never to abandon me. The Baron d' Arques had some Business, which obliged him to go and dwell at Paris, He took up his Lodgings at the farther End of Saint Germain's Suburb, in a very stately House, that had been lately built with many others, which have rendered that Suburb, the finest Part of the City of . Paris. Saint Far and Verville made their * As the Ring Court to the King, went to the * Park, or in Hide Park. a visiting, as all young Men of Quality are wont to do in that vast City, which makes the Inhabitants of all other Cities in the Kingdom that never come there, be accounted Clowns. For my own Part, when I waited not on them, I frequented all the Fencing-Schools to keep my Hand in Ure, or went to the Play-House, which is, perhaps, one Reason, why I am now a tolerable Actor. Verville took me aside one Day, and told me he was fallen deeply in Love with a young Lady that dwelt in the fame Street. He informed me she had a Brother, by Name Saldagne, who was as jealous both of her, and another Sifter under his Tuition, as if he had been their Husband. Moreover he told me, he had made no fmall Progress in his Amours, having persuaded her to give him Admittance by Night into their Garden, the back Door whereof opened into the Fields, as ours did like-Having made me his Confident, he defired me to accompany him, and use all my Rhetoric to gain the Favour of the Woman that was to attend her. Verville . had shewed me all along such Friendship, that I could not reasonably resuse him any Thing: So we went out of our Garden Back-door about ten o'Clock at Night, and foon after were admitted into the Garden, where the Mistress and the Maid waited for us. Poor Madam Saldagne trembled like an Aspen Leaf, and durst not speak; Verville's Courage was little better; the waiting Woman was as mute as a Fish; and I, who only came to accompany Verwille, spoke not a Word, neither had I any Desire of prating. At last, Verville summoned his Courage to his Aid, and led his Mistress into a close Walk, having first laid a Eς ft. iA

strict Charge upon the waiting Woman and myself to play the Centinels Part, which we observed so religiously, that for a long Time we walked together, without speaking one Word to each other. At the End of the Alley we met the young Pair of Lovers: Verville asked me aloud, whether I had entertained Miffress Maudlin as she deserved? I replied, I thought she had no Reason to complain. No, in truth, answered she, for he has not yet spoke one Word to me. Verwille laughed at her Words, and affured Mrs. Maudlin, that I was worth her Conversation, tho' I was fomewhat melancholy. Likewife Madam Saldagne faid, that her Woman was not to be despised; and thereupon those happy Lovers left us again, only bidding us be fure that no Body came to furprize them. I then prepared myfelf to be plagued with the Chat of a waiting Woman, who I expected would now examine me about my Wages, what Acquaintance I had among the Chamber-Maids in that Parish, how many new Catches I could fing, and what Vales I had with my Master. After this, I imagined the would acquaint me with all the Secrets of Saldagne's Family, and tell me both his Faults, and his Sifter's; for there are few Servants that meet, without giving one another a full Account of all they know of their Masters and Mistresses: But I was not a little surprized, to find myself in Discourse with a waiting Woman, that began thus: I conjure thee, theu dumb Spirit, to tell me, whether thou art a ferving Man, or not; and if thou art one, by what admirable Virtue hast thou forborn thus long flandering thy Matter? I was amazed to hear a Chambermaid talk at that extraordinary Rate; and so asked her, by what Authority she took upon her to exercise me? I perceive, faid she, thou art a stubborn Spirit, and that I must repeat my Conjuration. Tell me therefore, rebellious Spirit, by the Power God has given me over all proud and felf-conceited ferving Men, tell me who art thou? I am a poor young Fellow, answered I, that would fain be nowafleep in my Bed. I find, replied she, it will be no easy Matter for me to know who thou art: Yet thus much I clearly discover that thou hast little of a Courtier in thee. For, continued she, shouldest thou not first have broken Silence

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance.

Silence in an humble Address; then have taken me by the Hand, entertained me with Abundance of amorous Fiddlefaddle, fuddenly struggled for a Kiss, attempted to storm my Breast, till thou hadst been beaten off with three or four Cuffs on the Ear, as many Kicks on the Breech, and numberless Scratches on the Face; and then have returned home with Scars of Honour, and the Marks of an amorous Adventurer? There are some Maids in Paris, said I, interrupting her, whose Marks I would be proud to bear; but there are others whom I should dread to look upon for fear of dreaming afterwards of the Devil. What! thou thinkest me then, faid she, perhaps one of those Scarecrows. But good Master Squeamish, dost thou not remember the old Saying, That in the Dark, all Cats are Grey! True, replied I, but I'll never do that in the dark, which I may repent when the Light appears. But if I be handsome, said she, what then? Then I have shewed you less Respect than you deserve, replied I: For if your Beauty be equal to the Charms of your Wit, you deserve to be ferved and courted after the nicest Rules of Gallantry. And couldit thou serve a Lady according to the nicest Rules, faid she? Better then any Man living, replied I, provided I loved her. What matters that, faid she, so she loved you? Nav, both must join Issue, where I engage in an Amour, replid I. Truly, faid she, if I may judge of the Master by his Man, then has my Mistress made no indifferent Choice in Monfieur Verville; and that waiting Maid, whom thou shouldst condescend to love, would have no little Cause to be proud of herself. 'Tis not enough to hear me talk, faid I, you must see me too-I believe both may be better let alone, replied she-Our Conversation was fain to end here; for Monsieur Saldagne knocked hard at the Street Door, which they made no great Haste to open, that his Sister might have Time to flip up into her Chamber. The poor Lady and her Wo. man went away in such Haste and Disorder, that they did not fo much as bid us adieu when they shut us out of the Garden. Verville would needs have me go into his Chamber; when we got home, I never saw a Man so much in Love, and so well pleased: He extolled the Wit of his Mistrefs,

84 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part I.

Mistress, and told me, he should never be satisfied till I had feen her. In fine, he kept me there all Night, repeating every Thing she had faid over and over so often, that I could not get to Bed till break of Day. For my own Part, I admired to have met with fo much Wit in the Conversation of a waiting Woman; and must confess, I had a Sort of itching Defire to know whether she was handsome or not, tho' the Memory of my Leonora made me very indifferent towards all the good Faces I faw every Day in Paris. Verville and I slept till Noon; and as foon as he waked, he wrote to Madam Saldagne, and fent the Letter by his Footman, who was acquainted This Fellow was of Lower-Britany, with her Woman. of a very disagreeable Figure, and a worse Brain. When I faw him going, it came into my Head, that if the Party, whether Waiting-Woman, or Chamber-Maid, whom I had entertained with Chat over Night, should see him in that rugged Manner, and discourse him a while, she certainly would not miltake him for the Person that waited on Verville. This great Looby did his Message well enough for a Looby; having found out Madam Saldagne with her other Sifter, called Madam Lery, whom the had entrufled with Verville's Love to her. As he was waiting for an Aufwer, they heard Monfieur Saldagne huming upon the Stairs. He was coming to his Sifter's Chamber, who hastily conveyed the British Mercury into a close Prefs. However the Brother made no long Stay with his Sister, and to the Britain was restored to the open Air again. Madam Saldagne locked herfelf up in her Closet a while, to answer Verwille's Letter, whilst Madam Lery difcourfed the Britain, whose Conversation, I doubt, was not very entertaining. Her Sister, having made an End of her Letter, released her from our Clown, by fending him back with a Billet, wherein, she promised to meet Verwille that Night, at the fame Time and Place as before. As foon as it was Night, you may imagine, Verville was ready to go to the Place of Assignation: We were admitted into the Garden, and it fell to my Lot to cope with the same Person I had entertained before, and whom I found to be very witty. She expressed more Wit this second

. .

cond Time, than she had done the first; and both her Accent and Manner of Speech was fo charming, that I confess, I wished she might be as handsome as she was ingenious. In the mean Time, she could not believe me to be the Britain she had seen before; nor could she apprehend why I should have so much more Wit by Night than by Day; for having heard the Fellow relate that Monfieur Saldagne's coming into his Sister's Chamber had put him into a great Fright, I took it upon myself, and played upon her with it, affaring her, that I was not then in fo much Fear for myfelf, as for Madam Saldagne. This put it out of all Dispute, that I was the same ill savoured Rogue; and I observed afterwards, that she began indeed to discourse like a Chamber-Maid. She then informed me that Monsieur Saldagne was a terrible Man; that having loft both Father and Mother in his Youth, being Mafter of a great Estate, and having only few of his Kindred, he exercifed a great Deal of Tyranny over his Sisters, to make them turn Nuns; using them, not only like an unjust Father, but like a jealous insupportable Husband. I was about to take my Turn, and tell a Story of the Baron d' Arques and his Sons, when the Garden-door, which we had not made fast, was of a Sudden thrown open; when in comes Monfieur Saldagne, attended by two Footmen, one of which carried a lighted Flamboy in his Hand. He came from a House which stood in the same Row with his and ours, where they gamed every Day, and which St. Far frequented to pass away the Time. They had both played there that Evening, and Saldagne having foon loft his Money, was coming home by his Garden, contrary to his. Custom, and there surprized us, as I told you, finding the Door open. We were, at that Time, all four together in a covered Walk, which gave us Opportunity to shun his and his Mens View. The Gentlewoman remained in the Garden, upon Pretence of taking the fiesh Air; and to give it the better Colour, began to fing, tho' she had little Inclination to it, as you may easily imagine. In the mean Time, Verwille having scaled the Wall, by the Help of a Vine-Arbour, jumped down on the other Side; but a third Footman of Saldagne's that was then coming in, feeing

him leap, failed not to run and give his Master notice he had seen a Man leap from the Garden-wall into the Street. At the same Instant I fell down with a great Noise into . the Garden; the same Arbour, by Means of which Verwille had made his Escape, unfortunately yielded under me. This Noise, together with the Fellow's Tale, allarmed all that were in the Garden. Saldagne runs to the Place from whence the Noise came, followed by his three Men; where fpying a Man with his Sword drawn, (for as foon as I could get up I put myself into a Posture of Defence,) he attacked me at the Head of his Company; but I foon made him to know that I was no easy Conquest. The Fellow that carried the Flamboy, advanced farther than the Rest, which gave me Opportunity to see Saldagne's Face, whom I prefently knew to be the same Frenchman that would have murthered me at Rome, for having hindred : him from being rude to Leonora, as I have before related. He knew me likewise at first Sight, and make no Doubt but that I was come thither to take my just Revenge, he cried out, You shall not escape me now, I assure you: And then I was hard put to it indeed; besides that, I had almost broken one of my Legs with the Fall. I maintained a running Fight, till I retreated into a Summerhouse, whether I saw Verville's Mistress run in just before, in a woful Condition. She staid within, tho' she saw me enter, whether she wanted Time or Courage to go out, I know not. For my Part, my Refolution encreased, when . I confidered they could attack me only before at the Summer house Door, which was very narrow. I wounded Saldagne in one of his Hands, and the boldest of his Footmen in his Arm, which procured me a little Respite; yet could not I have any Hopes of escaping, believing they. would at last make shorter Work with me, and dispatch me with Pistols, having found it too difficult to be done with Swords. But Verville came to my Relief: He would ' by no Means go Home without 'me; and having heard the Buftle and clashing of Swords, ventured to bring me off from the Danger he had brought me into, or at least to share it with me. Saldagne, with whom he had already made an Acquaintance, thought he came to his Aid,

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance. 87

as a Friend and Neighbour. He took it as great Obligation, and accosting him, faid, You sec, Sir, how I am set upon in my own House. Verville, who understood his Meaning, immediately replied, He would be his Servant against any other Man, but that he came to protect this against all the World. Saldagne enraged to find himself mistaken, swore desperately, he did not doubt but to make his Party good against two such Villains himself; and at the same Time, charged Verville most furiously, but was however repulfed by him with a great Deal of Gal-Then I thought it high Time to get out of my Summer-house to join my Friend; when having seized the Lacquey that carried the Flamboy, I was loth to kill him, and contented myself with giving him only a back Stroke over the Pate, which put him into fuch a Fright, that he ran off from the Garden into the Fields, crying out all the Way, Thieves, Thieves. The other Footmen fled likewise; and as for Saldagne, I saw him fall into a Hedge at the same Instant that the Light left us, either wounded by Verville, or by some other Accident. We did not think fit to help him up, but minded our own Escape with all the Haste we could. Saldagne's Sister, fearing some Violence from herrash Brother, slepped out of the Summer-house, where I saw her, and begged of us softely, melting into Tears, that we would take her along with us. Verville was over-joyed to have his Miffress in his Power, and under his Protection. We found our Gardendoor half open as we left it; nor would we make it fast as yet, lest we should have a new Occasion to go out again on the Sudden. There was in our Garden a pretty Summer-house, painted, and neatly adorned, where we used to eat in hot Weather, and which stood at some Distance from the Body of the House. My young Masters and myself did sometimes practice Fencing there, and this being the most delightful Place about the House, the Baron d' Arques, his Sons, and myfelf, had each of us a Key to it, that we might go in at Pleasure, and keep out the Servants, lest they should make Havock of the Books and Goods that were there. In this Place we locked up our Gentlewoman, whose Grief would admit of no Comfors

fo.t. I told her we would only leave her for a few Moments, to confult her Safety and our own, and then return immediately to her. Verville was a Quarter of an Hour before he could wake his British Footman, who had been fuddling. As foon as he had got a Candle lighted, we consulted a while, where we should bestow Saldagne's Sister, and at last resolved to lead her to my Chamber, in the upper Part of the House, as being frequented by no Body but myfelf and a Servant that belonged to me. We retuined back to the Summer-house in the Garden with our Light. Verville started back at his going in, which very much furprized me, I had not the Time to ask what ailed him, hearing some Voice just at the Summer-house Door, when I put out the Candle, Verville cried, Who. goes there ? His Brother, St. Far, answered, 'Tis I, what the Devil do you do here in the Dark at this Time of Night? I was talking with Garigues, faid Verwille, because I am not yet fleepy. I am here upon the fame Account, returned St. Far; therefore pray let me have the Room a little to myself. We did not trouble him to ask twice; but I stealing out the Lady as dextrously as I could, by thrusting myself betwixt her and St. Far, who went in at the fame Time, carried her off to my Chamber, bemoaning herfelf at a desperate Rate; then I went down to Verville's Room, where his Man was striking a Light. Verwille told me, with Grief in his Face, that he must of Neceffity return again to Saldagne's. What to do, faid I, would you kill him outright? Alas! my poor Garigues, faid he, I shall be the most unhappy Man in the World, if I do not get Madam Saldagne from out of her Brother's Hands. What! can she be there still, and in my Chamber too, replied I? Would to God that were true, replied he, fighing. I fancy you dream, returned I. No, no, I do not dream, faid he, we have brought away her eldest Sifter instead of her. Why, replied I, were you not both in the Garden together? Nothing more certain, faid he. Why then will you return to her Brother's to endanger yourselves asresh, since that Sister you are in pain about is now fafe in my Chamber! Ah! Garigues, cries he again, I knew well enough what I faw: And fo do I likewife, quoth I; and to prove your Mitake, do but come up and fee Madam Saldagne. He told me I was a Madman, and followed me with the greatest Concern in the World. But my Aftonishment equalled his Grief, when I found in my Chamber a Gentlewoman I never faw before, and not the fame with her I brought from the other House. Verville was as much amazed as myself, but more fatisfied by far, finding himself with his Mistress, contrary to Expectation. He then confessed his own Mistake: But I could make him no Answer, neither was I able to comprehend by what Enchantment, a Lady whom I had been with all the while, flouid, on a Sudden, be transformed to another, in the Time we went from the Summer-house to my Chamber. I looked earnestly upon Verville's Millrefs, who certainly was not the fame Perfon we brought from Saldagne's. Verwille perceiving 1.13 in a Quondary, What's the Matter, fays he? I tell you once mo.e, that I myfelf was mistaken. Nay, said I, 'tis-I that am in an Erior, if Malam Saldagas came hither along with us. With whom could flie come else, replied he? I know not, nor no Body elfe, faid I, unless it be the Lady herfelf. Nor can I tell with whom I came myfelf, faid Madam Saldagne, unless it were with that Gentleman, pointing to me: For, continued she, it was not Monfieur Verville that brought me away from my Brother's, but a Man that came into the Garden immediately after you went out, and fummoned thither, I support, either by my Brother's Groans, or the Footman's Outcries, He caused my Brother to be carried into his Chamber; which my waiting Woman having informed me of, and withal, affured me, that he was of my Brother's Acquaintance, and a Neighbour; I went and staid for him in the Garden, where I conjured him to take me away with him till the next Day, when I defigned to retire to a Lady's of my Acquaintance, where I would stay till my B: other's Fury was over; which, I told him, I had all the Reason in the World to dread. This Person was so civil as to offer to conduct me whither I pleased, and promised to protect me, even against my Brother, at the Hazard of his Life. 'Twas under his Conduct I came to this House

House, where Verville, whose Voice I knew, spoke to the same Man; and immediately after, I was brought up to this Chamber, where you now see me. This Account from Madam Saldagne, tho' it did not clear all my Doubts, yet it helped very much to make me guesshow the Thing had been brought about. As for Verville, he was so intent upon viewing his Mistress, that he scarce minded what she said. He began to tell her a thousand soft Things, without troubling himself to know which Way she came into my Chamber. I took a Candle, and leaving them together, went back to the Summer-house in our Garden, resolving to speak to St. Far, tho' he should be as blunt

and captious as he used to be.

But I was not a little surprized to find, instead of him, the same Gentlewoman, whom I was certain I had brought myself from Saldagne's: And what yet encreased my Wonder was, to fee her in great Diforder, like one to whom fome Violence had been offered; her Commode was torn off, and her Steenkirk bloody, as was likewise her Face : Verville, said she to me, as soon as I appeared, approach me not, unless it be to take away my Life, wherein you will find less Difficulty, than in offering Violence a second Time to my Honour; and as Heaven has given me Strength to resist your first Attempts, so, I doubt not, but I shall be able to scratch your Eyes out, if I cannot be the Death of you: Is this, added she weeping, that passionate Love you professed to my Sister? Oh! how dear I pay for my Compliance with her Follies! But when we act contrary to our, Duty, it is but just we should undergo what we stand most in fear of. But what do you now mediate upon, purfued she? perceiving my Astonishment; Do you feel a Remorfe of Conscience for your base Action? If so, I can forget it with all my Heart! You are young; and I must own it was a great Piece of Folly in me, to trust myself to the Discretion of one of your Years: Conduct me therefore to my Brother's again, I conjure you; for as passionate and severe as he is, I dread him less than I do you, who are a brutish Monster, or rather a mortal Enemy to our Family, being not fatisfied with feducing a young Lady, and murthering a Gentleman, but a more wicked Act must com-

ber ;

plete your Crime. Having made an End of her Speech, which the attered with great Vehemence, the fell a weeping so bitterly, that I never in my Life saw one so affiiced. This, I must confess, made me to forseit all the Judgment I was, till then, Master of, amidst so much Confusion, and if the had not ceafed to speak of her own Accord, I never thould have interrupted her, so much was I astonished at the Authority of her Exposulations. But perceiving she had done speaking; Madam, replied I, neither am I Verville, nor is he, I can affure you, capable of fuch a base Action as you complain of. What ! faid she, are you not Verville? Did not I fee youengaged with my Brother? Did not a Gentleman come to your Assistance? And did not you bring me hither on my Entreaty, where you have offered a Rudeness, impious both to my Honour and Youth: She could fay no more, fo much her Grief oppressed her Heart. For my Part, I never was fo perplexed, and could not apprehend how the thould both know Verville, and not know him at the same Fime. I told her, I was an absolute-Stranger to the Rudeness she complained of; and that since Monfieur Saldagne was her Brother, I would conduct her, if she pleased, to the same Place where her Sister was. These Words were scarce out of my Mouth, when I espied Verville and Madam Saldagne coming into the Room where we were, she being absolutely resolved to go back again to her Brother's; but how this dangerous Freak came into her Head I know not. The two Sisters embraced each otheras foon as they met, and renewed their flowing Tears, as if they were contending who should weep most. Verville earnessly entreated them to return to my Chamber, laying before them the Difficulty of getting into their House after the great Allarm the whole Family had been in; adding withal, the Danger of exposing themselves to their Brother's present Fury, the Safety of the Place they were in, and how near it was to Break of Day; which being once come, they would enquire how all Things went at Saldagne's, and accordingly might refolve what was most convenient to be done. Verville casily persuaded them to condescend to this Proposition; they now finding themselve fecure in one anothers Company, we went up to my Cham-

ber; where having examined the strange Accidents which perplexed us, we were as apt to believe, as if our Eyes had been Witnesses, that St. Far had certainly made an Attempt upon Madam Lery's Honour. Verville and myself knowing him capable of the like and worfe Actions. We were not deceived in our Conjectures. St. Far had been gaming in the very House where Saldagne had loft his Money, when passing by his Garden a little after the Scussle, he met Saldagne's Footman, who related to him what had befallen his Master, who, they said, had been set upon by feven or eight Rogues, thereby to excuse their own Cowardife, in leaving him in the Lurch. St. Far thought himfelf obliged to offer him his Service as a Neighbour, and did not leave him till he had feen him car jed to his Bedchamber; after which, Madam Saldagne intreating him to protect her against her Brother's Fury, she came along with him, as her Sifter had done with us, He intended to fecure her in the same Summer-house where we were, as I said before; and I being as much afraid left we should see his Lady, as we were careful he should not see ours, the two Sifters by this Accident meeting, just as he was coming in, and we going out, I happened to catch his Lady by the Hand, whilft he laid hold by a like Mistake upon mine; and thus the Ladies were exchanged. This was the more eafily done, by Reason I had put out my Candle, and the Ladies were to terribly difmayed as well as we, that they did not know what they did in the Hurry. As foon as we had left the Summer-house, St. Far finding himself alone with a very handsome Lady, and having more Inslinct than Reason, or, to describe him in his natural Colours, being indeed a very Brute, he took Advantage of the Opportunity, never minding the Confequence, or what an irreparable Affront he offered to a Lady that had thrown herself into his Arms for Protection. His Brutality was rewarded as it deserved. Madam Lery defended herfelf like a Lioness, bit him, scratched him and made him bloody all over. After all which, he went up to Bed, and slept as foundly as if he had done the best Action in the World. You may wonder perhaps, how Madam Lery happened to be in the Garden at the Time we were furprized by her Brother, fince there was no Body there

there but her Sister and her waiting Woman. This at first puzzled me as well as you; but at last I learned from them both, that Madam Saldagne, not daring to trust her waiting Woman with the Secret of her Amours, had perfuaded her Sister to attend her in the Garden; and this was the Person I entertained under the Title of Maudlin. Here my Wonder was at an end, how a Chamber-maid could be Mistress of so much Wit as I found in her Conversation: Madam Lery told me, she was no less puzzled to find me so witty in the Garden by Night, and fuch a Blockhead by Day, when flie mistook me for the dull Britain. Ever after that we entertained Sentiments for each other fomething above a bare Escem; and I dare say she was not less satisfied than I, to find our Conditions more equal, than if either of us had been a mercenary Servant. The Day appeared while we were yet talking together. We left our Ladies in my Chamber, were they might fleep if they pleafed, whilst Verville and I went to confult what was next to be done. For my Part, having no Love fancies to disturb my Breast, as Verwille had, I died almost for Want of Sleep; but there was no Reason I should abandon my Friend with such a Load of Bufiness on him. I had a Footman as subtile and witty, as Verwille's Valet de Chambre was dull and blockish; I gave him what Instructions I could, and fent him to make Difcovery how Affairs stood at Saldagne's. He performed his Message very discreetly, and bought us Account, that Saldogze's Servants reported, the Thieves had desperately wounded their Master; but as for his Sisters, there was no more mention made of them, than if there had never been any fuch; whether he little cared for them, or because he gave positive Orders to his Servants not to speak of them, to slifle scandalous Rumours. I see here must be something of a Duel after all, faid Verville; nay, perhaps something of a Murder, replied I: Whereupon I acquainted him that Saldagne was the same Hector that had endeavoured to murder me at Rome, and how we came to know one another in the Garden; adding withal, that if he did but imagine, as there was all the Likelihood in the Wo.ld, that I lay there in wait to take my Revenge of him; then certainly he could not at all sufpect the Intelligence between his Sisters and us. I went to give give an Account to those fair Ladies of our Discoveries : and in the mean Time, Verville vifited Saint Far, to found his Sentiments, and discover the Truth of our Suspicions. He foon perceived his Face full of Scratches; but whatever Queilion Verville put to him, he could get no other Anfiver, then that he came from the Gaming-house, he found Saldagne's Garden-door open, his House in an Uproar, and himself very much wounded in the Hands of his Servants, who were carrying him to his Chamber. A very flrange Accident, faid Verwille, no doubt but his Sisters will take it very much to Heart: They are very handsome Ladies, and I must go and give them a Visit. What's that to me, faid this Brute; who then fell a whistling, not minding nor giving any Answer to whatever his Brother afterwards defired to know. Verville left him, and returned to my Chamber, where I was employing all my Eloquence, to comfort our fair distressed Ladies. They were disconsolate, even to Desperation; and apprehended the roughest Treatment from their Brother's Jealousy and savage Temper, as being a Man wholly enflaved by his Paffions. My Lacquy brought them fome Meat from the next Cook, which he continued to do for fifteen Days together; fo long were they concealed in my Chamber; which was above the Rest, and so much out of the common Road and Passage, that no Body disturbed them in the least. They could willingly have put themselves into some Nunnery for Shelter; but after their sad Adventure, had just Reason to apprehend, their Brother would have confined them longer there than they would have cared for. In the mean Time, Saldagne's Wounds were in the fair Way of curing, and Saint Far, as we observed, went every Day to visit him. Verville stirred not out of my Room, which was not taken much Notice of in the Family, he being wont to pass many whole Days in it, either Reading, or in Discourse with me. His Love for Madam Saldagne encreased every Day, neither did she love him less. Her elder Sister liked me pretty well, nor was she indifferent to me in her Behaviour. Not that my Paffion for Leonora was a Whit abated, but I had no Manner of Hopes from her. Some Time after, Verville recieved a Note from Saldagne, wherein he challenged him to meet him

at

him with a Second in the Plain of Grenelle, to decide there their Quarrel with the Sword; by the fame Note, he defired Verville to bring no other Person but myself with him, which made me to suspect, he intended to take us both in the same Trap. My Suspicion was not altogether Groundlefs, having already experienced his Treachery; however, Ver ville would not mind it, refolving to give him any just Satisfaction, and to offer a Marriage with his Sifter. He fent for a Hackney-Coach, tho' there were three Coaches belonging to the Family. We went to the Place appointed, where Saldagne waited for us, and where Verville was much astonished, to find his own Brother, his Enemy's Second. We omitted neither Submissions nor Intreaties, to bring Things to a fair Accommodation, but nothing less than fighting would serve the Turn of those two unjust and irrational Men. I was about to protest to Saint Far, how much it was against my Will to draw my Sword against him; but he told me bluntly, he never liked me in his Life, nor could any Thing endearme to him, till he had opened a Paffage or two in my Body, with his Sword's Point, for his good Will to enter at. With these Words he came hercely towards me: I only put by his Thrusts for some Time, refolving, if possible, to grapple with him, and so disarm him, tho' with apparent Danger of being wounded myself. Fortune befriended my good Intention, for he foon after flipt down at my Feet; I gave him Time to rife, but that which should have made him my Friend, did but encrease his Enmity. In fine, having given me a flight Wound in the Shoulder, he vapoured like a Bully, and cried, I think you feel me now. -- My Patience being worn out, I preffed upon him, and having put him into Disorder, got so happily within his Sword, that I feized on the Hilt. The Man you hate so very much, faid I, will now, however, give you your Life. He struggled a while to no Purpose, and would not reply a Word, like an obilinate rash Brute as he was, tho' I represented to him, it was our Duty to go and part his Brother and Saldagne, who were grapling, and rowling over one another upon the Ground. But I perceived I must be more rough with him; therefore wrenching his Hand, I forced away his Sword, which I threw

at a great Distance from him. Then I ran immediately to affift Verville, who had closed with his Astagonist. I was no sconer come up to them, but I saw, asa off, several Horsemen galloping towards us; Saldague was foon after difarmed, and at the fame Infant, I found myfelf run through the Back by Saint Par. I could no longer Master my Refentment, and therefore returned him a Thrust, that made no little Wound. The Baron a' Arques his Father, who came in at that Moment, and faw me wound his Son, did now hate me as much as he had loved me before. He fpurred his Horse up towards me, and gave me a swinging Blow on the Head. Those that came with him, sollowed his Example, and jointly fet upon me. I defended myfelf most happily against so many Enemies, but must needs at last have fallen a Sacrifice to them, if Verville, the most generous Friend on Earth, had not thrust himself betwixt them and me, at the Hazard of his own Life. He gave his Footman a good Cut over the Pate, because he found him more forward than the Rest. I yielded up my Sword to the Baron, but that could not appeale him; he called me Rascal, ungrateful Villain, and gave me all the injurious Names his Anger could fuggest, and even the eatned to have me hanged. I boldly replied, that as much Rafcal and ungrateful Villain as I was, I had given his eldest Son his Life; nor had I offered to hurt him, till he had treacherously wounded me behind. Verville maintained to his Father, I was in the Right; but he faid, he would never fee my Face again. Saldague went with the Baron d' Arques into the Coach, where they had already put Saint Far; and Vervile, who would by no Means leave me, took me into another with himself. He set me down at one of our Princes Houses, where he had many Friends, and returned to his Father's soon after. Monsseur de Saint Sauveur sent a Coach for me that very Night, and carried me privately to his own House; where he took as great Care of me, as if I had been his only Son. Verville came to fee me the next Day, and told me, his Father had been informed of the Challenge by Saldagne's Sisters, whom he happened to find in my Chamber. He afterwards assured me, with a great Deal of Joy, that the Bufiness was made up, by an Agree-

'Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance.

97

Agreement for a double Marriage to be confummated, foon as his Brother's Wounds were healed, which were not That it lay in my Power to be in any dangerous Part. made Friends with Saldagne; and that his Father's Anger was appealed, who was very forry he had misused me. He added, he wished I might soon recover, to be a Sharer in their Joy; but I replied, I could not find in my Heart to flay in a Country, where I must be continually reproached with the Meanness of my Birth, as his Father had done to me just before; but would foon leave the Kingdom, either to lose my Life in the Wars, or raise myfelf by my Sword, to a Condition proportionable to the Sentiments of Honour, his noble Example had inspired me with. I am apt to believe, he was concerned at my Refolution; but a Man in Love cannot mind any Thing long but his own Passion. Destiny was thus pursuing his Story, when the Report of a Gun was heard in the Street, and prefently after, one playing upon a Pair of Organs. This Kind of Music having never, perhaps, been used at the Gate of an Inn before, called all those People to their Windows, that had been waked with the Gun. mean Time the Organs played on, and those who were no Strangers to fuch Sort of Instruments, took Notice they played a Church-Tune. No Body could apprehend the Defign of so devout a Serenade, which however, was not yet acknowledged for fuch. But the Doubt was foon cleared, by two pitiful Voices; whereof, one squealed out a Treble, and the other roared out rumbling Base. These two catter-wauling Voices were accompanied by the Organs, and all together made fuch a horrible Harmony, as fet all the Dogs a howling round about. They fung

> Our Warbling Notes, and Ivory Lutes, Shall ravish every Soul, &c.

with the Rest of that old Ditty. After these harsh Notes, they over-heard a Person whispering as loud as ever he could, and scolding at the Singers for singing so Cukoo-like, always in one Tune. The poor Choristers replied, they knew not what the Devil he would have them to sing from Sing

Sing what you will else, said he, speaking a little louder, for I will have finging for my Money. Upon this peremptory Sentence, the Organs changed their Tone, and another pious Anthem was fung, as devoutly as before. None of the Hearers had yet dared to speak, for sear of interrupting the Music; when Rancour, who could not for his Life hold his Tongue on this Occasion, bauled out aloud: What! do they use here to perform Divine Service in the Street? One of the Company faid, they were finging Tenebræ in good Earnest: Tis a Nocturnal Procession, adds a Third: In fine, every merry Fellow in the Inn, had his Jest upon the Music; neither could any one guess, who was the serenading Fool, nor whom he defigned to compliment. In the mean Time, the Anthem was carrying on towards a Conclusion, when ten or a dozen Dogs, which had followed a proud Bitch, ran in betwixt the Musician's Legs; and because many Rivals cannot be long together without quarreling, after some grumbling, snarling, and grinning of Teeth, they fell together by the Ears of a Sudden, with fo much Fury and Animosity, that the poor Musicians to save their Shins, betook themselves to their Heels, leaving the Organs to the Mercy of the Dogs. These immoderate Lovers were so uncivil, in their Heat of the Scuffle, as to throw down the harmonious Machine, with the Frame that . supported it; and I should be loath to swear, that some one of them did not lift up a Leg to piss upon it, those Creatures being very diuretic in their Natures; especially where some Birch or other of their Acquaintance is disposed to proceed to the Multiplication of her Spicies. The Confort being thus out of Tune, mine Host ordered the Inn-door to be opened, intending to secure the Organs, with the Table and Trestle on which they stood, from farther Mischief. Whilst he and his Servants were bufy about this charitable Office, the Organist returned, accompanied by three Perfons, amongst whom were a Woman, and a Man mussled up in his Cloak: This Man was the very Ragotin in Person, who defigning to ferenade Madam Star, had addressed himfelf for that Purpose to a little Eunuch, Organist of a Church. It was this Monster, neither Man nor Woman, that fung the treble Part, and played on the Organs, which his Maid

had brought; an overgrown Chorister sung the Base, both for the Sum of two Testers, such was the Scarcity of Provisions at that Time in the plentiful Country of Mayne. As foon as the Inn-keeper found out the Author of the Serenade, he cried out aloud, on purpose to be heard by all that were at the Window, Is it then you, Monsieur Ragotin, that have come with your Vespers to my Door? You had best go to Bed, and not disturb my Guests at this Time of Night. Ragotin replied, that he was mistaken in his Man, and yet spoke it so, as if he intended to discover what he feemed to deny. In the mean Time, the Organist finding his Instrument much battered, and being a very Choleric Creature, as all breardless Animals are wont to be, swore to Ragotin, he would make him pay for it; Ragotin, replied, he did not care a Straw for what he could do: Ay, but I'll make you care, faid the Eunuch, I will be paid my Damages. Mine Host and his Servants gave their Votes for the Organist; but Ragotin made them to understand, like a Parcel of ignorant Fools as they were, that this was never the Custom in Serenades, and so went away, not a little Proud of his Gallantry. The Musicians laid the Organ on the Back of the Eunuch's Maid, who carried it home to her Master's House. He in a very melancholy Mood, following her with the Table on his Shoulders, and attended by the Chorister with the two Trestles. The Inn-Doors were locked up again, Destiny wished the Ladies good Night, and referred the Remainder of his Story to the next Opportunity.

CHAP. XVI.

The Opening of the Stage, with other Matters of no less Consequence.

Ext Day the Players assembled betimes in the Morning in one of those Chambers they had at the Inn, in order to rehearse the Play they were to ast that Asternoon. Rancour, whom Ragotin had made Consident of his Serenade, which he seemingly made difficulty to believe, told his Comrades, that the little Fellow would not fail to be there suddenly, to receive their Applause for his refined F 2

Piece of Gallantry. He also maliciously entreated them, that whenever he hinted at it, they would take no Notice of it, but put him off with some other Discourse. Ragotin came into the Room at the same Instant, and having saluted the Players in general, began to mention his Serenade to Madam Star, who at that Time proved a meer wandring Planet to him; for she still changed Place, and never anfwered his Questions about what Time she went to Bed, and how she had past the last Night? This made him to leave her, and address himself to Madam Angelica; who, instead of entertaining him, studied the Part she had in the Play. He next went to Cave, who would not fo much as look upon him. Every one of the Players in their Turns, exactly observing Rancour's Directions, neither answered any Thing to Ragotin's Questions, shifting the Discourse as often as he began to mention what passed the last Night. At length, pressed by his Vanity, and impatient to suffer his, Reputation to linger any longer, he thus spoke aloud to them all; Will you give me leave to tell you a great Truth, cried he? You may do as you please, replied some Body: Why then, added he, it was I that gave you the last Night's Serenade. What! do they give Serenades with Organs in this Country, faid Destiny? But whom did you intend it for? Was it not, continued he, for the fair Lady that fet so many honest Dogs together by the Ears.? No doubt on't, said Olive, for those snarling Curs would never have disturbed such harmonious Music, had they not been Monsieur Ragotin's Rivals, and jealous of him. An-, other of the Company would needs have his Jest, and therefore faid, without doubt he is in his Lady's Favour, and meant nothing but honourable Love, fince he could court her in the open Street. In short, every one in the Room had a fling at Ragotin, about his Serenade, except Rancour, who spared him, as having the Honour of being his Confident; and 'tis probable; this currish Raillery had still employed the whole Company, if the Poet (who, in his Nature, was as vain and rediculous a Coxcomb as Ragotin could be, and who in every Thing endeavoured to gratify his Pride,) had not taken them off, by faying to them, in the Tone of a Man of Quality, or rather of a false Pretender to it; Now you talk of Serenades, I remember, that when

when I was married, I had one bestowed upon me, which lasted a Fortnight together, and consisted of a hundred several Sorts of Instruments: It ranged all over the Marais: The genteelest Ladies in the Palace Royal, took it upon their Accounts; several Beaux assumed the Honour of it; nay, a Man of Quality took fuch a Fit of Jealoufy upon it, that he ordered his Men to fall foul upon those who bestowed it on me only. But they met with their Match, for these were all my own Country-men, and as brave Fellows as ever pissed; and besides, most of them had been officers in a Regiment I raised in the late Insurrection of the Commons in our Parts. Rancour, who checked his bantering Humour in favour of Ragotin, could not be so civil to the Poet, whom he continually plagued. Wherefore, taking up the Cudgels against this Darling of the Muses, he said to him, Your Serenade, as you describe it, savoured more of Bedlam, or a Procession of Rams-horns, than any of Gallantry; and therefore, probably proving troublesome to the Person of Quality, sent out his Footmen either to silence, or drive away the horrid Noise. And what confirms me in my Opinion, proceeds Rancour, is, the Case of your Bride, who died for Age, within fix Months after your hymeneal Solemnity, as you term it, was over: Nay, but she died of a Fit of the Mother, faid the Poet,-Say, rather of a Fit of the Grandmother, or Great Grandmother, replied Rancour: For, added he, in the very Beginning of Henry the Fourth's Reign, the was past having any Fits of the Mother, to my Knowledge; and to let you see that I am better acquainted with her than ever you your felf were, tho? you tell us daily fuch Wonders of her, I will now relate to you a Passage of her Life, which I am positive never yet came to your Knowledge. In the Court of Queen Margaret .- This Beginning of a History drew all the Company in a Ring about Rancour, whom they knew to be furnished with malicious Memoirs enough against all human Kind. But the Poet, who dreaded him exceedingly, interrupting him, cried out, I'll lay a hundred Pistoles to the contra y: Which abrupt Defiance made the Company fo merry, that they laughed him out of the Room. was his usual Way, by offering such Wagers of considerable

able Sums, to maintain his daily Hyperboles, which amount -ed to the weekly Quantum of a thousand or twelve hundred Impertinencies, besides the innumerable downright Lies he vented into the Bargain. Now Rancour was the Comptroller, general both of his Words and Actions, and the Ascendant he had over him was so great, that I dare compare it to the Genius of Augustus over Anthony; that is to fay, like to like, without putting a Brace of Strollers in the Scale against two famous Romans. Rancour having thus begun his Story, and being interrupted by the Poet, as I faid before, every one earnestly intreated him to persue it : But he excused himself, promising to give them another Time, a faithful Account of the Poet's whole Life, wherewith his Wife's should be likewife interwoven. It was now high Time to rehearfe the Play that was to be acted the fame Day in a neighbouring Tennis-Court. Nothing worth Observation occurred at the Rehearfal. After Dinner they acted their Play, and came off with great Applause: Madam Star charmed the whole Audience with her Beauty; Angelica did not want Admirers, and both of them acted their Parts to the general Satisfaction. Destiny and his Comrades did wonderfully well, infomuch, that many of the Audience who had often feen Plays acted at . Paris, confessed, that the King's Players could hardly have outdone them. Ragotin, in his Heart and Mind, ratified the Donative he had made of his Body and Soul to Madam Star, in the Presence of Rancour, who promised him every. Day to perfuade his Mistress to accept it. Without this Promise, Despair had soon made this little pitiful Lawyer the noble Subject of some great tragical Story. I cannot tell whether the Men pleased as well the Ladies of Mans in their Acting, as the Women did the Men. Nay, if I did know the Truth of it, I think I should hardly discover it; but because the wifest Man is not able at all Times to keep his Tongue betwixt his Teeth, I will conclude this present Chapter, to avoid all farther Temptation.

CHAP. XVII.

The ill Success of Ragotin's Civility.

S foon as Destiny had stripped himself of his old Embroidery, and put on his ordinary wearing Apparel, la Rappiniere carried him to the common Goal, because the Man they had taken that Day the Curate of Domfront was fet upon, defired to fpeak with him. In the mean Time the Actresses went home to their Inn with a numerous Attendance of Citizens. Ragotin happening to be near Cave, as the came out of the Tennis-Court where they had acted, offered her his Hand, to lead her home, tho' he would rather have paid that civil Office to his dear Star; he did the like to Angelica, fo that he was 'Squire upon the Right and left. This double Civility occasioned a treble Inconveniency; for Cave, who had the upper Hand, as in all Reason she ought, was crouded to the Wall by Ragotin, that Angelica might not be forced to walk in the Kennel. Besides, this little Dwarf reaching no higher than their Waists, pulled down their Hands so much, that they could scarce keep themselves from tumbling over him. But that which most troubled them was, his often looking behind to stare on Madam Star, who was talking to a Brace of Country Beaux, that would by all Means, lead her to her Lodgings against her Will. The poor Actresses endeavoured, many Times, to get loose from their Gentleman-Usher, but he held so fait, that they thought themselves in Fetters. They defired him a hundred Times to spare himself that Trouble; but he only answered, your Servant, your Servant, (his ordinary Compliment) and griped their Hands still harder and harder. Therefore they were fain to be patient, till they came to their Chamberflairs, where they hoped to be fet at Liberty; but Ragotin was better bred: And repeating only your Servant, your Servant, to all they could fay, he endeavoured, at first, to go up with them abrest, which he found impossible : Then Cave turned her Back to the Wall, and crept up fide-ways, dragging Ragotin after her, who dragged Angelica in like F 4

Manner, she dragging nothing, but laughing like a Fool. Now, as an additional Inconveniency, when they were within four or five Steps of the Chamber-door, down comes a Servant belonging to the Inn, with a huge Sack of Oats on his Back, of an excessive Weight, who with much ado, fo heavy was his Load, bid them go down, for that he could not get up again with his Burthen. Ragotin would needs argue the Case with him; the Fellow fwore bluntly, he would let fall his Sack upon them. This made them to go down again much faster than they had come up; but Ragotin would not however let go his Hold. The Man with the Oats pressed hastily upon them, which caused Ragotin to miss a Step, so that he hung in the Air, holding still the Players by the Hand, till he pulled down Cave upon him, who supported him more than her Daughter, by Reason of the Advantage of the Thus she tumbled down upon him, lighting with her Feet on the Pigmy's Belly and Breast, and knocked her Head fo fiercely against her Daughter's, that they lay all Three tumbling on the Floor. The Fellow thinking they could not eafily get up Time enough, and being no longer able to support his Load, lets his Sack down upon the Stairs, fivearing and curfing like an Offler. The Sack burst open with the Fall, and then came in mine Host, who fcolded like mad at the Oftler. But as he was mad at the Fellow fo the Fellow was mad at the Players, and they as mad at Ragotin, who was as mad as the Madest of them all; because Madam Star, coming not far behind, was Witness of this Disgrace, not much inferior to the late Adventure of the deep-crowned Hat; wherein his Head had been most unmercifully pent up, not to be recovered till a Pair of Scissars had broke the Inchantment. Cave fwore a great Oath, that Ragotin should never lead her again, and shewed Madam Star, how black and blue he had squeezed her Hands. Star told her, it was a just Judgment upon her, for robbing her of Monsieur Ragotin, who had engaged himself to bring her back to her Lodgings after the Play; adding, she was glad of the Mischance that had befallen him, for breaking his Word. However, he heard nothing of this, being all the While in Dif-

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance: 105

pute with mine Host, who threatned to make him pay the Waste of his Oats, and had already offered to beat his Servant on the fame Account, who for that Reason beat Ragotin, and called him Petty-fogger. Angelica began to banter him in her Turn, and reproached him with his Infidelity to Mrs. Star: In fine, Fortune plainly shewed how little she was yet concerned in the Promises made to Ragotin, of making him gain her Affection to that Degree, as would render him more happy than any Lover in the whole Country of Majne; Nay, la Parche and Loval added to it. The Oats were swept up again, and the Actresses went into their Chamber, one by one, without any farther Misfortune. Ragotin did not follow them, nor can I exactly tell what became of him. Supper-time at last came, and to supper they went: After Supper, every one withdrew to their respective Appartments, and Destiny locked himfelf up with the Actresses, in order to pursue his Story.

CHAP. XVIII.

The Continuation of the History of Destiny and Star.

Made the forgoing Chapter a little of the Shortest:
Perhaps this will prove somewhat longer; however I am not fure of it; but we shall see. Destiny took his usual Seat, and refumed his Tale after this Manner. I shall finish my Story as briefly as I can, fearing I have already tired you too much with the Account of my Life and For-Verville having given me a Visit, as I said before, and not being able to perfuade me to return to his Father's, left me, in all Appearance, much troubled at the Refolution I had taken, and went home; where a while after he married Madam Saldagne, as St. Far did Madam Lery. She had as much Wit as St. Far had Dulness; and I wonder, how two Persons of such unequal Talents have been able to live together in the matrimonial Society. In the mean Time, I presently recovered, and the generous Monfieur de Saint Sauveur, approving of my Defign of leaving the Kingdom, furnished me with Money for my Journey; for

and Verville, who did not forget me, tho' now married, prefented me with a good Horse, and a hundred Pistoles. I took my Journey towards Lyons, to pass that Way into Italy, with Design to go once more to Rome, and after having taken my last Farwel of Leonora, to repair with Speed to Candy, there put an End to my wretched Life. At Nevers I lodged at an Inn which stood near the River; and coming thither very early, and not knowing how to fpend my Time till Supper, went to take a Walk on a great Stone-Bridge, built over the River Loire. There were a Couple of Women walking there at the same Time; one of which, that looked as if she was sick, leaned on the other's Shoulder, and had much ado to crawl along. As I passed by, I pulled off my Hat to them, without taking Notice of their Faces, and continued walking for some Time on the said Bridge, still keeping my Thoughts employed upon my Misfortunes, and chiefly about my Amours. I was well enough clad, as all those ought to be, whose Quality cannot excuse an indifferent Habit. When I came again near these Women, I over-heard one of them fay, For my Part, I should believe it too, had we not heard he was dead. I cannot tell how I came to look behind me, having no Reason to think they talked of me, and yet no Man but myself was the Subject of their Discourse. I presently found the first Lady to be Madam la Boissiere, grown very pale and wan, and who then rested upon her Daughter Leonora's Shoulder. Thereupon, I made directly towards them, with more Affurance than I had in Rome, having improved myfelf, both as to my Person and Wit, during my Stay in Paris. I found them fo furprized and amazed, that I verily belive they would have fled from me, had Madam la Boissiere been able to run; and this surprized me no less. I asked them what happy Chance brought me into the Presence of two Persons, whom I esteemed above all the World. These Words dispelled their Fears. Madam la Boissiere told me, I ought not to wonder at seeing them look upon me with some Astonishment, fince Signior Stephano had shewed them a Letter, from one of those Gentlemen I waited on at Rome, by which he was informed

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance. 107

informed of my being killed in the War of Parma; adding she was over-joyed to find that News false, which had been so unwelcome to her. I replied, That Death was not the greatest Missortune could befal me, and that I was going to Venice to court it; and, if possible, to spread the Report of my Death with greater Certainty than before. They grew fad at my Resolution ; and the Mother began to express a great Deal of Tenderness for me; the Cause of which I could not well guess at. At last I learned from herself the Ground of her Civility. I was now in a Capacity to serve her, and her present Condition would not allow her to despise and look coldly on me, as she had done in Rome. They had met with a Misfortune which had put them to great Streights: For having turned all their Furniture into ready Money, they had left Rome, with a French Maid that had ferved them a long Time, and Signior Stephano's Man, a Fleming like himself, who would needs return to his native Country. This Fellow and the Wench, it feems, loved each other well enough to venture a Match; and yet they kept their Amour to private, that no Body ever discovered it. Madam la Boiffiere being come to Revenna, went thence by Water. At Nevers she found herself so very ill, that she could go no farther. During her Sickness she was somewhat hard to be pleased, and her Maid more unwilling to humour her than ever she had been before. One Morning the Wench and her Paramour were missing; and, which was more grievous still, the poor Lady's Money was missing also. Her Grief encreased her Distemper, and she was forced to thay at Nevers till fine had received Letters from Paris, from whence the expected a Supply to proceed on her Journey. Madam la Boissiere told me this sad Adventure in few Words. I led them back to their Inn, which was the fame where I had taken up my Quarters. After I had brought them to their Chamber, and stood a while with them, I retired to my own, leaving them to their Supper. For my Part, I could not eat a Bit, but thought it was at least five or fix Hours while I was at Table. I waited upon them as foon as they had given me Notice that I should be welcome. I found the Mother in Bed, and

and the Daughter received me with a Countenance as fad as it appeared joyful a Moment before. The Mother was still more fad than the Daughter, and I grieved for Company. We stared a while upon one another without speaking a Word. At last Madam la Boissiere shewed me a Letter she had newly received from Paris, which cast both her and her Daughter Leonora into the deepest Affliction in the World. She expressed the Reason of her Grief with a Flood of Tears, and her Daughter Leonora wept also most bitterly; which moved me so sensibly, that I thought I did not express my Sense of it enough, tho' I proffered them all I could possibly do for their Assistance, with such a Freedom, as put my Sincerity out of all Doubt. I am as yet unacquainted with the Cause of your Grief, Ladies, said I; but if my Life can any Ways contribute to your Relief, you may fet your Minds at rest. Tell me therefore, Madam, said I, applying myself to the Mother, what must I do to serve you: Money I have, if you want any; and Courage likewife if you Fear any Enemies; and the Satisfaction of having ferved you, is the only Recompence I expect. My Words and Countenance gave them so full Assurance of the Reality of my Sentiments, that their Affliction was fomewhat abated. Madam la Boissiere gave me a Letter to peruse, wherein a Gentlewoman of her Acquaintance informed her, that a certain Person, who was nameless, but whom I judged to be Leonora's Father, was commanded to leave the Court, and had retired into Holland. Thus this poor Lady found herself in a strange Country, without either Money, or the least Hopes of getting any. I made her a fecond Proffer of the small Stock I had, which might amount to about five hundred Crowns; and told her withal, that I would wait upon her into Holland, or any other Part of the World she had a Mind to go to. In short, I affured her, she had found in me, a Person that would do her all the Service she could expect from a Valet, and serve and honour her like a dutiful Son. I blushed extremely at the Word Son: But I was no more the hateful Man, that had been denied Admittance into their House in Rome, and to whom Leonora was invisible; for now she was much more civil, and her Mother less severe. At every Offer I made

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance. 109

made she still replied, Leonora would be very much obliged to me. All was scored upon Leonora's Account, insomuch that one would have taken her Mother to have been only a Waiting woman that fpoke in her Mistress's Behalf: So true it is, that the Generality of the World respect People only fo far as they are subservient to their own Interest. left them very much comforted, and retired to my Chamber the most contented Man that could be. I passed the Night very pleafantly, tho' waking frequently, which kept me somewhat late in Bed, for it was break of Day before I began to sleep. Leonora appeared to me the next Day, more nicely dressed than she had the Day before; and she could not but observe, that I had taken a little more Care of myself. I led her to Mass without her Mother, who was as yet too weak to go abroad. We dined together, and from that Time fo ward were but as one Family. Madam la Boiffiere very thankfully acknowledged the good Offices I had tendred them, and often affured me, that she would not die in my Debt. I fold my Horse; and no sooner had the sick Lady recovered her Strength, but we took a Tilt-boat, and went down the River to Orleans. During the Time we were on the Water, I enjoyed my Leonora's Conversation; nor was so great a Felicity interrupted by her Mother. I found her Wit as sprightly and charming as her Looks; nor had she Reason to think mine so dull as she had found it in Rome. What can I say more? In short, she was as much taken with me, as I was captivated by her; and you may witness ever fince you have feen us together, how little our reciprocal Affection is diminished. --- What, faid Angelica, interrupting him, is then Madam Star that Leonora? Who else? answered Destiny. At which Madam Star was pleased to say, her Friend had Reason to question whether she was that Leonora, whom Destiny had made the Heroine of a Romance. 'Tis not upon that Score I start the Question, replied Angelica, but rather because we are ever in Doubt of what we most desire. Madam Cave said, that for her Part, she had been confident it was so, even from the Beginning, but defired them to wave any farther Difcourse till Destiny had made an End of his Story, who went on thus. We arrived at Orleans; where our Entrance was fo pleafant,

pleafant, as well deserves a particular Relation. A Pack of Scoundrels, who always wait at the Water-fide in Expectation of Strangers, to carry home their Goods, crouded into our Boat. There were at least thirty that offered to take up two or three little Bundles betwixt them, which however the weakest of these lazy Rogues might have carried fingly under his Arm. Had I been alone, perhaps I might not have been fo wife as to bear calmly with their Infolence. Eight of them feized upon a little Bundle, not weighing much above twenty Pounds, which they feemed to lift up from the Ground with much Trouble; and having got it betwixt them, held it aloft above their Heads, upon their Fingers Ends. All the Mob that stood by on the River-side fell a laughing, and we were fain to do the like. However, I blushed as red as Scarlet to go through the whole Town with such a Retinue: As for the rest of our Goods, which would not have loaded one Porter, they employed Twenty at least, my very Pistols being carried in State by four lufty Rogues. The Order of our March at our Entrance into the Town was as follows: First, eight Hangdogs, either drunk, or fuch as ought to have been fo, carried a little Box behind them, as I told you before. Next followed my Pistols and Holsters, each carried by two Fellows. Madam la Boissiere, no less vexed than myself, went immediately after: She was fitting in a great Wicker-Chair, fastned to a Couple of Cole-bats, and carried by four Watermen, who relieved one another by Turns, and had a hundred impertinent Jests as they went along. The Rest of our Goods came afterher, being only a little Portmanteau, and a Bundle covered with Canvas, which seven or eight of these Rascals tossed from one to another all the Way. I brought up the Rear of this Triumph, leading Leonora by the Hard, who laughed so heartily, that I could not but be delighted with their Roguery in Spite of myfelf. As we marched along, the Passengers stood still, gazing upon us; and the Noise they made on this Occasion drew all the People to their Windows and Doors. At last we arrived at the Suburbs, which is the Road towards Paris, attended by Abundance of Mob, and took up our Lodgings at the Sign of the Emperor. I put the Ladies into a Parlour, and after-

wards

wards threatned the Rogues fo feriously, that they were contented to take a finall Piece of Money for their Pains, the Inn-keeper and his Wife taking my Part against them, Madam la Boissiere, whom the Money I had furnished her withal fooner cured than any Cordials besides could have done, found herself strong enough to bear the Coach; wherefore I took up three Places in one that was to go the next Morning; and within two Days after we arrived fafe at Paris. As we alighted at the Inn, I made Acquaintance with Rancour, who came from Orleans in another Coach at the same Time with ours. Hearing me enquire for the Inn to which the Calais Coach came, he told me he was just going thither himself, and we had not hired a Lodging, he would carry us to a Woman of his Acquaintance who let Lodgings ready furnished, where we should have a very good Accommodation. We took him at his Word, and found it as he had told us. This Woman was the Widow of one that had all his Life-time belonged to a Play-house, sometimes as a Door-keeper, and fometimes as a Scene man, and even had often tried to act under Parts, but was generally hissed off the Stage. Having scraped some Money together at the Play-house, he furnished a House, let Lodgings, took. Boarders, and by all this made a Shift to gain confiderably. We took a Couple of Rooms, which were pretty convenient. Madam la Boissiere received a Confirmation of the ill News she had concerning Leonora's Father, and heard fo much befides, tho' which the concealed from us, that it made her to relapse into her former Disease. This put off our Journey to Holland for a While, whither the refolved to go under my Conduct; and Rancour, who was going to the same Country to a Company of Players, was contented to flay for us, upon my promising to defray his Charges. Madam la Boiffiere received frequent Visits from one of her Friends, that had waited at the same Time with her upon the Ambaffador's Lady at Rome, and had likewife been her Confident, whilst Leonora's Father made Love to her. This Woman acquainted her with her pretended Hufband's Retirement, and did us feveral good Turns during the Time we staid in Paris. I went out of Doors as seldom as I could, for fear of being feen by fome of my Acquaintance;

tance; nor did I find it a great Trouble to flay within, for long as I enjoyed my Leonora's Company; whose Favour I gained more and more by my conftant Care of her Mother. Upon this Woman's Persuasions, who, as I told you, came often to visit us, we went one Day to St. Clou, to air and refresh our fick Lady, Our Landlady came in for one among us, and Rancour for another. We took a Boat when we came to the Water-side; afterwards walked in the best Gardens; and having had a finall Collation, Rancour reconducted the Women towards the Boat, whilft I staid behind to scan the Reckoning with an unreasonable Hostess, who kept me longer from them than I intended. I got off as cheap as I could; and hastened to rejoin my Company. But I was not a little aftonished, to find the Boat gone a good Way off from the Shoar, carrying my Company towards: Paris, and leaving me behind, without any Notice, or fo much as my Footboy that had my Sword and Cloak. Standing at the Water-side, very much troubled at their not waiting for me, I heard a great Uproar in another Tilt-boat. that lay hard by, when drawing fomewhat near, I perceived two or three Gentlemen, or Persons that looked like fuch, who would needs fall foul on a Waterman because he would not follow our Boat. I leaped at a Venture into that. Boat, just as it was launching forth, the Waterman fearing he should be roughly handled. But if I was troubled that my Company had left me at St. Clou, I was no less perplexed to find that he that had offered this Violence was the same Saldagne, whom I had so much Reason to hate. At the Instant I discovered him, he removed from the Place, he fat in, and came just by me. I did not know which Way to look, and hid my Face from him the best I could. But finding him fo near, that it was impossible to concealmyselflong, and knowing I had no Sword, I took the most desperate Resolution that could be, which Hatred alone. could not have fuggested, had it not been attended with Jealoufy. I feized him by the Middle at the fame Time he began to know me, and threw myself into the River with him. He was not able to keep hold of my Cloaths, whether his Gloves hindred him, or his fudden Surprize, I cannot tell. Never was Man nearer drowning. A great many

Part I. Scarron's Comical Romance. 173

many of the neighbouring Boats came in to fave us, every one thinking we had fallen into the Water accidentally, except Saldagne, who knew the Truth, but was not in a Condition to discover; or to pursue me. I got on Shoreagain without much Difficulty, having only a thin Suit on, which did not much hinder my swimming; and thinking it worth my Labour to make haste, I got far enough off from St. Clou before Saldagne was fished up. As they had not a little ado to save him, fo, I dare say, they could hardly believe his Relation how I threw him into the Water, when he affirmed, I ventured my own drowning to procure his: For I cannot imagine why he should hide it from them. I was forced to go a great Way about to get into Paris, and durst not enter the City till Night, having no Need to dry my Cloaths, the Heat of the Sun, and my violent Exercise, having left but little Moisture in them. At length I got to my dear Leonora, whom I found in great Affliction; Rancour and our Landlady were overjoyed to see me again, and fo was Madam la Boissiere likewise, who the better to make her think I was her Son, acted the Part of a distressed Mother: She excused herself in private to me for their not staying; assuring me the Fright Saldagne had put them into, hindred them from thinking on me; besides, that except Rancour, the Rest of our Company would have rather embarrassed than helped me, if I had engaged Saldagne. They told me, that at their going from the Tavern, this Spark followed them to the Water fide, where he very uncivilly pressed Leonora to unmask; where her Mother difcovering him to be the fame Man that had attempted the like at Rome, shuffled into the Boat in a Fright, and made the Waterman put off from the Shore, without staying for me. Saldagne in the mean Time, having a Couple of Rakes like himself with him, got into the next Boat with his two Comrades, where I found him threatning the Waterman, to make him follow Leonora. This Adventure made me to keep more within Doors than I had done formerly. A little while after Madam la Boissiere fell fick, her Melancholy contributing much to her Malady; which made us to remain Part of the Winter at Paris. We were informed, that an Italian Prelate, who came from Spain, was going

to Flanders thro' Peronne; whereupon Rancour made Interest to have us comprehended in the Pasport, in the Quality of Comedians. One Day, after we had waited upon this Italian Prelate, who lodged in the Rue de Sein, we supped in a Frolic in the Suburbs of St. Germain, with some Players of Rancour's Acquaintance. He and I going over the Pont-neuf afterwards very late, were fet upon by five or fix Rogues. I made the best Defence I could, and to give Rancour his due, he did as much as any brave Man could have done; infomuch, that he faved my Life, tho' he could not keep me from being fiezed by these Robbers, my Sword being unhappily fallen from my Hands. Rancour got very floutly out of their Clutches, with the Loss of a forry Cloak only. As for me, I was plundered of all I had, except my Doublet and Breeches. And to aggravate my Misfortunes, they rifled me of an enamelled Box with Leonora's Father's Picture in it, which Madam la Boiffiere had left with me, to try what I could get for fome Diamonds it had found the Cafe. I found Rancour at the Bridge-foot, wounded in the Arm and Face, as I myfelf was, tho' flightly, in the Head. Madam la Boissiere was very much concerned for the Loss of the Picture; but the Hopes of seeing the Original shortly comforted her. In fine, we went from Paris to Peronne; from Peronne to Bruffels, and from Bruffels to the Hague; from whence Leonora's Father had been gone about a Fortnight before over into England, where he intended to ferve the King against the Parliamentarians. Leonora's Mother was so deeply afflicted at his Departure, that she fell . suddenly fick and died. As she was going to breathe her last, and seeing me to grieve as much as if I had been her own Son, she recommended her Daughter to me, and made me to engage that I would not forfake her, but endeavour to find out her Father, and restore her to his Posseffion. Not long after, a Frenchman robbed me of all the Rest of my Money, which reduced both Leonora and myself to that Necessity, that we were forced to get into your Company, who, you know, accepted of us thro' the Recommendation of Rancour. You are acquainted with the Rest of my Adventures, which fince that Timehave

have been common to us all, at least as far as Tours, where I think I saw the Devil Saldagne; and, if I be not very much mistaken, I believe it will not be long before I meet him again in these Parts, which I sear less for my own Part than for Leonora's, who would lose a most faithful Servant, if I should happen to miscarry, or be forced to part from her by my unlucky Stars. Thus Desting ended his Story; and after having comforted Madam Star a while, whom the Relation had a little disordered, by renewing the Remembrance of her Missortunes, which made her to weep exceedingly, as if they had but newly happened, he took his Leave of the Actresses, and so went to Bed.

CHAP. XIX.

Some Reflections which are not amiss, Ragotin's new Disgrace, and other Things, which you may read if you please.

OVE, which makes the Young to undertake any Thing, and the Old to forget every Thing; Love, which occasioned the Wars of Troy, and many others besides, which I do not think worth while to mention here. would needs make it known in the City of Mans, that he is as much to be dreaded in a pitiful Inn, as in the brightest Palace whatsover. He was not therefore contented with depriving the amorous Ragotin of his Appetite, but likewise inspired la Rappiniere with a thousand irregular Defires, a Man very susceptible of them, and made Roquebrune likewise to languish for the Operator's Wife, adding a fourth Folly to his Vanity, Bravery and Poetry; or rather obliging him to commit a double Infidelity: For he had made his amorous Addresses a long While before, both to Star and Angelica, who often advifed him to defift, and not throw away his Courtship. all this is nothing to what I shall now relate: Love triumphed likewise over the Insensibility an Misanthropy of Rancour, who became enamoured of the Operator's Wife

Wife too, and by Consequence a Rival to the Poet Roquebrune, a Punishment for his Sins, and an Atonement for the curfed Writings he had published. This Woman's Name was Donna Inizella del Prado, a Native of Malaga and her Husband, or he that was reputed such, Signior Ferdinando Ferdinandi, a Gentleman of Venice, born at Caen in Normandy. There were feveral others in the Inn besides the above-named, who were infected with the same : Disease, as dangerously, if not more than those whose Secrets I have revealed; but they shall be discovered too in : due Time and Place. La Rappiniere fell in Love with . Madam Star when she acted Climene, and intended then to have declared his Distemper to Rancour, whom he thought capable of doing any Thing for Money. The Heavenly Bard Roquebrune defigned the Conquest of a Spanish Lady worthy his Courage. But as for Rancour, I. cannot imagine by what potent Charms this Foreign Lady could inflame the Heart of one with Love, who harted all the World. This worn-out Stroller, being in Hell ? before his Time, I mean in Love before his Death, was still in Bed, when Ragotin troubled him with his Passion, as it were the Belly-ach, came to defire him to mind his Business and take pity on him. Rancour assured him, that e'er that Day was over, he would do him a notable Piece of Service with his Mistress. La Rappiniere entered Rancour's Chamber at the same Time, who was still dressing himself. Having taken him aside, he confessed his Infirmity to him, and vowed, that if he could bring him into favour with Madam Star, there was nothing in his Power, but he would do for him, even to the making him one of his Assistants, and bestowing his Niece in Marriage on him, whom he defigned to make fole Heiress after his Death, because he had no Children of his own.

The cheating Rogue promifed him yet more than her had done Ragotin, which put this Hangman's Purveyor in good Hopes. Roquebrune came likewife to confult the fame Oracle. He was the most incorrigible presumptious Coxcomb, that ever came from the Banks of Garonne, and one who thought every Body believed what he romanced about his good Family, Riches, Poetry and Va-

Flour; infomuch, that he flighted all the dry Jests and Bobs that Rancour perpetually cast at him, presuming that what he did was only for Conversation Sake: And beside, he understood Raillery as well as any Man alive, and bore it like a Christian Philosopher, even when it touched to the very Quick. He therefore imagined he was admired by all the Players, nay, even by Rancour himself, who had Experience enough to admire but few Things; and was fo far from having a good Opinion of this poor Brother of the Quill, that he made a full Enquiry into his Extraction, thereby to discover whether those Bishops and great Lords, his Countrymen, whom he quoted ever and anon for his Relations, were the true Branches of his Genealogic Tree, this Fool of noble Alliances, and Coats of Arms, together with many other Things, had caused to be drawn in an old Roll of Parchment. He was very forry to find Rancour in Company, tho' he had less Need to be troubled at that Time than any one besides, it being his ill Custom, to be ever whifpering in Peoples Ears, and to make a Secret of every Thing, fometimes of Nothing. However he took Rancour in a Corner, and at first very gravely desired to know whether the Operator's Wife was a Person of a great Deal of Wit, or not; because he had loved Women of all Nations but Spaniards, and if she was worth his Labour, he should not be much the poorer, if he presented her with a hundred Piftoles, which he has often mentioned upon every trifling Occasion, as the great Family from whence he was descended. Rancour told him, he was not so well acquainted with Donna Inizella, as to answer for her Wit, tho' he had often met her Husband in the chiefest Cities of the Kingdom, where he fold his Antidotes; but if he defired fo much to be informed about it, it was but joining Conversation with her, since she began to speak French tolerably well, and he might foon be fatisfied. Roquebrune would needs entrust him with his Pedigree in Parchment, that he might dazzle the Spanish Donna with the Splendor of his Race; but Rancour told him his Pedigeze, would fooner make him a Knight of Malta, than a happy Lover. Whereupon Roquebrune with a fmiling Countenance added; Well, Sir, you know what I am.

I am. Yes, replied Rancour, I know well enough what you are now, and what, you will ever be to your dying Day. The Poet went away as he came, and Rancour, his Rival and Confident at the same Time, drew near to la Rappiniere and Ragotin, who were Rivals also, tho unknown to each other. As for old Rancour, besides that we naturally hate any one that endeavours to rob us of what we defign for ourselves, and the general quarrel he had against all Mankind; besides all this, I say, he ever had a particular Aversion to the Poet, which this Discovery was not likely to abate. Rancour therefore absolutely resolved, from that Time forward, to do him all the Mischief he possibly could, to which moreover his apish Nature prompted him, and fitted him for it: And not to lose Time, he began that very Day, by basely borrowing Money of him, wherewith he new cloathed himself from Top to Toe, and besides stocked himself well with Linnen. He had before been a Sloven all his Life-time; but Love, which works far greater Miracles than any Thing elfe, now made him more curious of his Dress in his declining Days. In a Word he changed his Linnen oftener than became a Stroller, and began to wash, powder, and colour his grey Hairs, and likewife to trim himself so carfully, that his Comrades took notice of it. The Players had that Day a Play bespoke, at one of the chiefest Citizens of Mans, who made a great Treat, and gave a Ball at his Niece's Wedding, whose Guardian he had been. The Nuptials were kept at a very fair Country-House of his, about a League from the City; but whether Eastward, Westward, Northward, or Southward, I cannot tell. The Decorator belonging to the Strollers, and a Carpenter were fent in the Morning early to erect a Stage. The whole Company of Players followed in two Coaches, about eleven o'Clock, that they might get thither by Dinner-time. Donna Inezilla, the Spanish Lady, made one, at the earnest Intreaty of the Actresses and Rancour. Ragotin being informed of the Business, went to an Inn at the End of the Suburbs, where he waited the coming of the Coaches, and tied a very fine Steed which he had borrowed, to the Grate of the Parlour that looked into the Street. He was **fcarce**

fearce fet down to Dinner, when Word was brought him, that the Coach was in Sight. He flew to his Horse on the Wings of Love, with a great Sword by his Side, and a Carabine dangling at his Breech like a Bandeleer. He would never confess what his Fancy was, to go to the Wedding with fuch Store of offensive and defensive Weapons; neither could Rancour his Confident ever persuade him to discover it. By that Time he had untied his Horse's Bridle, the Coaches were so near, that he had not Time to look for a Jossing-block, that he might appear in State on his Steed like pretty St. George. And being none of the best Horsemen, and unprepared to shew his nimble Dispofition, he did it but very aukwardly; for his Horse's Legs were as much too long, as his were too short. However, he stoutly reared himself in the Stirrup, and threw his right Leg over the Saddle; but the Girts being loose, it occasioned a strange Disaster; for this made the Saddle to turn round, while he was bestriding the Steed. Yet all Things went hitherto well enough, but the curfed Carabine, which hung on a Belt about his Neck like a Collar, got fo unfortunately betwixt his Legs before he was aware, that his Breech could not reach the Saddle, which was an old-fashioned one, the Carabine lying a cross from the Pummel to the Crupper. Thus he fat in a very uneafy Posture, as not being able with the Tip of his Toe, fo much as to touch the Stirrups: Therefore his Heels being armed with Spurs, he kicked the Horse's Side in a Place he was never used to be pricked in, which made him to flart more brifkly than was necessary for a little Rider in that Posture, having nothing but the Carabine to rest upon. This made him to cling his Legs close to the Horse's Sides, which made the Horse to sling up his hinder Legs; when Ragotin following the Nature of all heavy Bodies, fell into the Horse's Neck, whereby he got a bruifed Nofe, the Steed lifting up his Head suddenly at a Jerk he gave him with the Bridle very preposterously: Now thinking to repair his Overfight, he let go the Reins; but giving the Horse his Head, he at that very Instant gave such a great Leap, and cast his Ridder quite over the Saddle upon the Crupper, with the Carabine still between

between his Legs. The Horse not being used to carry any Thing behind, makes a *Croupade*, which places *Ragotin* in the Saddle again. The unskilful Horseman clapped his Heels close to his Sides afresh, and then the Horse sun up his hinder Legs more then at first, which pitched the unsortunate *Ragotin*, just upon the Pummel, where we must leave him as on a Pinacle, to rest ourselves a while; for upon the Honour of a Gentleman, this Description has cost me more Pains, than all the Books besides, and yet I am not well satisfied with it neither.

CHAP. XX.

The shortest in this present Book. Ragotin's Fall off his Horse, and something of the like Nature which happened to Roquebrune.

WE left Ragotin planted on the Pummel of a Saddle, not knowing how to behave himself, and much perplexed how he should get off. I scarce believe the defunct Phaeton, of unhappy Memory, was ever more troubled with his Father's four fiery Steeds, than was at this Time our little Lawyer, with this one Titt, on which he nevertheless sat as quiet as a Lamb.. That it did not cost him his Life, as it did Phaeton, he was beholding to Fortune, whose Caprices would be a fit Subject for me to expatiate on, was I not in Conscience obliged to release Ragotin from the imminent Danger he is in, having besides, many more Things to treat off concerning our Strollers, during their Residence at Mans. As soon as the disasterous Ragotin selt what an uneasy Cushion he had under the two most fleshy Parts of his Body, on which he used to fit, as all other rational Creatures are wont; I mean, as foon as he found how narrow his Seat was, he quited the Bridle like a Man of Discretion, and laid hold of the Horse's Mane, who at the same Time ran away full Speed. Thereupon the Carabine went off: Ragotin thought he had been shot, his Horse undoubtedly believed the same, and therefore made fuch foul Stumble, that the little Man lost his Seat; infomuch, that for a time, he hung by the

Part'I. Scarron's Comical Romance. 121

Florse's Mane, with one Foot entangled by his Spur in the Saddle-cloth, and the other with the rest of his Body, hanging dangling towards the Earth in Expectation of a Fall, as foon as his Spur should break loose; together with his Sword, Carabine, and Bandaleer. At length his Foot being disengaged, his Hands let go the Mane, and down he tumbled, tho' with more Grace and Skill than he had got up. All this happened in the Sight of the Coaches, that stopped on purpose to see what would become of him; or rather to have the Pleafure of laughing at him. curfed the Horse, who stood stock still, as soon as he had laid down his Load: But to comfort him, they took him into one of the Coaches in the Poet's Room, who was willing to ride, that he might flutter about the Coach, and court Inexilla, who fat in the Boot. Ragotin refigned his Sword and Fire-arms to him, which he put on as dextrously as any Son of Mars could have done. He lengthned his Stirrups, fitted the Bridle, and without doubt went to get up more methodically than Ragotin had done. But furely there had some Spell been cast upon that unlucky Horse that Day, for the Saddle being too loosely girted, as before, turned round with the Poet, as it had done with Ragotin; and the String of his Breeches breaking, the Horse ran a pretty Way with him, whilst he had but one Foot in the Stirrup, his other ferving the Beaft as a fifth Leg, whereby his back Parts became exposed to all the Company, his Breeches dangling all the Way about his Heels. None of the Spectators laughed much at Ragotin's Mishap, because they were afraid he would hurt himself, but Roquebrune's Accident was attended with loud Shouts and Laughter from the Coaches: The Coachmen stopped to laugh their Bellies full, and all together hollowed at Roque brune, which drove him, having difengaged himself, into a House for Shelter, leaving the Horse to his own Discretion, who very wifely trotted back again to the Town. Ragotin knowing he was responsible for the Beast, alight. ed out of the Coach and went after him; when the Poet having cased up his Posteriors, returned to the Coach much troubled, and no less troublesome to the Company by Ragotin's martial Equipage, who had undergone this their Difgrace

Difgrace in his Mistress's Presence, with which we shall conclude the twentieth Chapter.

CHAP. XXI.

Which perhaps will not be found very entertaining.

HE Players were very well received by the Mafter of the House, who was a good honest Man, and one of the most considerable in those Parts. They had two Chambers allotted them to lay their Cloaths in, and make, themselves ready for the Play, which was put off till after Supper. They dined in private, and after Dinner, those that had a mind to walk, had the Choice of a Grove and a fine Garden to do it in. A young Counsellor of the Parliament of Reenes, and near Kinsman to the Master of the House, accosted our Players, having discovered Defliny to be a Person of more than vulgar Judgment, and the Actresses, besides their great Beauty, to be such as could fay more than just the Parts they had learned by Heart. They discoursed of Matters relating to their Profession, as Plays, Dramatic Writers, &c. This young Counsellor said amongst other Things, that there was scarce any remarkable Subject for the Stage, that had not been blown upon; that all History was almost exhausted, and that modern Authors would at last be constrained to wave those nice Rules of Unity of Time, and stretch it beyond four and twenty Hours: That the Generality of People did not apprehend what those severe Rules of the Stage were good for, being rather pleased with Action and Representation than Recitals; and therefore such Plots might he contrived as would meet with Applause, without either falling into the Extravagancies of the Spaniards, or being tied up to the strict Precepts of Aristotle. From Plays, they proceeded to talk of Romances. The Counfellor faid, that nothing could be more diverting, than our modern Romances; that the French alone knew how to write good ones; however, that the Spaniards had a peculiar Talent to compose little Stories, which they called Nevelas, which are more useful, and more probable Pat-

terns

terns for us to follow, than those imaginary Heroes of Antiquity, who grow oftentimes tedious and troublesome, by being over-civil, and over-virtuous. In short, that those Examples which may be imitated, are at least as beneficial, as those that exceed all Probability and Belief; from all which he concluded, that if a Man could write as good Novels in French, as those of Miguel de Cervantes, they would foon be as much in Vogue as ever heroic Romances have been. Roquebrune was not of the same Opinon: He affirmed very positively, that there could be no Pleasure in reading Romances, unless they contained the Adventures of Princes, nay, and of great Princes too, and that for that Reason, Astrea only pleased him here and there. In what Histories can one find Kings and Emperors enough to make new Romances, faid the Counsellor? We must feign them, replied Roquebrune, as they usually do in fabulous Stories, which have no Foundation in History. I perceive then, returned the Counfellor, that Don Quixot is very little in your Favour. 'Tis the filliest Book that ever I read, replied Roquebrune, tho' it be cried up by a great many Men of Wit. Have a care, faid Deftiny, it be not rather for Want of Wit in you, than any Defect in the Book, that you entertain so indifferent an Opinion of it. Roquebrune would not have failed to answer Destiny, had he but heard what he had spoke: But he was so taken up with telling his Feats to fome Ladies, who were come near the Players, that he minded him not, but promised that fair Sex, he would write a Romance in five Parts, every Part to contain five Volumes, which should eclipse all the Cassandra's, Cleopatra's, and Cyrus's in the World, tho' this last had the Sirname of Great, as well as the Son of Pepin. During this, the Counfellor was telling Destiny and the Actresses, that he had writ some Novels in Imitation of the Spaniards, and promised he would communicate 'em to them. Thereupon, Inezilla told them, in a Sort of French that had more of the Gascon than the Spanish in it, that her first Husband had the Character of a tolerable Writer in the Court of Spain, having composed several Novels that were much esteemed. fome whereof she had in Manuscript, which in her Opini-G 2 on,

on, deserved to be translated into French. The young Counfellor being extremely curious in fuch Kind of Compositions, told the Spanish Lady, she would do him a great Favour in letting him have the Perusal of them, which she very civilly confented to do; adding withal, that no Body was better stored with Novels than herfelf; for as some Women in her Country would fometimes attempt to write both in Verse and Prose, so she had made it her Pastime, and could entertain them with some Novels of her own making. Roquebrune confidently, according to Custom, offered to turn them into French. Inezilla, who was perhaps the sharpest Spaniard that had ever come over the Pirenees, replied, that to do as he pretended, it was not only requisite he should understand the French Tongue well, but be equally acquainted with the Spanish also; and that therefore she could not give him her Novels to translate, till she was so well acquainted with the French, as to be able to judge whether he was qualified for the Undertaking. Rancour, who had been filent all the while, faid, there was no doubt to be made of his Ability, fince he had been Corrector to a Printing-House: He had no fooner popp'd out these Words, but he remembered Roquebrune had lent him Money, which made him purfue his Jest no farther; to which the Poet, dashed out of Countenance at Rancour's Words, replied, that he could not deny but that he had corrected fome few Sheets, but then they were nothing but what he had published of his own. Madam Star, to shift the Discourse, told Donna Inezilla, that fince she was Mistress of so many fine Stories, the could not be angry if the often importuned her to relate some of them. The Spanish Lady replied, she was ready to give her Satisfaction prefently: They took her at her Word, and all the Company having feated themselves round her, she began a Story, tho' not in the very same Words you will find in the following Chapter; yet to intelligibly, as made them to guess she was Mistress of a great Deal of Wit in Spanish, since she discovered so much in a Language, to whose Delicacies she was a persect Stranger. CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

The Impostor Out-witted. A Novel.

A Young Lady of the City of Toledo, named Victoria, descending from the ancient Family of Portocarrero, had retired to a House she had on the Banks of Tagus, about half a League distant from that City, in the Absence of her Brother, who was a Captain of a Troop of Horse in the Low-Countries. She became a Widow at Seventeen, having been wedded to an old Gentleman that had got a great Estate in the Indies, but who fix Months after his Marriage, perished in a Storm at Sea, leaving much Wealth to his Wife. This fair Widow after the Death of her Husband, kept House constantly with her Brother, where the lived in fuch Repute, that at the Age of Twenty; all the Mothers proposed her for a Pattern for their Children, the Husbands to their Wives, and the Lovers to their Defires, as a Conquest worthy their Ambition. But as her Retirement had cooled the Love of many; so on the other Hand, it encreased the Esteem the whole World had for her. In this Count y-house she enjoyed, at Liberty, all the innocent Pleasures of a rural Life; when one Morning her Shepherds brought to her a Couple of Men, whom they had found stripped of all their Cloaths, and bound fait to a Tree, to which they had been tied the whole Night. They had lent each of them a fourvy Shepherd's Coat to cover their Nakedness; and in this fine Equipage they appeared before the fair Victoria. So mean a Habit did not hide from her the noble Mien of the Younger, who made her a genteel Compliment, and told her he was a Gentleman of Cordoua, Don Lopes de Gongora by Name, who travelling from Sevil to Madrid about Business of great Importance, and having over-stayed his Time at Plays about half a Day's Journey from Toledo, where he had dined the Day before, the Night furprized them; and both he and his Man falling afleep, expecting a Mule-driver who staid behind, some Thieves finding them in that Condition, tied them to a Tree, having first stripped them. Victoria

Victoria doubted not the Truth of his Relation, his good Mien pleading in his Favour; however thought it would be a great Piece of Generosity in her to relieve a Stranger reduced to this sad Extremity. It happened by good Luck, that amongst the Cloaths her Brother had left in her Custody, there were fome Suits, for the Spaniards never part with their old Cloaths, tho' they make new ones. They chose the finest, and that which fatted best the Master's Shape; and his Man was also clothed with what they could find next at Hand. Dinner-time being come, this Stranger whom Victoria had invited to her Table, appeared so accomplished, and entertained her with so much Wit, that the thought the Relief she had afforded him, could never have been better bestowed. They conversed together the remaining Part of the Day, and were so much taken with each other's Perfections, that neither of them slept so quietly that Night as they had done before. The Stranger would needs fend his Man to Madrid, to fetch him Money, and buy him fome Cloaths, or at least he pretended to do fo; but the fair Widow would by no Means suffer him, promifing to lend him as much as would carry him to his Journey's End. He made some Overtures of Love to her the very same Day, and she gave him a favourable Audience. In fine, in a Fortnight's Time, the Opportunity of the Place, the equal Merit of these two Persons, a great many Oaths and Vows on one Side, too much Frankness and Credulity on the other, a Promise of Marriage tendred, and their reciprocal Faith plighted in the Presence of an old Gentleman-Usher, and Waiting-woman, made her to commit a Fault she had hitherto been thought uncapable of, and put this happy Stranger in Possession of the most beautiful Lady of Toledo. For eight Days together it was nothing but Love and Dear, Fire and Flames, and the like, betwixt these two Lovers. But now part they must, and Tears will succeed: Victoria indeed had right to flay him, but the Stranger pretended he loft a great Deal by not going; however professed, that since he had been so happy as to win her Heart, he would mind no more, either his Law-suit at Madrid, or his Preferment at Court. Hereupon she grew impatient to have

him gone; her Passion it seems not having blinded her Reason so much, as to make her prefer the Pleasure of his Company, to that of his Advancement. She got new Cloaths made for him and his Man at Toledo, furnished him with as much Money as he defired; and so he set forward on his Journey to Madrid, mounted on a good Mule, and his Man on another. The poor Lady was full of real Grief at his Departure, and he was no less afflicted, or at least pretended to be so, with the greatest Hypocrisy in the The same Day he took his Journey, the Chamber-maid making his Bed, found a Picture-case wrapped in a Letter; she carried them immediately to her Mistress, who found in the Cafe the Portraiture of a most beautiful young Lady, and reading the Letter, it contained these Words, or others to the same Effect.

Dear Coufin,

" TERE inclosed I fend you the Picture of the beauti-" A L ful Elvira de Sylva, but when you shall see her, " you will be apt to confesshow infinitely the Resemblance " falls thort of the Original; and how much brighter her " Beauty is than that the Painter could draw for her. Her " Father Don Pedro de Sylva expects you with Impatience: "The Articles of Marriage betwixt you and her are al-" ready drawn up according to your Wishes, and in my "Opinion, very much to your Advantage. All this, I " hope, will be sufficient to hasten your Journey. Farequel. Don Antonio de Rebera. Madrid, &c.

This Letter was directed to Ferdinand de Ribera at Sevil. Now imagine, I beseech you, Victoria's Astonishment at the reading of this Epistle, which in all Probability, could be written to no other than her false Lopez de Gongora. She now perceived, but too late, that this Stranger, whom she had fo highly and so hastily obliged, had disguised his Name; and thereby was fully assured of his Insidelity and Treachery. The Beauty of the Lady in the Picture made her to feel all the Torments of Jealoufy, and the Articles of Marriage already drawn up, almost distracted her with Despair. Never was any mortal Creature more fenfibly afflicted; her

G4

Sighs

and

Sighs went near to burst her Heart, and she shed such a Flood of Tears, that her Head ached most intolerably. Miferable, abandoned Woman that I am, faid she to herfelf, (and fometimes would also bemoan herself before her old Gentleman-Usher, and Waiting-woman, who had both been Witnesses of her Marriage) Have I thus long been so discreet and referved, to commit, at last, a most irreparable Fault? And have I refused so many Men of Quality of my Acquaintance, who would have thought themselves but too happy in the Enjoyment of me, to throw myself away upon a Stranger, who perhaps laughs at my easy Credulity, now he has ruined my Fame, and made me for ever miferable? What will they fay of me at Toledo? Nay, what will they fay over all Spain? Can a young, base, cheating Pretender, be discreet? Why did I let him know I loved him; before I was affored of the Sincerity of his Heart? Would: he have changed his Name, if he had meant to keep his flattering Promises? Or can I hope, after all this, that he will not reveal his easy Conquest over me? What will not my Brother be provoked to do to me, for what I have done against myself? And to what Purpose is he now courting Glory and Fame in Flanders, if I must disgrace him thus in Spain? No, no, Victoria, thou must do any Thing to repair this Crime: But before I proceed to Vengeance, and desperate Remedies, I must try to regain by Craft, what I have loft by my Imprudence: It will then be Time enough to have recourfe to desperate Methods, when all other Means prove ineffectual. Victoria had, it feems, a great Spirit, and Presence of Mind, since she could fix on so good a Resolution at fuch a Plunge. Her old Gentleman-Usher, and her Waiting-woman, would have both given her Advice; but she told them, she knew as much as they could fay, and that Actions, and not Words, must now do her Business. The very fame Day, a Couple of Carts were laden with Houshold-stuff and Necessaries, Victoria giving out, amongst her Domestics, that she had pressing Occasions concerning her Brother, which called her to Court. She took Coach with her Squire and Woman, and hastened to Madrid, whither her Goods were appointed to follow. As foon as she arrived there, the enquired for Don Pedro de Sylva's House,

and being informed whereabouts it was, hired one for herfelf in the same Street. Her Gentleman-Usher's Name wa9 Roderigo Santillane, who from his Youth had been bred up by Victoria's Father, which made him to love his Mistress, as if she had been his own Sister. Having much Acquaintance in Madrid, where he had spent his youthful Days, he foon discovered, that Don Pedro de Sylva's Daughter was to be wedded to a Gentleman of Sevil, named Ferdinand de Ribera, which Match had been made up by a Cousin of his of the same Name, and was so near a Conclusion, that Don Pedro was already providing Servants for his Danghter. The very next Day, Roderigo Santillane, in a plain, but decent Garb, Victoria in the Habit of a Widow of mean Condition, accompanied by Beatrix the Waiting-woman, who was to personate her Mother-in-Law, and Roderigo's Wife, went altogether to Don Pedro's, and defired to speak with him. Don Pedro received them very civilly, whom Roderigo acquainted, with much Affurance, that he was a decayed Gentleman of the Mountains of Toledo, and having but one only Daughter by his first Wife, which was Victoria, whose Husband died not long fince at Sevil, and finding his own, and his Daughter's Fortune very low, he had brought her to Court to get some good Service; and moreover, having been informed that he was about fettling his Daughter's Family upon Marriage, he hoped he would not take it unkindly, that he came to proffer the young Widow's Service to him, she being a Person very sit to be a Duenna to the Bride; adding, his Daughter's Merit gave him the greater Confidence to present her to him, not doubting but that her Breeding and good Qualities would procure her a little hetter Title to her Mistres's Favour, than the small Stock of Beauty she had to recommend her. Before I proceed any further, I must advertise those that are unacquainted with it, that the Ladies in Spain keep Duenna's in their Houses, and that those Duenna's are much the same with our Governantes, or Ladies of Honour belonging to Persons of Quality: I must add to this, that the Duenna's in Spain are fevere and troublesome Animals, no less dreadful than a domineering Mother-in-Law is esteemed among us. To go on with my Story, Roderigo played his Part fo well, and G 5 ·Victoria Victoria beautiful as she was, appeared agreeable in her modest and plain Attire, and had such a promising Look in her Face, that Don Pedro de Sylva accepted of her immediately to govern his Daughter. He proffered Roderigo and his Wife an Employment in his House likewise; but he excused himself, and told him, he had some Reasons not to except of the Honour he intended him; but having a House in the same Street, he would be ready to wait on him at any Time he should command it. Thus was Victoria entertained in Don Pedro's House, infinitely beloved, both by him and his Daughter, and no less envied by all the other Servants. Don Antonio de Rabera, who had contrived the Match between his faithless Cousin, and Don Pedro Sylva's Daughter, came often to bring Don Pedro News, that his Kinsman was on his Journey, and had written to him of his fetting forth from Sevil; and yet this Coufin did not appear: This very much perplexed him, nor could Don Pedro and Elvira tell what to make of it: But still Vistoria was the most concerned. However, Don Ferdinand was not able to come so soon: For the very same Day he parted from Victoria, Heaven had, in some Measure, punished his Treachery; for as he passed thro' Illescas, a sierce Dog running out of a House unawares, ffarighted his Mule so terribly, that his Leg was forely bruifed against a Wall, he thrown down, and his Knee put out of Joint, which pained him fo exceedingly, that he could not profecute his Journey. He was seven or eight Days under the Surgeons Hands, who were none of the most skilful, when his Ailment growing worse and worse, he at length acquainted his Coufin with his Misfortune, defiring him withal, to fend him a Horse-Litter. The News of his Friend's Fall afflicted no less, than the Knowledge of his being so nigh pleased them. Pictoria, who still loved him, was not a little disquieted. Don Antonio fent a Litter to convey Don Ferdinand to Madrid, where being arrived, whill they were providing Cloaths for him and his Retinue, which was to be very magnificent, he being the eldest Son of the Family, and wealthy enough, the Surgeons of Madrid, more skilful than those at Illescas, cured him persectly well. Don Pedro de Sylva, and his Daughter Elvira, had notice of the Day

when Don Antonio de Ribera was to bring his Coufin Don Ferdinand to them. It is probable the young Elvira did not neglect herself upon that Occasion, nor that Victoria was without Concern at this intended Interview. She faw her faithless Lover enter, tricked up like a Bridegroom; and if he was so charming in a poor naked Dishabille, what must he be now in his Wedding Cloaths? Don Pedro was very well fatisfied with him, and his Daughter must have been very nice, had she not been fully pleased. All the Servants of the House stared with all the Eyes they had upon their young Lady's Bridegroom, and every one of the Family was over-joyed at the Match, except the poor Victoria, whose Heart you may imagine was oppressed with Grief. Don Ferdinand was charmed with Elvira's Beauty, and confessed to his Cousin, that she was yet more beautiful than her Picture, according to what he had hinted in his Letter. His first Compliments displayed a great deal of Wit, and he very skilfully avoided those impertinent Fooleries, and starched Nonsense, which most Men are guilty of, in their first Addresses to a Father-in-Law, and a Mistress. Don Pedro de Sylva locked himfelf up in a Closet with the two Kinsmen and a Lawyer, to adjust somewhat that was left unfinished in the Articles. In the mean Time, Elvira staid in her Chamber, furrounded by her Women, who all expressed their Joy at the good Mien, and noble Air of her Lover: Only Victoria stood cold and filent, whilst the Rest were in their Raptures. Elvira observed this, therefore took her aside, to tell her, that she admired she said nothing of the happy Choice her Father had made of a Son-in-Law, who feemed fo deferving; adding, that either out of Complaifance or Civility she ought, at least, to wish her Joy. Madam, replied Victoria, your Lover's Mien speaks so much to his Advantage, that it were needless for me to add my Commendations; the Coldness you have taken notice of, does not proceed from any Indifference; and I were unworthy of the Favours you have vouchsafed me, should Inot thare in every Thing that concerns you; and therefore, should be no less transported with Joy at your Marriage, than all the rest about you are, was I not so well acquainted with the Gentleman you are about to wed. My own

Husband was an Inhabitant of Sevil, whose House was not far from your Lover's. He is, I confess, of a good Family, rich, handsome, and, I believe, a Man of Wit. fine, he is worthy a Lady, fuch as you are: But withal, I must tell you, Madam, you defire a Man's entire Affection, which he cannot bestow on you, because his Heart is divided. I could wave a Discovery, which may, perhaps, displease you: But I should be wanting to my Duty, should I not reveal all I know of Don Ferdinand, in a Bufiness which fo nearly concerns the Happiness or Unhappiness of your whole Life. Elvira was amazed at her Duenna's Words, and intreated her, not to defer any longer the clearing those Doubts she had started. Victoria replied, it was neither to be done before her Women, nor in few Words. Elvira pretended she had some Business of Privacy in her Chamber, when as foon as they were alone, Vicoria told her, that Ferdinand del Ribera was in Love at Sevil, with one Lucretia de Monfava, a very beautiful Lady, tho' of a very mean Fortune, by whom he had three Children. upon Promife of Marriage; and that during Ribera's Father's Life, it was kept fecret; after whose Death, Lucretia having claimed his Promise, he grew indisferent to her, whereupon she had lest the Business to the Management of two Gentlewomen, her Relations, who had made so much Noise in Sevil, that Don Ferdinand, thro' his Friends Perfuafion, absented himself for a while, to shun the Rage of Lucretia's Kindred, who fought for nothing fo much as Blood and Revenge. In this Posture were his Affairs, added the, when I lest Sevil, which is about a Month ago, at which Time it was also reported, that Don Ferdinand was going to Madrid to be married. Elvira could not forbear asking, whether that Lucretia was a great Beauty? Victoria told her, she wanted nothing but a Fortune; so left her extreme pensive, and firmly resolved to give her Father instantly an Account of the Discovery. At the same Moment, the was called to entertain her Lover, the Bufiness for which he had retired into the Closet with her Father, being concluded. Elvira went to him, whilst Victoria staid in the Withdrawing-room, where the fame Fellow came to her that attended on him, when she so generously received them

into

into her House near Toledo. This Servant brought a Packet of Letters for his Master, which he had taken up at the Post-Office from Sevil; and not knowing Victoria, fo much her Widow's Weeds difguised her, he desired to be admitted to the Speech of his Master, to deliver him his Letters. She told him, it would be a good while before he could conveniently speak with him; but if he durst trust her with his Packet, she would be sure to give it him as foon as possibly she could. The Fellow made no Scruple in the Matter, but having left the Packet in her Custody, went about his Business. Victoria, who was resolved to leave no Stone unturned to revenge herfelf, goes up to her own Chamher, opens the Packet, and in a Moment feals it up again, together with a Letter of her own, which she writ in Haste. In the mean Time, the two Kinsmen made an End of their Visit, and took their Leaves. Elvira espying the Packet in her Governante's Hands, asked what it was? Victoria coldly answered, that Don Ferdinand's Servant had left a Packet of some Letters with her to deliver to his Master, which she was going to send after him, not being in the Way when he went out. Elvira faid, it would give them fome farther Light about the Discovery she had made, and therefore she would open them. This being what was defired, Victoria breaks open the Seal a fecond Time: Elvira-looked upon all the Letters, and fixing her Eye upon one which feemed to be writ by a Woman, addressed to Don Ferdinand de Ribera at Madrid, she read the following Lines.

"riage at Court, will foon deprive you of a Perfon that valued you above her own Life, unless you suddenly return, and make good your Promise; which you can neither defer any longer, nor deny me without a manisest Indisference, or Breach of Faith. If what I hear be true, that you regard your Vows and Promises so little, which you have made both to me and our Children, I advise you to take care of your Life; which my Relations are resolved to take for your Treachery, whenever your ungrateful Usage shall prompt me to call upon them for

"Your Absence, and the News I hear of your Mar-

" my just Revenge, fince you enjoy it now only at my Request.

Sevil, &c.

Lucretia de Monsalva.

Elvirahaving read this Letter, was thoroughly persuaded. of the Truth of what her Governante had told her. Moreover the shewed it to her Father, who could not but admire, that a Gentleman of his Quality could be so base, as to be treacherous to a Lady of equal Birth with him, after he had had so many Children by her. Thereupon he went to a Gentleman of Sevil for farther Information, being a Friend of his, and one that had before given him an Account of Ferdinand's Wealth and Circumstances. He was scarce gone out of Doors, when Don Ferdinand came to enquire for his Packet, attended by his Servant, who told him that his Mistress's Governante had promised to deliver it into his Hands. He found Elvira alone in the Parlour, and told her, that tho' the Engagement which was between her and him, might excuse two Visits in one Day, yet he now only came for the Letters his Man had told him he had left with her Duenna. Elvira freely told him, that she had taken them from her, and had had the Curiofity to break them open; not doubting but a Man of his Years had some amorous Engagements in fo great a City as Sevil; and tho' her Curiofity afforded her but little Satisfaction, yet had she met with this Caution in Recompence; that it was dangerous for People to be married together, before they were throughly acquainted; adding, she would not debar him any longer of the Pleasure of perusing his Letters; and therefore immediately reflored him his Packet, together with the counterfeit Letter, and after making him a flight Curtefy, left him without waiting for his Answer. Don Ferdinand was strangely surprized at his Mistress's Discourse. He perused the supposed Letter, and quickly perceived it was a Trick to hinder his Marriage. He addressed himself to Victoria, who remained in the outward Room, and told her without taking much Notice of her Face, that either some Rival, or malicious Person had contrived that Letter to abuse him. I a Wife in Sevil! cried he with Amazement: I Children! if this be not the most impudent Imposture that ever was fet on Foot, I'll forfeit my Head-Victoria told him he might

might possibly be innocent; however Elvira in common Difcretion could do no less than make a farther Enquiry into the Truth; and that therefore the Marriage would certainly be put off, till her Father Don Pedro could be convinced by a Gentleman of Sevil, a Friend of his, (whom he was then gone to feek on purpose;) that this was only a pretended Intrigue. Withal my Heart, answered he; and if there be but a Lady of the Name of Lucretia de Monsalva in all Sevil, let me forfeit the Honour and Reputation of a. Gentleman: And let me intreat you, added he, to let me know, if you are so far in your Lady's Favour, as I suppose you to be, that I may befpeak your good Offices on this-Truly, answered Victoria, I believe, without Vanity, that she will not do a Thing upon any Body's Account, that she has refused to do on mine: But withal, I know her Humour to be fuch, that she is not easily appeased, when she thinks herself disobliged: And as all the Flopes of mending my Fortune depend on the Kindness she has for me, I shall never offer to contradict her out of Complaisance to you, nor hazard her Displeasure by endeavouring to work her out of the ill Opinion she has of your Sincerity. I am but poor, added she, and not to get any Thing, were to lose a great Deal: If what the has promifed to give me in Cafe I marry a fecond Time, should fail, I might live a Widow all the rest of my Days, tho' I am yet young enough, and not so deformed, but that some Body or other may like me. But 'tis an old Saying, and a true one, That without Money - She was thus going on with a true Governante's tedious Tale, for to act her Part to the Life, she must talk a great deal, when Don Ferdinand interrupting her, faid; Do me but one Piece of Service I shall require of you, and I will put you above the Hopes of your Mistress's Reward: And, added he, to convince you that my Promises are not empty Words, give me but Pen, Ink, and Paper, and you shall immediately have what you will under my Hand. Jefu! Signior, faid the feigned Governante, a Gentleman's Word is as good as his Bond — But to obey you, I will fetch you what you defire. She returned again with Materials enough to have drawn a Bond for a Million of Gold, and Don Ferdinand was fo gallant, or at least had such a Months Mind to Elvira, that he figned her a Blank, leaving her to

fill it up as she pleased, thereby to engage her to serve him with the greater Zeal. This raised Victoria up to the Clouds : She promifed Wonders to Don Ferdinand, and moreover told him, she wished herself the unhappiest of all her Sex, if the did not act in this Business, as if the herself had been a Party concerned. In this she spoke a great Truth. Don Ferdinand lest her full of Hopes; and Roderigo Santillane, who went for her Father, being come to vifit her, to learn how her Intrigue advanced, she gave him an Account of all, and shewed him the blank Paper subscribed; for which he with her gave Thanks to Heaven, finding now that all Things feemed to contribute to her Happiness. To lose no Time, he went home to the House that Victoria had hired, not far from Don Pedro's, as I have before related, where he filled up the Blank Don Ferdinand had given, with a Promise of Marriage attested by Witnesses, and dated about the same Time that Victoria received this faithless Man into her Country-House. He was as skilful a Pen-man as any in Spain, and had studied Don Ferdinand's Hand so exactly well in a Copy of Verses of his own Writing, that even Don Ferdinand himself would have been mistaken in the Forgery, and thought it to have been his own Hand. Don Pedro de Sylva could not meet with the Gentleman he fought to be informed by, about Don Ferdinand's Amours, therefore left a Note for him, and fo came back to his House; where that same Night Elvira unbosomed her Secrets to her Governante, and vowed, the would fooner difobey her Father, than ever marry Don Ferdinand, confessing withal, that she had been pre-ingaged to one Don Diego de Maradasa long While before, and had in all Reason complied enough with her Father's Commands and her own Duty, by putting a Constraint on her Inclinations, to satisfy him; but fince Heaven had ordered it so, that Ferdinand's Treachery was discovered, she thought, by refusing him, she obeyed the Divine Pleasure, which seemed to allot her another Husband. You may imagine Victoria fortified Elvira in these good Resolutions, and spoke quite contrary to Don Ferdinand's Expectations. Don Diego de Maradas, faid then-Elvira to her, is much diffatisfied with me, for having paid this Obedience to my Father; but the least inviting Look from me, will however be fure to bring him back, was he

at as great a Distance from me, as Don Ferdinand is from his Lucretia. Write to him, Madam, quoth Victoria, and I will willingly be your Messenger. Elvira was overjoyed to find her Governante fo favourable to her Defigns; she commanded the Coach to be made ready for Victoria, who immediately went away with a Billet-deaux for Don Diego; and being alighted at her Father Santillane's, fent the Coach back again, telling the Coachman, she would walk the rest of the Way, whither fire defigned to go. Honest Santillane shewed her the Promise of Marriage he had drawn up, whereupon, she immediately wrote two little Notes, one to Don Diego de Maradas, the other to Don Pedro de Sylva her Lady's Father; wherein, she intreated both of them to repair to her House about Business, with the Direction where the dwelt, and fubscribed herself Victoria Portocarrero. Whilst these Notes were carrying, Victoria strips off her black Weeds, puts on very rich Cloaths, pulls out her Locks, (which I have been told were of the finest coloured Hair that could be) and dressed her Head as nicely as if she had been going to Court. Don Diego de Maradas came a while after, to know what Concern a Lady, to whom he was a perfect Stranger, could have with him. She received him very civilly; and they were scarce set down, when it was told her, that Don Pedro de Sylva was come likewife to wait upon her. She intreated Don Diego to conceal himself in her Alcove, affuring him, it concerned him very much to hear the Discourse she should have with Don He easily complied with the Desire of a Lady of fo much Beauty, and fo good a Mien, and Don Pedro was admitted into Victoria's Chamber, not knowing her, fo much had her Head-dress and rich Attire changed her Face, and heightened her majestic Air. She desired him to place himself in a Chair, whence Don Diego might easily hear all they faid, and then she began in these Words: I think, Sir, I ought in the first Place to inform you who I am, because, in all Probability, you are impatient to know it. I am of the Family of the Portocarrero's, born in the City of Toledo, where I was married at the Age of Sixteen, and became a Widow about fix Months after. My Father was a Knight of the Order of St. Jago, and my Brother of the Order of.

of Callatrava. Don Pedro interrupted her, to let her know her Father was his intimate Friend. What you tell me rerejoices me extremely, answered Victoria, for I shall have occasion for a great many Friends in the Affair I design to acquaint you with. After this she informed Don Pedro all that passed between her and Don Ferdinand, and put into his Hands the Promise of Marriage counterfeited by Santillane. He had no sooner read it, but she went on thus: You know, Sir, what Honour obliges Persons of my Quality to do in these Cases: For tho? Justice should be partially denied me, yet have my Friends Power and Credit. enough to prefecute my Interest to the highest. I thought, Sir, it became me to let you know my Pretensions, that you might put a Stop to that Match you had defigned for your Daughter. She deserves better than to be thrown away upon a faithless Man; and I believe you are more discreet, than to procure her Husband, whom another has a Right to dispute with her. Was he a Grandee of Spain, replied Don Pedro, I would have nothing to do with him if he was unjust and salse, as you say he is: I shall therefore not only refuse him my Daughter, but likewise forbid him my House. As for yourself, Madam, continued he, both my Friends and Interest are at your Service. I had Notice given me before, that he was a Man that purfued his Pleasure, even to the Hazard of his Reputation; and being of that Temper, tho' you had no Title to him, yet should he never had my Daughter, who I hope in God, shall not want a Husband in the Court of Spain. Don Pedro took his Leave of Victoria, perceiving the had no more to fay to him; and then she called Don Diego out of the Alcove, where he had over-heard all the Conversation she had with her Mistress's Father. This spared her the Labour of repeating her Story to him: She delivered Elvira's Letter to him, which transported him with Joy; and lest he should be in Pain to know how she came by it, she entrusted him with her Metamorphofis into a Duenna, knowing he was as much concerned as herself to keep it secret. Don Diego, before he left Victoria, wrote an Answer to his Mistress's Letter, wherein the infinite Joy he expressed for his revived Hopes, plainly discovered the real Affiiction he had been

been in ever fince he thought them quite lost. He parted from the fair Widow, who presently put on her Governante's Habit, and returned to Don Pedro's. In the Interim Don Ferdinand de Ribera was come to wait upon his Miftrefs, and had taken his Coufin Don Antonio along with him to endeavour to fet all to Rights again, which had been charged against him by Victoria's feigned Letter. Don Pedro found them with his Daughter, who knew not what to answer, when they both desired no better Justification, than only a due Enquiry whether there ever was in Sevil fuch a Lady as Lucretia de Monsalva. They renewed the fame Plea to Don Pedro, to clear Don Ferdinand; to which he answered, That if that Engagement with the Lady of Sevil was a Supposition, it was so much the easier to be cleared; but that he came from a Lady of Toledo, named Victoria Portocarrero, to whom Don Ferdinand had promised Marriage, and to whom he was still more engaged, by having been fo generously assisted by her, when a meer Stranger to her; which he could not deny, fince she liad. under his Hand and Seal a Promise of Marriage; adding withal, that a Person of Honour ought not to court a Wifeat Madrid, whilst he had one already at Toledo: At these Words he shewed the two Coufins the Promise of Marriage in due Form. Don Antonio knew his Coufin's Writing, and Don Ferdinand mistaking it, tho' he was confident he had never given any fuch, yet was quite confounded at the Sight of it. The Father and Daughter withdrew, after they had coldly bid them Farewel. Don Antonio quarrelled with his Coufin for employing him in this Treaty, when he had another on Foot before. They took Coach together where Don Antonio having made him confess his unhandsome Proceeding with Victoria, reproached him a thousand Times with the Heinousness of the Fact, and withal, represented to him the evil Confequence that was like to attend it. He told him, he must not think of getting a Wise either at Madrid, or in any Part of Spain after this Rate; and that he was happy if he could get off by marrying Victoria, without forfeiting his Life with his Honour. Brother being a Person not used to put up so foul Affronts without full Satisfaction, it was Don Ferdinand's Part to be filent

felent whilst his Cousin continued his Reproaches. His Conscience sufficiently accused him of Treachery and Falshood to a Lady that had so highly obliged him; but this Promise of Marriage however almost distracted him, not knowing by what strange Inchantment they had made him to grant it. Victoria being come back to Don Pedro's in her Widow's Weeds, delivered Don Diego's Letter to Elvira, who told her how the two Kinsmen had been there to justify themselves; but that Don Ferdinand had been charged with other-guess Practices than his Amour with the Lady of Sevil; she afterwards related what Victoria knew better than herself; tho' she pretended to admire at, and

detest Don Ferdinand's Baseness.

The fame Day Elvira was invited to a Play at one of her Relations. Victoria, whose Thoughts still ran upon her own Affairs, hoped, if Elvira would follow her Counsel, that this Play might prove favourable to her Design. She told her young Lady, that if she had a Mind to meet her Lover Don Diego, there was nothing more easy, her Father's House being the most convenient that could be; and that fince the Play was not to begin till Midnight, fhe might go out a little earlier, and have Time enough to speak with Don Diego, and after go to her Relations. vira, who really loved Don Diego, and had confented to marry Don Ferdinand, meerly out of Respect to her Father's Commands, shewed no Reluctancy, to do what Victoria had propounded. They therefore took Coach as foon as ever Don Pedro was gone to Bed, and went to Victoria's House, Santillane, as Master of the Family, and Beatrix, who personated the Mother-in-Law, welcomed them very kindly. Elvira wrote a Billet to Don Diego, which was delivered immediately; whilst Victoria dispatched another privately to Don Ferdinand in Elvira's Name, to let him know it was in his Power to complete the Match, on which his extraordinary Merit engaged her to adventure, as not desiring to make herself unhappy for ever by losing him, only to please a Father's crabbed suspicious Humour. In the same Note she gave him such particular Directions how to find the House, that it was impossible he should miss it: This Note was carried a little while:

while after that other from Elvira to Don Diego. Victoria wrote a third likewise, which Santillane carried himself to Don Pedro de Sylva, by which she informed him, as a trusty Governante, that his Daughter, instead of going to the Play, would needs stop at her Father's House, and had fent for Don Ferdinand to consummate her Nuptials with him; which she believing to be contrary to his Consent, thought herself obliged to give him Notice of it, to the End he might be sensible he was not at all mistaken in the good Opinion he had entertained of her Honesty, when he chose her for his Daughter's Governante. Santillane likewise told Don Pedro, that his Daughter had charged him not to come thither by any Means without bringing an Alguazil with him, which is an Officer much like to a Commiffary in Paris. Don Pedro being then in Bed, hastened to put on his Cloaths in a great Passion. But whilst he is dressing, and sending for a Commissary, let us go back and fee what they are doing at Victoria's. By good Fortune the Notes came fafe to the Brace of Lovers Hands. Don Diego, who had received his first, came first to the Assignation. Victoria met him at the Door, and conducted him into a Chamber, where she left him with Elvira. I will not trouble you with the Relation of all the Endearments that passed betwixt these two young Lovers; and if I would, Don Ferdinand's knocking at the Door will not give me Time to do it. Vidoria lets him in herfelf, after having magnified the great Service she had done him on this Occasion; for which the amorous Spark returned her a thousand Thanks, promifing he would yet do more for her than all his former Promises engaged him to. She leads him into a Chamber, where she defired him to stay a While for Elvira, who was coming, and fo locked him in without Light; telling him, his Mistress would needs have it so, but that it would not be long before he should be visible again; adding, that a young Lady's Modesly would not Juster her to bear, without Blushing, the Sight of a Man for whom fne had committed so bold an Action. This done, Victoria, with all the Haste she could, attired herself as well and as nicely as the short Time would permit. She goes into the

the Chamber where Don Ferdinand was, who had not the least Suspicion but that she was Elvira, being no less young than she, and having such Persumes about her, according to the Spanish Fashion, as would have made a Chambermaid pass for a Woman of Quality. In this Interim, Don Pedro, the Alguazil and Santillane arrived. They enter the Chamber where Elvira was in private with her Lover; at which they both were not a little furprized. Don Pedro, blinded by the first Transports of his Passion, was ready to run the Person thro' whom he took for Don Ferdinand. The Commissary discovering it was not he, but Don Diego, held his Arm, bidding him to have a Care what he did, fince it was not Don Ferdinand de Ribera that was with his Daughter, but Don Diego de Maradas, a Person of no less Quality and Riches. Don Pedro at this, behaved himself like a discreet Gentleman, and raised his Daughter, who had cast herself at his Feet. He wisely considered, that if he should cross her Inclination, by opposing this Match, he would create both her and himself a great deal of Trouble; and besides could not pitch upon a better Son-in-Law, tho' he had the chusing of one himself. Santillane desired Don Pedro, the Alguazil, and all that were with them in the Room to follow him, when he led them to the Chamber where Don Ferdinand was shut up with Victoria. They commanded the Door to be opened in the King's Name: Don Ferdinand letting them in, and seeing Don Pedro, attended by the Commissary, told them, with a great Deal of Confidence, that he was with his Wife Elvira de Sylva. Don Pedro answered, he was mistaken, his Daughter being married to another; and as for you, added he, you cannot deny but that Victoria Portocarrero is your lawful Wife. Victoria then discovered herfelf to her faithless Gallant, who remained full of Confufion. She expostulated his Ingratitude with him; to whom his Silence was his only Plea, as well as to the Commissary, who told him he could do no less than carry him to Prifon. In short, his Remorse of Conscience, and Fear of Imprisonment, together with Don Pedro's Exhortations, who minded him of his Honour and Reputation, joined to Victoria's Tears and Beauty, nothing inferior to that of Elvira.

Elvira, and above all the rest, some Sparks of Generosity still remaining in his Heart, notwithstanding his Debaucheries and youthful Follies, made him at length, with Reason and Justice, to yield to Victoria's bright Charms. He tenderly embraced her, she being likely to swoon in his Arms, which no doubt but his warm Kisses preserved her from. Don Pedro, Don Diego, and fair Elvira shared in Victoria's Happiness, and Santillane and Beatrix were ready to die for Joy. Don Pedro very much commended Don Ferdinand, for thus nobly repairing the Wrongs he had committed. The two young Ladies embraced each other, with as great Testimonies of Love, as if they had hugged their own Husbands. Don Diego de Maradas made a thousand Protestations of his Obedience to his Father-in-Law, or he that should be so in a short Time. Don Pedro, before he went home with his Daughter, made them to promife, that they would all come and dine the next Day at his House, where for fifteen Days together he endeavoured, by solemn Rejoicings, to dispel the Thoughts of their past Troubles. The Alguazil was invited too, who promised to be there: Don Pedro took him along with him; and Don Ferdinand remained with Victoria, who now had as much Reason to bless her good Fortune, as the formerly had to curse her Evil.

CHAP. XXIII.

An unexpected Misfortune, which prevented the acting of the Play.

Nexilla having recounted her Novel with so admirable a Grace, Roquebrune was so pleased with it, that he caught up her Hand, and kissed it whether she would or not. She told him in Spanish, That great Men and Fools had the Liberty to do any Thing; for which, Rancour gave her Thanks in his Heart. The Spanish Lady's Face began to break, yet there were many sine Remains of her former Beauty to be seen. But had she been less handsome, her Wit had made her to be preferred to a younger Person. All that heard the Story agreed in this, that she had made

it very entertaining in a Language she was yet but a Novice in, being often obliged to intermix Spanish and Italian with it, to express her Meaning. Madam Star told her, that instead of begging Excuse for putting her to the Trouble of speaking so long, she expected her Thanks for giving her fo fair an Occasion to shew her extraordinary Wit. The rest of the Asternoon was spent in Conversation, the Garden being full of Ladies, and many Citizens of Note, till Supper-time. They-supped after the Manner of Mans; that is to fay, made very good Cheer; which being over, every one took their Places to see the Play: But Madam Cave and her Daughter were missing. They fent to feek them out; and it was above half an Hour before any Tidings came. At last they heard a great Noise without the Hall; and presently after in comes Cave, with dishevelled Hair, her Face bloody, and bruised, and crying out like a distracted Creature, that her Daughter had been stolen. Her Sobs and Sighs so interrupted her Speech, that it was a long Time before she could make the Company understand how a Couple of Strangers, being got thro' a Back-door into the Garden, where she and her Daughter were rehearfing their Parts, one of them feized upon her, whose Eyes she had almost scratched out, while two others took away her Daughter by Force; the fame Villain having put her into that fad Condition they faw, and who afterwards mounting on Horseback followed his Comrades, one of them held Angelica before him. She told them likewise she had pursued them as far as she could, crying out, a Rape, but finding no Body to be within Hearing, she had hastened back again to the House to beg their Affislance. With these last Words she shed such a Flood of Tears, as moved all the Beholders with Pity. Deftiny got presently on the Back of a Horse, on which Ragotin was just then arrived from Mans, (but whether or no it was the same that threw him in the Morning, I cannot justly tell.) Many other young Men mounted the Horses they could lay their Hands on, and rode after Deftiny, who was got a good Way before them. Rancour and Olive marched on Foot, with their Swords in their Hands, in the Rear of the Horse; and Roquebrune staid with Star and Inexilla,

who were endeavouring to comfort Cave as well as they could. Some found Fault with him, for not going along with the rest, ascribing it to Want of Courage; but others more favourable, have commended his Difcretion, for staying with the Women while there was the least Probability of Danger. In the mean Time, the Guests were reduced to change their Comedy to Dancing, and having no Fidlers, because they had expected a Play, they tripped it about to the finging of some of the Company. Poor Cave found herfelf fo disordered, that she went to Be in one of their Dreiling-chambers; Star took as muc Care of her, as if the had been her own Mothe, and Inexilla was likewise very officious. The indisposed Wo man at length defired they would leave her to herself whereupon, Roquebrune led the two Ladies into the Hal to the rest of the Company. They were hardly set down. but one of the House maids came and told Star, that Cave defired to speak with her; she promised the Poet and Spanilb Lady to return immediately, and fo went to her. "Tis probable, that if Roquebrune had any Wit in him, he made use of that Opportunity to acquaint the fair Inexilla with his Necessities. As ioon as Cave saw Star, she defired her to make the Door fait, and come to her Bedfide. Star having feated herfelf as she defired, the first Thing she did was to weep afresh, and then she laid hold on her Hands, bathing them with Tears, and groaning and fobbing after a lamentable Manner. Star endeavoured to comfort her, giving her Hopes that her Daughter would foon be recovered again, her Ravishers being pursued by fo many People. I wish she may never return, faid she, weeping still more and more; I wish she might never be found, repeated the again, and that this was all'my Grief: But I must blame her most; nay, I must, and curse the Hour I brought her into the World. Look he e, faid she, putting a Paper into Star's Hands: Look and fatisfy yourfelf, what a fine Companion you have had, and read in this Letter the Sentence of my Death, and my Child's Infamy. Cave fell a weeping again, while Star perused the following Note, which you may read if you think fit.

' You ought not to doubt the Truth of what I have often told you, my Quality and Fortune, fince there is no Probability that I should deceive a Person, to whom I cannot recommend myself, but by my Sincerity. This, ' fair Angelica, is the only Way by which I can merit ' your Favour. And therefore you may fafely promife to grant my Request, which I cannot, nor shall not defire 6 to obtain, till I have convinced you of my Reality.'

As foon as the had perused the Letter, Cave asked her, if she knew the Hand? As well as my own, replied Star: It is Leander's, my Brother's Servant, that writes out all our Parts. This is the Traitor that will break my Heart, said the poor Woman; see if he has not contrived it fairly, added she, giving another Letter of the same Leander's Writing into Madam Star's Hands; which you may read as follows, Word for Word.

' It rests only in you to complete my Happiness, by s continuing in the fame Resolution you were in two Days fince. My Father's Tenant, who is used to supply " me with Money, has fent me a hundred Pistoles, and a . Brace of good Horses, which will be more than sufficient to carry us both into England; and being there, I am much deceived, if a Father, who loves his only Son more than his own Life, do not quickly condescend to

· all his Defires, to make him return again.'

Well, said Cave, what think you now of your Companion, and your Brother's Servant? What think you of that Girl, I had bred up with fo much Care; and that -young Fellow, whose Wit and Discretion we have so often admired? My greatest Wonder is, that they were never observed to speak to one another; and that my Daughter's sprightly Humour seemed not in the least to incline her to Love; and yet she's in Love, my dearest Star, and fo desperately, as argues as much Madness as Affection. I found her this very Day writing to her Leander, in such passionate Expressions, that if I had not surprized her myfelf, I could never have believed it. You never have heard her speak such Language yet: Ah! had I not torn her Letters in my Fury, you would have been convinced that at Sixteen the knows as much as those who have prac-

tised Coquetry all their Lives. I carried her aside into the Grove, whence she was taken from me, to chide her for the ill Returns she had made me, for all the Pains and Trouble I had undergone on her Account. I will acquaint you with my Sufferings, added she, and then judge you, whether ever any Daughter was more obliged to love her Mother. Star knew not what to answer to these just Complaints; and befides, it was Wisdom to let her Affliction take its Course. But, continued Star, if he was so fond of the Daughter, why should he abuse the Mother? Nay, I cannot tell, answered Cave; for one of his Company, who had laid hold on me, beat me unmercifully; nay, struck me several Times, after I had done struggling with him. Moreover, if this unlucky Fellow be fo rich as he brags, why does he spirit away my Child like a Thicf? Cave thus bemoaned herself for a long While, Star still comforting her as well as she could. The Master of the House came to know how she did, and to acquaint her that there was a Coach ready at her Service, if she defired to return to Mans; but however, she begged the Liberty to remain there that Night, to which he readily condescended. Star staid there also to keep her Company, while some Ladies of Mans took Inezilla into a Coach with them, she being unwilling to stay longer from her Husband. Roquebrune, who could civilly leave the two Actresses, was very forry he could not wait upon Inexilla, but we cannot have every Thing we defire in this World, therefore he must be contented.



SCARRON's

Comical Romance.

PART II.

CHAP. I.

Which is but an Introduction to the rest.

H E radiant Sun shone perpendicularly upon our Antipodes, and lent no more Light to his Sister than she had need of to guide her Steps in a very dark Night. A profound Silence over-spread all the Earth, unless it were those Places where Critics, Owls, or ferenading Fops are found. In short, all Nature lay hushed in Sleep, (or at least, all Nature ought to have been asleep) except some Poets, who had crabbed Verses to tuen into Measure and Rhime, some of those unsortunate Lowers, whom we call damned Souls,

and all other Animals both rational and irrational, who had that Night any Thing else to do. 'Twere needless to tell you, Defliny was one of, those that did not sleep, no more than the Ravishers of Mrs. Angelica, whom he purfued as fast as he could gallop a Horse, whose Way was ofter obscured by the inosticious Clouds, which robbed the Earth of the feeble Light of the Moon. Destiny had a tender Love for Mrs. Cave, both because she deserved it, and because he was secure of her Assections; nor was her Daughter less dear to him, for his Mrs. Star being necessitated to follow the Stage, he could not have found in all the strolling Companies throughout the Kingdom, two Women more virtuous than they, and fitter for her Companions. Not but that fome of that Profession a:e virtuous, yet according to the general Opinion of the World, who, perhaps, however may be mistaken, they are more light of Virtue, than of old Embroidery or Paint. But to go on with our proper Business: Our generous Stroller galloped after those Ravishers, with more Swiftness and Animolity, than the Lapitha did after the Centaurs. He first went thro' a long Walk, into which opened the Garden-door, from whence Angelica had been carried away, and having extloped a while, struck at a Venture into as little hollow Lane, as are most Lanes in Mayne. This Lane was full of Wheel-tracks and Stones, and tho' it was Moon-shine, yet the Darkness was such, that Desting could not persuade his Steed to go faster than a broken Pace. He was inwardly curfing this crabbed Way, when he felt either a Man or a Devil leaping on Horseback behind him, and clasping his Hands about his Neck. Deftimy was terribly frighted, and his Horse so much startled, that he had certainly thrown his Rider, had not the Phantom who invested him within his Arms, kept him firm on the Saddle. His Horse rode away with him, like a Ho:se in a Fright, and besides Desliny put him on with Spurs, not knowing what he did, being very much difsatisfied, to seel two naked Arms about his Neck, and next his Cheek a cold Face, which breathed Time to the Cadence of the galloping Nag. The Race proved long, by Reason the Lane was not a short one : At last, at the Entrance upon H 3

upon a Heath, the Horse abated his impetuous Course, and Destiny his Fear; for Custom brings us by Degrees to bear with the most frightful Things. The Moon now shone with a clearer Light, on purpose to let him see, that he had a large Man stark naked behind him, and moreover a very homely Face next to his. He did not ask who he was, (whether out of good Manners or not I cannot tell) but still kept his Horse on a gallop, tho' by this Time he too began to breath short and thick; but when it was least expected, the hind Rider dropped off on the Ground, and fell a laughing. Deftiny put on his Horse amain, and looking behind him, faw his Phantom running as fast as he could drive towards the Place from whence he came: Defliny confessed since, that no Man could be more frighted than he was at that Time. About a hundred Steps far: ther, he came to a great Road, that led him to a Hamlet, where he found all the Dogs awake, which made him to think, that those he pursued might have gone that Way. In order to be informed, he did all he could to rouze the Inhabitants of three or four Houses that stood on the Road, but could not prevail, and was infulted and barked at by the Dogs to boot. At length, hearing a Child cry in the last House he met with, he caused the Door to be opened with severe Threats, and there learns of a Woman, trembling in her Smock, that fome Troopers had gone thro' their Town just before, carrying with them a Woman who wept like a Child, and that they had much ado to fill her Noise. He told the same Woman the Adventure he had with the naked Man, and she informed him, that he was a Peafant of their Village who was run mad, and roved up and down. What this Woman had told him about those Troopers who went thro' that Town, encouraged him to go farther, and made him to request his Steed to mend his Pace. I will not recount how often he stumbled, and was frighted at his own Shadow: 'Tis enough to inform you, that Destiny lost his Way thro' a Wood, and siding fometimes in the Dark, and fometimes in the Moonshine, at last met with Break of Day near a Country Farm, where he thought fit to let his Horse feed, and where we will for the present leave him.

CHAP.

C'HAP. II.

Of the Boots.

Hillt Destiny groped out his Way in the Dark, in Pur-fuit of those that had stolen Angelica, Rancour and Olive, who did not take that Rape fo much to Heart, did not run fo fast as he after the Ravishers; and behdes, you must consider they were on Foot, and therefore could not be expected to go far'; wherefore, having found in the next Village, an Inn that was open, they went in there and asked for a Bed. The House being full, they were shewn up into a Room, where one lay, (either a Gentleman or Plebeian, I can't tell which) who had supped in the Inn, and being upon Business which required Fiaste, (but which never came to my Knowledge) reckoned to be gone by Break of Day. The Arrival of our Strollers did not favour his Design of getting betimes on Horseback; for they waked him out of his first Sleep, for which, perhaps, he curfed them in his Heart; yet the Sight of two Men that looked fomething like, was undoubtedly the Reason why he did not complain aloud. Rancour, who had a genteel Behaviour, first begged his Pardon for their interrupting his Repose, and then asked him whence he came? He told them from Anjou, and was going to Normandy, about Business that required Haste. Rancour went on with his Questions while he was undressing himfelf, and the Sheets airing; but as they were all impertinent, and of no Benefit to either, especially the poor Man whom they had waked, he was defired to forbear, and fuffer him to go to fleep. Rancour begged his Pardon heartily, and at the fame Time, Self-Love banishing the Love of his Neighbour out of his Breast, he resolved to appropriate to his Use a Pair of new Boots, which the Offler's Boy had brought into the Room, after having cleaned them. Olive, who at that Time had only a Mind to a found Sleep, went into Bed, whilit Rancour fat by the Fire, not so much to see the Faggot they had lighted burnt out, as to fatisfy his noble Ambition, of having a H 4

new Pair of Boots at another Man's Coft. Now as foon as he thought the Man whom he was about to rob, was fait afleep, he took his Boots, which flood at his Bed's-feet, and having put them on without Stockings, not forgetting the Spurs, went thus booted and spurred into Bed to Oline. 'Tis probable he lay as near the Bed-fide as he could, rest his armed Legs might touch the naked ones of his Eed-fellow, who would, in fuch Case, undoubtedly have raifed a Noise about this new Way of lying betwire two Sheets, and by that Means make his Plot miscarry. remaining Part of the Night was pretty quiet: Rancour flept, or at least diffembled to fleep. The Cocks crew; Day came, and the Man who lay in the fame Room, having ordered a Fire to be kindled, rose and began to dress. When he went to put on his Boots, a Maid offered him Rancour's old ones, which he flung down with Contempt; the Maid obtlinately maintained they were his; whereupon he fell into a great l'afflot; and made a devilifi Noife. The Inn keeper came up upon this Occasion, and swore upon the Faith of an honest Host, that there were no other Boots besides his, not only in his House, but also in all the Village, the Parfon himfelf never going on Horfeback. Thereupon he began to entertain him with the good Qualities of the Parson, and to tell him how he came by his Living, and how long he had been in Poffession of it. The Inn-keeper's idle Talk made him to lose all Patience. Now Rancour and Olive, who had waked at the Noise, took Cognizance of the Matter; Rancour exaggerated the Enormity and Heinousness of the Fact, and told the Inn-keeper, it was a very foul Thing. I care no more for a Pair of new Boots, than for an old Pair of Shoes, faid the poor bootless Man to Rancour, was it not that I am upon a Bufiness of great Importance, for a Man of Quality, whom Pd chuse to serve before my own Father; and if I could buy other Boots, I'd give any Price for them, were they never fo bad. Rancour, who fat up in the Bed, shrugged up now and then his Shoulders, and answered him nothing, keeping his Eyes still fixed on the Inn-keeper and his Maid, (who looked for the Boots to no Purpose) and the Wretch that lost them, who in mean Time

Time began to fret like a Madman, and perhaps designed to hang himself, when Rancour, out of an unexampled and unwonted Generofity, cried aloud, thrusting himself into the Bed, like one who was almost dead for Want of Sleep, Zounds, Sir, don't keep fuch a Noise about your Boots, but rather take mine, upon Condition you will let us fleep, which is no more than what you defired last Night. The unfortunate Man, who now ceased to be so fince he had found a Pair of Boots, had much ado to believe his own Ears. He mustered up a deal of Nonsense to return him Thanks, and which he uttered fo paffionately, that Rancour feared left he should come at last and embrace him a-bed. Wherefore, he cried out in a great Passion, swearing most learnedly: Zounds, Sir, what a troublesome Man you are, both when you lose your Boots, and when you thank those that furnish you again. Once more, take mine in God's Name, and all I ask for them, is only that you would let me fleep, or else give me my Boots again, and after make as much Noise as you please. He began to open his Mouth in order to reply, when Rancour cried out, Good God! let me sleep, or let me have my Boots, one of the two. The Inn-keeper, who by this Time had a great Respect for Rancour, from his imperious Way of Speaking, thrust his Guest out of the Chamber, well knowing that he would have the last Word, like one who was highly thankful for a Pair of Boots fo generously bestowed: However, he was fain to leave the Room, and go into the Kitchen to put on his Boots, when Rancour began to fleep with more Tranquility than he had done in the Night, his sleepy Faculty not being now disturbed, either by his wakeful Defire of stealing a Pair of Boots, or the Fear of being taken in the Fact. As for Olive, who had made a better Use of his Time, he got up betimes, called for fome Wine, and fell a drinking, which was the best Thing he could do. Rancour slept till Eleven of the Clock, and as he was dreffing, Ragotin happened to come into the Room. He had been that Morning visiting the Actresses at their Toilet, and Mistress Star having told him she had but little Reason to think him one of their Friends, fince he did not go after her Companion 115

panion as well as the rest, he promised not to return to Mans before he had learned News of her: But not finding a Horse, either for Love or Money, could never have kept his Promise, had not a Miller lent him his Mule, which he mounted without Boots, and fo arrived (as I faid before) at the Village where the two Strollers had lain. Rancour had a strange ready Wit; for he no sooner saw Ragotin in Shoes, but he thought Fortune had favoured him with an Opportunity of concealing his Theft, which he was before much in Pain how to do. Wherefore, he prefently defired him to lend him his Shoes, and to take his Boots, which being new, hurt one of his Feet. Ragotin accepted his Proposal with much Joy, for as he rid along, the Tongue of the Stirrup buckle had torn his Stockings, which made him heartily to wish for a Pair of Boots. Now, to acknowledge the Favour in some Measure, he paid for the Player's Dinner, as well as his own and his Mule's. And because since his late Fall, (when his Carabine went off betwixt his Legs) he had made an Oath never to bestride again the Back of any Saddle-Bealt, without first taking Care of his Sasety, he therefore made Use of a Jossing-block; yet with all this Precaution, had much ado to get into the Pack-faddle. His Brain was too full of Quick-filver to be judicious; a Sign of which was his turning up the Tops of his Boots to his Waift, which hindered him from having the free Use of his Hams, that were none of the most vigorous in the Province. However, Ragotin being mounted, and the Strollers on Foot, they fet forwards on their Journey, and followed the next Road they came at. As they were going along, Regotin opened his Mind to the Strollers, and told them his Defign by turning Player, and acting but in their Company; protesting that tho' he did not doubt in a short Time he should prove the best Actor in the Kingdom, yet he did not expect any Profit from his Profession, but what he did was only out of Curiofity, and to let the World know, that he was fit for any Thing he had a Mind to undertake. Rancour and Olive fortified him in his noble Delign, and what with commending and encouraging him, they put him at last into fo good a Humour, than from his

his high Station, he began to repeat Verses out of Theophilus's Pyramus and This. Certain Peasants who attended a loaden Cart, and were going the same Way, hearing him speak with the Emphasis of an Enthusiast, thought he could do no less than preach the Word of the Lord; and therefore as long as he rehearsed his Heroics, they walked Cap in Hand by his Side, and respected him like a High-way Preacher.

CHAP. III.

The History of Cave.

HE two Women-Strollers, whom we left in the House from whence Angelica had been stolen, had no better Night's Rest than Destiny. Mrs. Star went into the same Bed with Mrs. Cave; both not to leave her alone in her Despair, and to endeavour by gentle Persuasions to alleviate her Affliction. At last, finding so just a Grief did not want Reasons to defend itself, she used no Arguments to oppose it; only to make a Diversion, began to complain of her own hard Fate, as much as her Bed-fellow did of her's; and thus cunningly engaged her to relate her Adventures, the more eafily, because at that Juncture Cave would not allow any Body to be more unfortunate than herself. She therefore, wiping off those Tears that trickled down her Cheeks in Abundance, and fetching a found and deep Sigh, that she might not have the Trouble to figh so foon again, thus began to tell her Story. I was born a Player, Daughter to a Player; of whom I never heard that he had any other Relations but Players. My Mother was Daughter to a Merchant of Marfeilles, who had bestowed her in Marriage on my Father, as a Recompence for venturing his Life to defend him against a Gally-Officer (as much in Love with my Mother, as he was hated by her) who had attacked him to his Difadvantage. This was an extraordinary Fortune to my Father; for without being put to the Trouble of suing and wooing, he married a Wife, young, beautiful, and richer than a Stroller could ever pretend to. His Father-in-Law endeavoured to persuade him to leave his Profession, and betake himself to the Business

of a Merchant, as the more profitable and creditable Employment of the two. But my Mother, who was a great Lover of Plays, hindered him from leaving the Stage; tho', to give him his Due, he was inclined to follow his Wife's Father's Advice, as one that knew much better than she, that a Player's Life is not so happy as it appears to be. My Father left Marseilles soon after his Marriage, and carried away my Mother to make her first Compagne, she being more impatient than he, and of whom, in a little Time, he made an excellent Player. She proved with Child the first Year of their Marriage, and was brought to Bed of me behind the Scenes: A Year after I had a Brother whom I loved dearly, and by whom I was much beloved. Our Company was made up of our Family, and three other Players, one of which had a Wife who acted under Parts. Upon a Holy-day, going thro' a small Town in Perigord, my Mother, the other Player and I on the Cart that carried our Baggage, and our Men on Foot to guard us, our little Caravan was on the fudden attacked by feven or eight ugly Fellows, so very drunk, that meaning only to fright us with Shooting off a Gun, I felt their Shot all over me, and my Mother received a dangerous Wound in the Arm. They feized my Father and two of his Companions, before they were in a Posture to defend themselves, and beat them unmercifully. My Brother, and the youngest of our Men fled away, and ever fince I could never hear of my Brother. The Inhabitants of the Town joined with those that had offered us this outragious Violence, and caused our Cart to go back. This eager Mob ran fiercely, like People who have got a great Booty, and are willing to fecure it, and made fuch Noise that they did not hear one another fpeak. After an Hour's March, they carried us into a Castle, which we had no sooner entered, but we heard feveral People cry out with great Joy, that the Gypfies were taken; whereby, we found their Mistake, which gave us not a little Comfort. The Mare that drew our Cart fell down dead with Weariness, having been hard put to it, and foundly beaten. The Player to whom the Marc belonged, and of whom the Company had hired her, fell a roaring after as lamentable a Manner as if her Husband had been dying: At the same Time my Mo-

ther felt fuch violent Pain in her Arm, that fhe fainted away, which made me to roar also so loud, that my Cries drowned those of the Player's upon Account of her Mare. The Noise we made, together with the Hallowing of the rude Rabble, and of the drunken Scoundrels who brought us thither, caused the Lord of the Castle to come out of a Parlour, attended by four or five ill-looked Fellows in red Coats or Cloaks. His first Question was, Where, where are the thieving Gypfies? Which put us in a terrible Fright; but seeing none but fair Faces among us, he then asked my Father who he was; and had no fooner heard that we were a wretched Company of Players, but with an impetuous Passion, at which we all wondered, and swearing after as furious a Manner as ever I heard Man, he charged with his Sword those that had seized us, and caused them to difappear in a Moment, fome wounded, and the rest in a terrible Fright. The Mob being thus dispersed, he commanded my Father and his Companions to be unbound, the Women to be carried into a Room, and our Goods to be laid up fafe. Some Chamber-maids came to wait upon us, and got a Bed ready for my Mother, who found herself very ill of her Wound in her Arm. Soon after, a Man that looked like a Steward, came to express his Master's Concern for the rude Ufage we had received. He told us, that the Scoundrels who had made to unlucky a Mistake, fneaked away most of them foundly beaten, or lame, and that a Surgeon had been fent for from the next Town to dress my Mother's Arm, afterwards he asked us very earneflly, whether they had taken any Thing from us, and advised us to view our Goods, and see if there were any Thing wanting. At Night they brought us our Supper into our Room; the Surgeon came, my Mother's Wound was dreffed, and she went to Bed in a violent Fever. 'The next Day the Lord of the Castle sent for the Players, enquired of them how my Mother did, and told them he would not suffer her to go out of his House before she was perfectly recovered. He was so obliging as to fend Men up and down the Country to enquire after my Brother and the young Player with whom he fled away, but they could not be found; which Misfortune increased my Mother's Distemper.

Distemper. A Physician and a Surgeon (more skilful than he who dressed her Wound first) were sent for from a neighbouring Town, and in a short Time our good Usage in the Castle made us to forget the Violence we had suffered. The Lord at whose House we were entertained, was a very rich Man, more feared than loved thro' all the Country; as violent in all his Actions as a Governor of a Frontier Town, and one who had the Reputation of being as brave as Hercules. His Name was the Baron de Sigegnac, at this present he can be no less than a Marquis, but in those Days he was only a petty Tyrant of Perigord. A Company of Gypfies who had lain in his Lordship's Barn, stole away fome Horses out of a Park where he kept Mares for Breed. at a League Distance from his Castle, and the Men that were fent to pursue them, mistook us for them, to our Cost. My Mother being now perfectly well, my Father and his Companions, to express their Gratitude for their kind Entertainment, as far as poor Strollers were able, offered to act in the Castle as long as the Baron de Sigognac should defire it. An over-grown Page, at least four and twenty Years old, who was undoubtedly the Dean of all the Pages in the Kingdom, and a Sort of Gentleman Waiter, studied the Parts of my Brother, and of the Player with whom he ran away. And now bufy Fame proclaimed through all the Country, that a Company of Strollers were to act a Play at the Baron de Sigugnac's: Abundance of Perigordine Gentry were invited to the Show, and when the Page was perfect in his Part, which he found so difficult to learn, that they were fain to cut and reduce it to two Lines; we acted Garnee's Roger and Bradamante. The Assembly was very fine, the Room well lighted, the Stage convenient, and the Scenes adapted to the Subject. We all endeavoured to do our best, and we acted with a general Applause. Mother in the Habit of an Amazon, appeared as beautiful as an Angel, and tho' her late Indisposition made her to look a little pale, yet the Brightness of her Complexion obscured all the Lights in the Room. Tho' I have great Reason to be very melancholy, yet cannot I sorbear laughing whenever I think how ridiculously the Page acted his Part; neither must my ill Humour rob you of this pleasant Faffage;

Passage; perhaps you may not find it such, but I can assure you, it made all the Company laugh heartily, and I have laughed at it an hundred Times since; but whether it was laughable, or because I am one of those who laughed at a very sinall Matter, I shan't pretend to determine. He acted the Duke of Aymon's Page, and had but two Lines to speak in all the Play; when the old Man reprimanded his Daughter Bradamante for resusing to marry the Emperor's Son, (because she was in Love with Roger) the Pagesays to his Masser,

Monsieur, rentrons dedans, je crains que vous tombiez, Vous n'étez pas trop bien asseuré sur vos PIEDS.

This great Oaf of a Page, tho' his Part was eafy enough to remember, yet murdered the fecond Verse, and said very aukwardly, and trembling like a Malesactor,

Monsieur, rentrons dedans, je crains que vous tombiez, Vous n'étez pas trop assuré sur vos JAMBES.

This false Rhime surprized every Body; he that asted Aymon's Part burst out a laughing, and was no longer able to represent an angry old Man. All the Audience laughed as well as he; and I myfelf, who was then peeping thro' the Hangings to see and be seen, laughed also to that Degree that I was ready to drop down. The Master of the House, who was one of those melancholy Persons who laugh but seldom, and never at a small Matter, found his Page's Want of Memory, and his aukward Way of reciting Verses so laughable a Subject, that he was like to burst by endeavouring to preserve his Gravity; but at last he was fain to laugh as well as the rest; and his Men told us fince, that they never knew him so well pleased in all their Lives. Now as he was a Person of great Authority in that Country, there was not one Person of the whole Audience but laughed as much as he, or perhaps more, either out of Complaifance, or a natural Inclination. I am very much afraid, added Cave, I have now done like those who tell People, I'll tell you a Story that will make you die with Laughing, and who feldom or never are as good as their Words: For I must confeis

confess I raised your Expectation too high about the Silliness of my Page. Not at all, answered Star, I have found it fuch as you made me expect it; 'tis true, the Thing might have feemed more ridiculous to those that faw it, than it will to fuch as shail only hear it related, the Aukwardness of the Page contributing much to make it so; and besides, the Time, the Place, and the natural Inclination we have to laugh for Company's Sake, are all Advantages it cannot have now. Cave made no farther Apology, and refumed her Story where she had left off. After, continued she, that both the Actors and the Audience had laughed as much as their rifible Faculty would give them Leave, the Baron de Sigognac ordered his Page to come again on the Stage, in order to mend his Fault, or rather to make new Sport for the Company: But the Page (the greatest Looby that ever I faw) refused to obey the positive Commands of the severest Master in the World. The Laron took his Denial as he was prompted by his hasty Temper, that is to fay, very ill; and his Resentment, which ought to have been small, had he been ruled by Reason, proved afterwards the fatal Cause of the greatest Missortune that could befall us. Our Tragedy was honoured with the Applause of the whole Audience; and the Farce was fill better received than the Tragedy, as it generally happens every where, except in Paris. The Baron de Sigognac, and the rest of the Gentlemen his Neighbours, were fo well pleafed with it, that they defired to fee us act again. All the Gentlemen clubbed to make a Prefent to our Company, every one according to his Generofity; the Baron shewed them the Way, and the Play was given out for the next Holy-day. We played a whole Month before this Perigordone Gentry; during which Time we were treated and careffed both by Men and Women, and besides, our Company was presented with fome old Cloaths half worn out. The Baron entertained us at his own Table; his Servants were extremely officious in waiting upon us, and often told us how much they were obliged to us for their Mafter's good Humour, whom they found quite altered fince Plays had civilized his rough Manners. The Page alone looked upon us as People that had blasted his Reputation for ever; and the Line

Line he had spoiled, and which every Body in the House, even in the very Scullion, repeated to him often in Raillery, was a cruel Stab to him, of which he at last resolved to be revenged upon fome Body or other of our Company. Upon a certain Day, when the Baron de Sigognac had affembled his Neighbours and Tenants, to rid his Woods of a great Number of Wolves that harboured there, and by which, the Country was very much annoyed; my Father and his Fellow-Strollers accompanied him each with his Gun, as did also his Servants. The unlucky Page went along with them, and having found the Opportunity he looked for, to put his ill Defignagainst us in Execution, he no sooner espied my Father and his Comrades separated from the rest, and giving one another Powder and Shot to load their Guns, but he let fly his Piece at them from behind a Tree, and fnot my unhappy Father with two Bullets: His Comrades were fo bufy in supporting him, that they never thought at first to pursue the Murderer, who made the best of his Way, and has fince run the Country. Two Days after my Father died of his Wounds: My Mother resented her Loss to that Degree, that it almost broke her Heart; she fell fick again, and I was as much afflicted as it was postible for a Girl of my Years. My Mother's Illness proving a lingering Difease, the Men and Women that belonged to our Company, took their Leaves of the Baron de Sigognac, and went to feek their Fortune with fome other Strollers. My Mother lay fick for above two Months, but at last recovered, having during that Time received fuch Tokens of Generosity and Kindness from the Baron de Sigognac, as were little to be expected from a Man who had the Reputation of being the greatest Tyrant that ever made himfelf feared in a Country where every Squire pretends to huff and domineer. His Servants, who never found any Humanity or Civility in him before, wondered to fee him converse with us, after the most kind and obliging Manner in the World. One might have thought he was in Love with my Mother, but that he feldom spoke to her, and never came into our Room, (where we used to take our Meals) after my Father's Death, and only fent often to know how she did: However, the Country talked as if

he was great with her, as we have been fince informed. But at length my Mother, confidering she could not with Decency stay any longer in the House of a Person of his Quality, had already defigned to leave it, and retire to her Father's at Marfeilles. She therefore acquainted the Barons with her Intentions; returned him Thanks for all his kind Usage to us, and defired him to add a new Favour to thosewe had already received, which was, to lend us Saddle-horfes for herself and me, till we come to a certain Town, and a Cart to carry our little Baggage, which she designed to fell to the first Man that would give her any Thing for it. The Baron was much surprized at my Mother's Request. Nor was the in a less Surprize than he, finding he would neither grant it nor deny her. The next Day, the Curata of one of the Churches within his Lordship, came to visit us in our Chamber, accompanied by his Niece, a good-natured and agreeable Girl, with whom I was intimately acquainted. She and I went out to fetch a Walk in the Garden of the Castle, and left her Uncle alone with my Mother: The Curate had a long Conversation with her, and did not leave her till Supper-time. When I came back I' found my Mother melancholy and full of Thought; I afked her three or four Times what was the Matter; but could get no Answer from her, only she fell a weeping, and so I wept for Company, not knowing why nor wherefore. At last she bid me shut her 'Chamber-Door,' and then told me, (weeping still more than before) that the Curate had informed her, that the Baron de Sigognac was desperately in Love with her, and affured her besides, that he had so great a Respect for her, that he never durst declare (either by himself or others) his Pailion for her, without offering her Marriage at the same Time. Here she stopped, being almost suffocated with Sighs and Sobs: I asked her once again, What ail'd her? What! Daughter, faid she to me, have I not said enough to let you understand that I am the most wretched Woman in the World? I told her I did not think ' it so great a Missortune for a Player to become a Lady of Quality. Alas! dear Child, faid she, you talk like a young Girl that knows nothing of the World. What (added she) if he should deceive the Curate in order to deceive me?

If

If he does not defign to marry me, as he would perfuade me he does, have I not Reason to fear all Manner of Violence, from a Man fo much a Slave to his Passions? And if he really defigns to marry me, and I confent to it, what Woman in the World can be more miserable than myfelf will in all Probability be, when his Fancy is over? How great is his Hatred like to prove, if ever he should repent loving me? No, no, Daughter, continued she, Fortune is not fo favourable as thou imaginest: Nay, rather fhe defigns to aggravate my Load of Woe; for having deprived me of a Husband whom I loved, and by whom. I-was beloved, she now would force one upon me, who pe haps will hate me, and oblige me to hate him too. Her Grief, which I thought unreasonable, increased to that Degree, that she was like to be stifled with it, whilst I helped her to undress herself. I comforted her as well as I could, and endeavoured to combate her Affliction, with all the Arguments a Girl of my Years was able to frame, not forgetting to tell her, that the obliging and respectful Behaviour which the roughest of all Men had ever shewn in conversing with us, seemed to be a good Omen, and especially his Want of Assurance in discovering his Passion to a Woman, whose Profession is rather apt to embolden a Man in his Addresses, than inspire him with awful Refpect. My Mother suffered me to speak all I thought fit, went to Bed very much afflicted, and cherished her Grief all Night long, instead of Sleeping. I endeavoured for the Sake of good Manners to refift Sleep, but at last was fain to yield, and fo I flept for us both; she got up early in the Morning, and when I awaked I found her ready dressed, and her Mind pretty well composed. I was in great Pain to know what Resolution she had taken; for to tell you Truth, I flattered myself with my Mother's future Greatness, in Case the Baron was fincere and honourable in his Addresses, and my Mother willing to grant his Suit. The Thoughts of hearing my Mother called my Lady Ba onness, filled my Mind with Delight, and Ambition began to inflame my youthful Breast -

Cave was thus recounting her Story, and Star liftning to her with great Attention, when they heard fomewhat

tread in their Chamber, which flartled them the more, in that they remembered they had made the Door fast with the Bolt. The Noise continued, and so they cried, Who's there? No Answer was made; but a Momentaster, Cave faw at the Bed's-feet, (the Curtains being open) the Figure of a Person whom she heard sigh, and who leaning on the Bed, rested on her Feet. She fat up, to view the Thing nearer that had begun to fright her. Being fully refolved to speak to it, she reached her Head out of the Bed, when prefently the Thing disappeared. The being in Company with any Body gives often an Affurance, but fometimes our Fears are never the less for being shared with another. Cave was frighted because she had seen nothing, and Star, because she saw her Companion frighted. They both thrust themselves into the Bed, covered their Heads with the Bed-cloatles, and lay close, not daring almost to speak to each other for Fear. At last Cave told Star, that her poor Daughter mutt be dead, and that it was her Ghost that came to figh by her. Star was perhaps going to reply, when they heard the Thing walk again in the Room. Star thrust herself deeper into the Bed than she had done before; but Cave, emboldened by the Thought that it was her Daughter's Ghost, sat up again in the Bed, and seeing the same Thing appear, fighing as before, and leaning on her Feet, reached her Hand and felt a very rough one; which made her to give a hideous Shriek, and struck her down with the Fright. At the same Time they heard a Barking in the Room, as when a Dog is afraid of any Thing that he meets in the Night. Cave had once more Courage enough to look what it was, and then she saw a great Grey-hound that barked at her. She threatned him with a loud Voice, at which Time he retired barking towards the Corner of the Room, where he vanished out of Sight. The couragious Player rose out of her Bed, and by the Moon-shine which came thro' the Window, discovered in that Corner of the Room, where the Phantom and the Grey-hound had disappeared, a little Door which opened unto a little Pair of Back-stairs. fhe easily imagined that a Grey-hound belonging to the House had crept thro' that Door into their Room; and that.

that having a Mind to lay himself on their Bed, but not dating to do it without the Confent of those who were in it, he had fighed like a Dog, and the Bed being high, as are all old Beds, he had leaned his fore Legs on her Feet, and afterwards crept under the Bed, when Cave first reached her Head out of it: However the Belief of a Ghost being in the Room, had so possessed Star's frighted Soul, that it was a long Time before she could persuade her that it was but a Grey-hound. As afflicted as Cave was, she jeered her Companion about her Cowardice, and referved the Continuation of her Story to another Time, when they should not want Sleep so much as they did then. 'Twas now Break of Day, they fell asleep, and got up about Ten of the Clock, when Word was brought them, that the Coach which was to carry them to Mans was ready to fet out as foon as they pleased.

CHAP. IV.

Destiny meets with Leander.

Estiny in the mean Time went from Town to Town, still enquiring after those he pursued, but could learn no News, nor Tidings of them. Thus he rambled up and down till Two or Three o'Clock in the Afternoon, when Hunger and his Horse's Weariness obliged him to return to a great Village which he had left a while before. Here he found a pretty good Inn, because it stood upon the Road, and where he did not forget to ask whether they had heard of a Company of Horsemen who stole a young There's a Gentleman above who can give you an Account of them, faid the Surgeon of that Village, who happened to be there; for, added he, I believe he has been a quarrelling with them, and has got many a Wound for his Pains. I just now applied to bim an Anodyne and resolutive Cataplasin on a livid Tumour he has on the Vertebræ of the Neck, and drest a great Cut he received in the Occiput. I avould have let him Blood, because he is full of Contusions, but he would not let me, the he has great Occasion for it. He must needs have got a heavy Fall, or else . bave

have been beaten unmercifully. This Country Surgeon took such Delight in mustering the learned Terms of his Art, that tho' Destiny was gone from him, and no Body lest to give him the Hearing, yet went he still on with his Discourse till he was fetched away to let a Woman Blood, who was dying of an Apoplexy. In the mean Time Destiny went up to the Person's Chamber of whom the Surgeon had fpoke, where he found a young Man well clad, with his Head bound, and lying upon a Bed to take his Rest. He was meditating a Compliment to excuse his intruding into his Chamber, before he knew whether he was willing to admit of his Vifit; but he was not a little furprized when at the first Words he spoke, the other rose from his Bed, and ran to embrace him, discovering himself to be his Servant Leander, who was gone from him without taking Leave, four or five Days before, and whom Cave had suspected to be the Ravisher of her Daughter. Destiny was at a Stand, not knowing in what Sort of Tone he should speak to him, by Reason he saw him look like a Gentleman, both in Person and Dress. Whilst he was thus viewing him, Leander had Time to compose himself, for he feemed fomething difordered at first: I am ashamed (faid he to Destiny) I dealt not so frankly and sincerely with you, as I should have done with one whom I value fo much; but you must excuse an unexperienced young Man, who before he was well acquainted with you, thought you to be of the same Make, as are generally those of your Profession, and therefore upon that Score durst not to trust you with a Secret, on which depends the Happiness of his Life. Destiny told him, he could not imagine in what Particular he had distrusted him, fo defired he would let him know it. I have a great many Things besides to tell you, if you are not already acquainted with them, answered Leander; but first of all let me know what brought you hither? Destiny told him how Angelica had been stolen, that he had pursued her Ravishers, and was informed as he came into the Inn, that he had met with one in him, that could give him an Account of them. 'Tis true I met with them (replied Leander with a Sigh) and I did as much against them, as a fingle

gle Man could do against many; but my Sword happening to break in the Body of the first Man I wounded, I could neither rescue Mrs. Angelica, nor die in her Desence, tho' I was fully resolved to do one. They left me in the Condition you fee me, and thinking they had killed me with a Back-stroke they gave me on the Head, (but which did only stun me for a while) they went on their Way in great Hatte. This is all I know of Mrs. Angelica, but we shall hear more anon from a Servant of mine, who is to meet me here, and whom I fent to follow them at a Distance, after he had helped me to mount my Horse, which they left me, because, I suppose, they did not think him worth stealing. Destiny asked him, why he went from him without giving him Warning? from whence he came? and who he was? Not doubting but that he concealed his Name and Condition from him. Leander confessed there was some such Thing, and having laid himfelf down, because the Blows he had received gave him cruel Pain, whilst Destiny fat at the Bed's-feet, Leander recounted to him what you may read in the following Chapter.

CHAP. V.

The History of Leander.

Am a Gentleman of a Family pretty well known in the Province where I was born, and hope one Day to be worth at least four thousand Crowns a Year, provided my Father be at last pleased to die; for tho' 'tis now four-score Years since he has plagued all those who have any Dependence on him, yet he is so well in Health that I have more Reason to sear he will never die, than to hope to inherit three sine Lordslips, which make up his Estate. He designed to make me Counsellor in the Parliament of Brittany, tho' against my Inclination, and for that Purpose sent me to School betimes. I was at the College of La Fleche when your Company came to ast there; there I saw Mrs. Angelica, and sell in Love with her to that Degree, that I could mind nothing else. Nay, I went farther,

ther, for I had the Affurance to acquaint her with my Paffion, at which she was not much offended; I writ to her, fhe received my Letter, and did not look more coldly than before upon me, the next Time I faw her. Afterwards Mrs. Cave being fallen fick, and therefore obliged to keep her Chamber, whilst you was at La Fleche, her Daughter and I had frequent Opportunities of Converling, which she would have prevented had she not been ill; for you know how fevere and referved she is for a Woman of her Profession, which seems to dispense with its Followers not being over nice or scrupulous. From the first Moment I fell in Love, I never went to School more, nor missed a Play. The Jesuits endeavoured to bring me back to my Duty, but having chosen the most charming Mistress in the World, I refused to obey those troublesome Masters. Your Servant, you may remember was killed at the Play-house Door, by the Scholars of Brittany, who made that Year a great Disturbance at La Fleche, because they were very numerous, and that Wine happened to be cheap, which was in some Measure the Reason why you went from La Fleche to Angiers. I did not take my Leave of Angelica, because her Mother was always with her; all I could do, was to appear before her as she went away, with Despair in my Face, and Tears in my Eyes. A pitying melancholy Look which she cast on me, was like to break my Heart. I locked myself up in my Room, wept bitterly the remaining Part of the Day, and all the Night, and the very next Morning changing Cloaths with my Man, (who was about my Size) I left him at La Fleche to fell my School-boy's Equipage, and gave him a Letter for a Tenant of my Father's, who supplies me with Money whenever I asked him for it, with Orders to come to me at Angiers. I began my Journey thither after you, and overtook you at Duretail, where feveral Gentlemen who were then hunting a Stag, obliged you to stay seven or eight Days. There I offered my Service to you, and you entertained me as your Man, either because you was loth to be without one, or by Reason my Face and Mien, which you feemed to like, had engaged you to hire me. My Hair, which I had cut very short, hindered me from

being known again by those who had often seen me with Angelica: Besides, my Man's bad Coat, which I had put on to difguise myself, made me to look like quite another Man than what I was in my own Cloaths, which were finer than a School-boy's generally are. ever Mistress Angelica knew me at first Sight, and has owned to me fince, that she did not doubt, but my Paffion was very violent for her, fince I could abandon all to follow her. She had the Generofity to diffuade me from it, and advised me to recall my wandering Reason. She made me to feel those Rigours, which would have been sufficient to have cooled a Man less amorous than myself; but by my constant Love, I insensibly engaged her to love me as much as I did her. As you had the Soul of a Man of Quality, (of fuch a one I mean as is truely noble) it was not long before you found out that I was not of the Temper of a Servant; I foon gained your Fayour, and besides, the Esteem of all the Gentlemen of your Company; nay, even Rancour did not hate me, tho' he had the Character among ye of loving no Body. I shall not waste my Time in relating all the fine Things which two Persons equally in Love might say to one another, as often as they happened to come together, you know that well enough from your own Experience. I will only tell you, that Mistress Cave suspecting our private Correspondence, or rather, having certain Proofs of it, charged her Daughter never to speak to me more; her Daughter however did not obey her; yet having surprized her writing to me, she used her so roughly, both before People and in private, that after that Time, I found no great Difficulty to persuade her to consent to be stolen. I am not afraid to make this plain Confession to you, knowing you to be as generous as any Man, and at least as amorous as my-Destiny blushed at these Words of Leander; who went on with his Discourse, and told Destiny, that he had left the Company in order to put his Defign in Execution; that one of his Father's Tenants had promised him to furnish him with a Sum of Money, and that he hoped to receive some more at St. Malos, from a Merchant's Son. his intimate Friend, who was lately come to his Estate.

by

by the Death of this Parents. He added, that by the Assistance of his Friend, he did not question but to get over into England, and from thence to make his Peace with his Father, without exposing to his Anger, either his Mistress Angelica or her Mother, whom, in all Probability, he would otherwise prosecute, with all the Advantage that a Man of Wealth and Quality could have over two poor Flavers. Destiny made Leander sensible, that by Reason of his Youth and Quality, his Father would certainly have indicted Mrs. Cave for a Rape, in Case he had not thought of this Way to prevent it. He did not endeavour to make him forget his Mistress; for he was sensible, that Persons in Love, were not capable to follow any Counfel but what was suggested by their Passion, and in a Word, are more to be pitied than blamed; but he highly disapproved his Defign of going over into England; and represented to him, what People might think of two young Strangers in a foreign Country; the Hazards and Fatigue of a Seavoyage; the Difficulty of being supplied with Money, in Case he should want, and lastly, the Attempts to which they will be exposed by Mistress Angelica's Beauty, and the Youth of both. Leander did not endeavour to defend a bad Cause: He asked once more Desliny's Pardon, for having concealed himself so long from him; and Desliny in return, premised to use all his Interest with Mistress Cave, to incline her to be favourable to him. Moreover, he told him, that if he was fully refolved never to marry any Woman but Mistress Angelica, he cught not to leave their Company; adding, that in the mean Time his Father might die, or his Passion abate, or perhaps, be quite extinguished -- Oh! never, never, cried Leander. Well then, faid Definy, to fecure your Mistress's Heart, your best Way is never to lose Sight of her: Be a Player still with us, for you are not the only Man that treads the Stage, when he could follow a better Employment: Write to your Father; make him believe you are in the Army, and try to get Money from him; in the mean Time I will converse with you, as if you was my own Brother, and by that Means endeavour to make you forget the indiffercut Usage you received from me, whilf I was unacquaint-

ed with your Quality and Merit. Leander would have thrown himself at his Feet, if the violent Pain he felt all over his Body, upon Account of his Bruifes, would have given him leave: However, he returned him Thanks after to obliging a Manner, and made him fuch hearty Protestations of Friendship, that from that very Moment he had as great an Effect for him as one Gentleman could poffibly have for another. They discoursed afterwards which Way they should go in Search of Angelica; but a great Noise interrupted their Conversation, and caused Destiny to go down into the Kitchen, where was transacting what you shall hear in the next Chapter.

CHAP. VI.

A bloody Fight at Fifty-Cuffs: The Death of the Inn-keeper, and other memorable Occurrences.

WO Men, one of which was in Black like a Coun-I try School-Maker, and the other in Gray, who looked like a Catch-pole, had laid hold one of another by the Hair and Beard, and now and then boxed it highly after a most cruel Manner. Both were indeed what their Habits and their Looks shewed them: He in Black the School-master of the Town, Brother to the Curate; and the other in Gray, a Bailiff of the fame Town, and Brother to the Innkeeper. This Inn-keeper was then in a Chamber next the Kitchen, ready to give up the Ghost, being fick of a violent Fever, which had fo disordered his Senses, that he broke his Head against the Wall; and his Wound joined to his Distemper, had brought him so low, that when his Frenzy left him, he was fain to part with Life, which perhaps he regretted less than his ill-gotten Money. He had been a long Time a Soldier, and was at last come home laden with Years, and fo light of Honesty, that he might be faid to have less of it than Money, altho' he was extraordinary poor. But because Women are very often catched by those very Things they ought least to be caught by; his twifted Hair, longer than any Peafant's in Town, his curfing and fivearing like a true Son of Mars, a brittling vol 2 Feath

Feather which he wore on his Hat upon Holy-days, when the Weather was fair, and a rufty long Sword that flapped against the old Boots he had on, altho' he never bestride a Horse, all these I say, gained him the Heart of an old Woman that kept an Inn. She had been courted by the richest Tenants in the Country, not so much on Account of her Beauty, as because she got an Estate with her first Husband by exacting upon People, and cheating in the Measure, both of Wine and Oats; yet she couragiously refisted all the Assaults of her Woers, but at last an old Weather-beaten Soldier triumphed over this old Hostefs. This Tavern-Nymph had the least Face, and the biggest Belly of any Woman in Mayne, tho' which Province abounds in Big-bellied People, I leave to the Naturalists to find out the Reason of this, as well as of the fat Capons of this Country. To return to this short big Woman, whom I fancy to fee as often as I think on her: She married our Warrior without acquainting her Relations, and having lived to a crazy old Age, and undergone great Hardships with him, had at last the Satisfaction to see him die of a broken Skull, which she looked upon as a just Judgment for his repeated Attempts of breaking hers. When Destiny came into the Kitchen, mine Hostets and her Maid, helped the old Curate of the Town to part the Combatants, who had grappled one another like two Ships in a Sea-fight; but the Threats of Deftiny, and his magisterial Way of Speaking, brought about what the Curate's Exhortations could not before effect : Whereupon, the two mortal Enemies let go their Hold, spitting half of their bloody Teeth out at their Mouths, bleeding at their Nofes, and with their Hands full of each others Hair both from their Heads and Beards. The Curate being an honest well bred Person, returned Destiny Thanks very civilly; Defliny to do him farther Pleasure, caused those two very Persons to embrace in a friendly Manner, who a Moment befo e had endeavoured to strangle one another. During the Reconcilement, the Inn-keeper ended his obscure Life, without so much as giving Notice of it to his Friends; infomuch, that when they entered his Room after the Conclusion of the Peace, they found there was no more

to be done than to bury him. The Curate prayed over the dead Body, and did it very well, for he was short. His Vicar came to relieve him, and in the mean Time the Widow be thought herself to roar and cry, which she did with a great deal of Ostentation and Vanity. The Brother of the Deceased, dissembled being forrowful, or was so indeed; and the Men and Women-fervants performed their Parts as well as he. The Curate followed Destiny into his Chamber, offering to ferve him to the utmost of his Power, as well as Leander; and in requital, they invited him to eat a Bit with them. Defliny, who had eaten nothing yet all that Day, and had used a great deal of Exercise fell to it with a greedy Appetite; Leander fed more upon amorous Thoughts than Victuals; and the Curate talked more than he eat. He told them a hundered pleasant Stories about the Avarice of the Deceased; and acquainted them with the comical Quarrels which this reigning Passion had often caused him, both with his Wife and his Neighbours. Among the reft, he related to them how he took once a Journey to Laval with his Wife: Now as they came back, the Horse that carried them both having lost two of his Shoes, he left his Wife holding him by the Bridle, at the Foot of a Tree, while he went back as far as Laval, to look for his Horse's Shoes; however he got nothing but his Labour for his Pains, whilst his Wife lost almost all Patience with waiting for him; (for they were come two Leagues from Laval.) She began to be in great Pain about him, when she espied him coming bare foot, with his Boots and Hofe in his Hands. She was not a little furprized at this Novelty, but still durst not ask the Reason of it; for by obeying his Officers in the Wars, he had made himself to domineer at home. Neither did she dare to contradict him, when she was commanded by him to pull off her Stockings, or so much as to ask him why she did it, only she thought it was out of Devotion. He then caused his Wife to lead his Horse by the Bridle, whilst he walked behind and drove him: Thus the Man and Wife, without either Shoes or Stockings, and the unshod Horse, after a tedious and troublesome March, came home at last, late at Night, and all Three very much tired; both the I 3

Inn-keeper and his Wife had their Feet so galled and fore, that they could not walk for almost a Fortnight after. He never was more pleafed with any Thing he had ever done, and when ever he thought on't, told his Wife laughing, that if they had not come bare-foot from Laval, they had been at a great Expence for Shoes, both for themselves and their Hosfe. Deflary as d Leander took not much Notice of the Story, tho' the Curate had promifed a good one, either because they did not find it so pleasant as he faid it was, or by Reason they were not then in a Humour to laugh. The Curate, who was a great Talker, was not contented with this, but had fill a Mind to proceed to another, and told Deffing, that what they had leard, was rothing in Comparison of what he had to tell them about the Inn-keeper's preparing himfelf for Death. "Tis now four or five Days, continued he, fince he knew he was past Recovery; and yet he never was more sparing: He grudged himself all the new laid Eggs he can during his lilnes; had a Mind to know to a Farthing the Charge of his Burial, and even would have abated something of my Fees, the Day I heard his Confession; in fnort, to end as he began, two Hours before he died, he ordered his Wife, in my Hearing, to bury him in an old Sheet, which he knew was fomewhere about the House, and which had above a hundred Holes in it. His Wife represented to him how undecent a Thing it would be for him to be buried in it; but he grew obstinate, and would have no other. His Wife could not find in her Heart to confent to it, and because she saw him unable to beat her, maintained her Opinion with more Affurance than she had ever done, however, without breaking in upon that Duty which an honest Wise owes her Husband, whether he be kind or not. At last, she asked how he could pretend to appear in the Valley of Jekosaphat in that Equipage, and in what Pickle he thought he should rife from the Dead? The fick Man fell into a Passion at this, and swearing as he used to do when he was in Health, Zounds, cried he, J never intend to rife again. I had as much ado to forbear laughing, as to make him understand that he had offended God by thus falling into a Passion, and much mere by what

what he had faid to his Wife, which was a Piece of Prophaneness and Impiety. He made an Act of Contrition for it, the' fomewhat against the Grain, but not without a Promise on our Side, that he should be buried in no other Sheet than what he had pitched upon. My Brother, who burst out a laughing when he heard him so loudly and plainly renounce his Resurrection, could not forbear laughing still, as often as it came into his Mind; this the Brother of the Deceased took Exceptions at, and from Words advancing to Blows, my Brother and he, both equally flurdy and passionate, had laid hold of one another, and perhaps would have still been custing and fighting, if you had not parted them. Thus the Curate made an End of his Relation; having all the while addressed himself to Destray, because Leander did not give him any Attention. He took his Leave of the Strollers with repeated Offers of Service; and Destiny endeavoured to administer some Drops of Comfort to the afflicted Leander, and bid him to hope the Best. As bruifed as the poor Youth was, he now and then looked out at the Window to fee if his Man came, as if his Looking would make him come ever the foone. But when People wait with Impatience for any Body, the Wifett are Fools enough to look towards the Place from whence they expect them; which Reflection shall be the Close of my fixth Chapter.

CHAP. VIII

Ragotin's panic Fear attended with Disasters; the Adventure of the dead Body; a Shower of Cuss, and other surprizing Accidents worthy to have a Place in this true History.

Lander, as I faid before, was looking out at the Window towards the Place from whence his Man was to come, when turning his Head on the other Side, he faw little Ragotin, just arriving, booted up to the Waist, mounted on a little Mule, and accompanied by Rancour and Olive, holding his Stirrups, the one on one Side, and the other on the other, like two great Footmen that walked by the Side of a new Sheriff's Horse on a Lord Mayor's Day. They had heard from Town to Town which Way Destiny went, and

I 4

by often enquiring found him at last. Destiny went down to meet them, and carried them up into his Chamber. They did not at first know young Leander, his Looks it feems being changed with his Cloaths; yet left they should find out who he was, Destiny ordered him to go down and see that Supper was got ready, with the same Authority with which he used to speak to him; and because the Strollers by that began to know him again, and wondered at his being fo fine, Defliny told them, that an Uncle of his in the lower Mayne had equiped him from Head to Foot, just as they faw him; and besides, had given him Money to make him leave off the Stage, which he nevertheless had refused to do, and therefore came away from him without so much as taking his Leave. Destiny and the rost asked one another News about what they all had been looking after, however were never the Wifer for their Questions. Ragotinassured Destiny he had left the Women in good Health, tho' much afflicted for Mrs. Angelica's Rape. At last, Night being come, they went to Supper, the New Comers drank hard, and the rest like sober Men. Ragetin began to be merry, challenged every Body to drink, like a true Toper; broke many a filly Jest, and fell a singing in spite of the Company: But no Body caring to second him, and the Hostess's Brother-in-Law having learnedly represented, that it did not look decent for them to make a Debauch fo near a dead Corps, Ragotin made less Noise, but however drank a great deal more Wine. Afterwards they went to Bed, Destiny and Leander in the Room they had already taken, and Ragetin, Rancour, and Olive in a little Room next the Kitchen, and by the Chamber where lay the Corps of the Deceased. The Hostess took up her Quarters in an upper Room, near that of Destiny and Leander, both to avoid the ghastly Sight of a dead Husband, and to receive the confolatory Visits of her Friends, who came to her in great Numbers; for she was one of the topping Women of the Village, and was as much beloved by every Body, as her Husband was hated. All Things were in a profound Silence in the Inn; the Dogs were afleep, fince they did not bark; all the other Animals slept likewise, or ought to have done, and this Tranquility lasted till between two

and

and three o'Clock in the Morning, when all on a Sudden Ragotin cried out as loud as he could bawl, that Rancour was dead. Now at once he had waked Olive, rouzed Deftiny and Leander, and got them to come down into the Kitchen in order to weep, or at least to see Rancour, who, he faid, died fuddenly by his Side. Destiny and Leander followed him, when the first Thing they saw as they entered the Room, was Rancour waiking up and down like a Max in good Health, which, you know, is no fuch eafy Matter after sudden Death. Ragotin, who went in first, no fooner spied him, but he flew back as if he had been going to tread on a Serpent, or step off a Precipiece. He gave a great Shriek, turned pale as Death, and knocked his Head fo fiercely against Destiny's and Leander's, as he flew out of the Room, that he was like to have thrown them to the Ground, his Fear made him to run as far as the Garden that belonged to the Inn, where he was like to catch cold. Destiny and Leander asked Rancour the Particulars of his Death; to which he answered, that he could not give so good an Account of it as Ragotin, adding, that he was a little crack'd brained. In the mean Time Olive was splitting his Sides with laughing, Rancour stood Speechless and unconcerned, as he used to do upon such Occasions, and neither of them would discover what they knew of the Matter. Leander made after Ragotin, and found him lurking behind a Tree, trembling with Fear more than Cold, tho he was only in his Shirt. His Fancy was fo full of dead Rancour, that he presently took Leander for his Ghost; and was going to run away as he advanced towards him: Next arrived Destiny whom he took for another Ghost, both asked him feveral Questions, but could get no Manner of Answer from him; at last they took him under the Arms, in order to carry him back to his Chamber; but as they were stepping out of the Garden, and Rancour advancing to come into it, Ragotin difingaged himself from those that held him, and looking behind with wild staring Eyes, thrust himself into a Thicket of Rose-bushes, where he was intangled from Head to Foot, and not able to get out Time enough to avoid the Encounter of Rancour, who called him Mad-man a thousand Times, and told him he must be shut up. They

 I_5

all

all three pulled him out of the Rose-bushes; Rancour gave. him a found Slap on the Breech, to let him feel he was not dead, and at last our frighted little Man was carried back to his Room, and put to Bed again. But he scarce. was got into it, when a great Noise of Female Voices, which they heard in the next Room, put them to a Stand to know what was the Matter: These were not the Complaints of one afflicted Woman alone, but the hideous Cries of several together, as when they are in a Fright. Defliny went into the Room, where he found four or five Women with the Hofiels, who were looking under the Beds, and in the Chimny, and were terribly frighted. He asked them what the Matter was? when the Hoftefs, half howling, half fpeaking, told him, she did not know what was become of herpoor Husband's Corps. She had scarce uttered these Words but the began to howl, all the other Women, as if it had been a howling Confort, answered her in a Chorus, and together made so great and lamentable a Noise, that every. Body in the Inn came into that Room, and all the Neighbours and Goers by into the Inn. In the mean Time an arch Pilferer of a Cat, feized upon a Pidgeon, which and unwary Maid had left half larded on the Kitchen-dreffer, and retiring with her Prey into Ragotin's Chamber, hid herfelf under the Bed where he lay with Rancour. The Maid. followed Pufs, with a Faggot-flick in her Hand, and looking under the Bed to know what was become of her Pidgeon, cried out as loud as she could, that she had found here Master, which she repeated so often, that the Hosless and the rest of the Women came to her. The Maid sell about her Mistiess's Neck, and told her she had found her Master, with fuch a Transport of Joy, that the poor Widow was afraid her Husband was come to Life again, for they took Notice that the immediately turned as pale as a Malefactor upon receiving his Sentence. At last the Maid bid them look under the Bed, where they espied the Corps they had been so much in Pain about. Altho' it was very heavy, the greatest Difficulty was not to get it from thence, but to know who had put it there; however they carried it into its Chamber again, where they began to dress it for Burial. The Players withdrew up Stairs to Defliny's Room,

who all this while did not know what to make of these strange Accidents. As for Leander, his Head ran upon nothing but his dear Angelica, which made him as fullen and pensive, as Ragotin was forry that Rancour was not dead; by whose Raillery he was so mortified, that he had not a Word to fay, contrary to his Custom of talking continually, and intruding upon all Conversations, right or wrong. Rancour and Olive were so little surprized, both at Ragotin's panic Terror, and the Transmigration of a dead Corps from one Room to another without any human Affistance, at least that any Body knew of, that Destiny began to fuspect they had no fmall Share in the Prodigy. In the mean Time they were debating the Case in the Kitchen, in order to know the Truth of the Matter. One of the Plough-men, who just then came from the Field to eat his Dinner, hearing one of the Maids relate in a great Fright, that her Mafter's Corps had got up of itself and walked, told her, that as he went thro' the Kitchen by Break of Day, he faw two Men in their Shirts, who carried it on their Shoulders into the Room where it was found. The Brother of the Deceased hearing what the Fellow had said, and highly resenting fo foul an Action, the Widow and her Friends were presently made acquainted with it; all were very much offended at it, and with one Voice concluded, that those Men must certainly be Sorcerers, and that they defigned to do fome wicked Thing or other with the Corps. Whill they were passing this untoward Judgment upon Rancour, he happened to come into the Kitchen, to bid them carry up something for Breakfast into the Strollers Chamber. The Brother of the Deceased asked him, why he had carried his Brother's Body into his Room? But Rancour was fo far from returning an Answer, that he did not so much as exchange a Look with him. The Widow put the same Question to him; he shewed her the like Indifference, which the good Dame did not him; for the at the fame Time flew in his Face as furioufly as a Lioness bereft of her Whelps would have done. (I fear the Simile is a little too Magnificent) Her Brother in Law gave Rancour a found Cuff, the Hoftess's Friends did not spare him; the Maids put in for their Share, as did also the Men, But a fingle Man could not afford

afford Room for the Blows of so many Strikers, who rather hindered one another; Rancour alone against so many, and by Consequence so many against him, was not daunted at the Number of his Enemies, and therefore making a Virtue of Necessity, began to use all the Strength and Activity that God Almighty had put into his Hands, leaving the rest to Fortune. Never was an unequal Fight fo obtlinately maintained; for Rancour preserving his Judgment amidst the greatest Dangers, made Use of his Policy as well as Strength, dealt his Blows with Prudence, and improved them to the best Advantage. He gave many a Box, which not falling full upon the first Check it met, glanced upon a Second, and fometimes a Third, because he generally whirled about when he was going to frike, so that with one fingle Blow, he often extracted three different Sounds, out of three different Pair of Chops. At the Noise of the Combatants, Olive came down into the Kitchen, and had scarce Time to discern his Comrade amidst all those that belaboured him, but he felt himfelf more fiercely attackt even than Rancour, whose Valour and vigorous Resistance now began to strike his Foes with Terror; therefore two or three of those whom Rancour had abused most, fell foul upon Olive only perhaps to get their Revenge. The Noise increased, and at the same Time the Hostess received such a hugh Cuff on her little Piggs-nyes, that she saw a hundered thousand Lights at the fame Time, (this is a certain Number for an uncertain one) and was intirely disabled. She howled and roared more fiercely, and perhaps more heartily than she had done at her Husband's Death. Her Howling brought all the Neighbours to her House, and Desliny and Leander into the Kitchen: 'Tho' these last came with a Spirit of Peace, yet they presently had War made upon them, without faying why or wherefore; they did not want Cuffs and Boxes, neither were they so uncivil as to suffer those to want them, who had been so bountiful as to give them so freely. The Hostess, her Friends, and her Maids cried out Thieves, and were now only bare Spectators of the Fight, some with Eyes black and blue, others with bloody Noses, others again with broken Chops, and all of them with her Headcloaths torn to Pieces. The Neighbours espoused the Quarrel

Quarrel of the Hostess against those she called Thieves; and it would require a better Pen than mine must pretend to be, to describe the noble Cuffs that were afterwards given and received on both Sides. At last Animosity and Fury had so possessed their Breasts, that they began to seize on the Spits, and all other Moveables that one might fling at another's Head. When the Curate coming accidentally into the Kitchen, endeavoured to make the Battle ceafe. To speak the Truth, altho' they all had a mighty Respect for his Character, yet would he, in all Probability, have had much ado to have parted the Combatants, if their Weariness had not inclined them to hearken to his Advice. Thus tho' all Acts of Hostility ceased on both Sides, yet the Noise continued as before; for every one pretended to be heard first, the Women especially before the Men, with their false treble Voices; whereupon the poor good Man was fain to stop his Ears, and run to the Door for Relief. This having filenced the most Obstreperous, he faced about, entered the Field of Battle, and commanded the Inn-keeper's Brother to speak: He first of all complained of the dead Corps being carried from one Room to another, and had so exaggerated the Enormity of the Fact, and he had less Blood to spit out of his Mouth, besides the bleeding at his Nose which he could not stop. Rancour and Olive pleaded Guilty to the Indictment, protesting withal, that they had not done this with any ill Intent, but only to fright one of their Comrades, as they really did. The Curate blamed them very much for it, and shewed them the ill Consequence of such an Action, which was carrying a Jest too far. However, being a Man of Parts, and of great Interest among his Parishioners, he found no Difficulty in adjusting the Quarrel, and so all parted upon even Terms. But wild Discord with her hisfing Snakes instead of Hair, had not yet completed the Mischief she designed to do in that House; for now there was heard in the upper Room fuch roaring, as little differs from that of a Hog when he is going to be stuck, and yet he that roared at this Rate was no other than Ragotin. The Curate, the Strollers, and feveral others ran up to him, and found him funk up to the Ears in a great Wooden-Cheft, where the Hostess kept her Linnen; and what was yet

more grievous to the poor entrapped Ragotin, the Lid of the Trunk which was thick and heavy, had fallen upon his Legs, and squeezed them so, that it grieved ones Heart to fee it. A lufty Chamber maid, who flood by when they entered the Room, and looked very much concerned, was suspected of having put the little Man into so ill a Place. This was the Truth of the Bufiness; and she was so proud of what she had done, that whilst she was making one of the Beds, she did not vouchfase to mind how they could get Ragotin out of the Trunk, nor so much as answer those who asked her the Occasion of the Noise they heard. In the mean Time the little Man was got out of the Trap, and had 10 fooner the Use of his Feet but he ran to his Sword. They hindered him from laving held on cold Iron, but could not keep him from closing with the tall Maid, whom he could not prevent giving him fuch a herce Blow on the Pate, that all the valt Seat of his narrow Reason was shaken by it. This made him to fart three Steps back, but it had been but a Spring towards a Leap, had not Olive held him by the Breeches as he was going to shoot like a Serpent against his dreadful Adversary. The Effort he made (tho' to no Purpose) was so violent, that the Waistba: d of his Breeches was broken by it, he was likewise the Sil nce of the Company, who then all fell a Laughing. The Curate forgot his Gravity, and the Inn-keeper's Brother his Affliction. Ragotin alone was not disposed to Merriment, and therefore turned his Anger against Olive; who being offended at it, truffed him up, and carried him (brandifling his Legs) to the Bed which the Maid was making, where with the Strength of a Hercules, he pulled down his Breeches, (whose Waist-band was already broken) and then lifting up his Hands, and letting them fall quick and amain on his Thighs and Places adjacent, in the Twinkling of an Eye, made them to look as Red as Scarlet. Bold Ragotin flung himself with great Courage from the Bed on the Ground; but this venturous Action was not attended with the Success it deserved; his Foot got into a Chamber-pot, which to his great Misfortune had been left by the Bed-fide; and went in fo deep, that not being able to get it out by the Help of the other Foot, he durst not step from the Bed-side

where he was, for fear of making yet more Sport for the Company, and bringing their Raillery upon him, which he bore more impatiently than any Man could. Every Body wondered to fee him fo quiet, after fo great an Emotion. Rancour suspected there was something more than ordinary in the Matter, and therefore having caused him to some out from the Bed-side, half willing, half not, all the Company then perceived where the Shoe wrung him, and no Body could forbear laughing at the Pewter-foot our Dwarf had made for himself. We shall leave him treading the Metal with Pride and Contempt, that we may go and welcome a new Company which came at the same Time into the Inn.

CHAP. VIII.

The Highery of Ragotin's Foot.

A D Ragatin by his own Strength, and without the Help of his Friends, been able to unpot his Foot, I mean, to get it out of that fourvy Chamber-pot it had so unluckily got into, his Anger would have lasted at least all the Remainder of the Day: But he was fain to abate somewhat of his natural Pride, and be submissive; humbly befeeching Defliny and Rancour to procure the Liberty of his Foot, right or left, I know not whether, for it never came to my Knowledge which of the two it was. He did not address himself to Olive, by Reason of what had passed betwixt them: Nevertheless, Olive came to his Aid, without Entreaty, and both his Comrades and he used their Endeavours to release him. The repeated Efforts of the little Man had made to get his Foot free, had caused it to swell, and those which Destiny and Olive used, swelled it yet a great deal more. Rancour put his Hand to it first of all, but so aukwardly, or rather maliciously, that Rugotin thought he had a Mind to make him lame for ever. He defired him very exneftly to let it alone, as also his Comrades, and so laid himself down upon a Bed, till the Smith they had fent for, could come to file the Pot off his Foot. The remaining Part of the Day puffed pretty quietly in the Inn, tha? Somewhat melancholy betwixt Destiny and Leander, the

one being very much in Pain about his Man, who did not come to bring him News of his Mistress, according to Promise; and the other not finding in his Heart to be merry without his dear Mittress Star; and besides, he was concerned at the Rape of Angelica, and pitied poor Leander, in whose Face he saw all the Marks of deep Affliction. Rancour and Olive foon made a Match with fome of the Inhabitants of the Village, who were at Bowls; and Ragotin, the Operation on his Foot being over, composed himself to rest, whether he was really sleepy, or because he was ashamed to appear in Public after this unlucky Adventurs, I won't pretend to fatisfy you. The Corps of the Inn-keeper was carried to his long Home, and mine Hoftess, notwithstanding the pious Thoughts her Husband's Death ought to have suggested to her, exacted soon after upon two English Men, who were going to Paris, with as much Babarity as if she had been a Dutch Inn-keeper. The Sun was just set, when Destiny and Leander, who could not stir from their Window, began to spy a Coach with four Horses, attended by three Men on Horseback, and four Foot-men. Soon after, the Maid came to defire them to refign their Chamber to the new Company, whereupon Ragotin was obliged to shew himself, altho' he had a Mind to keep his Apartment, yet he was forced to follow Destiny and Leander into that, where the Day before he fancied he had seen Rancour die. Destiny was known in the Kitchen by one of the Gentlemen in the Coach, who was the same Counsellor of the Parliament of Rennes, with whom he got acquainted at the Wedding, fo fatal to poor Cave. The Briton Senator, enquired of Destiny after Anselica, and expressed a Concern that she was not found. His Name was la Garouffiere, which makes me believe he was rather Angewin than Briton, for we find as few Briton Names begin with Gar, as we fee many Angewin ones ending in lere; Norman, in Ville; Ficard, in Cour; and of the People living near the River Garronne, in ac. To return to Monsieur la Garoussiere, he was a Man of Wit, as I faid before, and did not think himself a Country Wit neither, because when his Attendance was not required at Rennes, he generally came to Paris to spend a Sum of Money in the Public Houses, and put on Black when the Court went into Mourning. This being duly verified and recorded, ought to be as good as a Patent, if not of Nobility, at least of Gentility; besides, he was a Wit by the same Reafon that most People pretend to have their Share in ingenuous Diversions, as well those that have skill in them, as proud, brutish and ignorant Coxcombs, who pass their rash Censures both u on Verse and Prose, tho' at the same Time they think it a Dishonour to write well, and would upon Occasion, reproach a Man as much for making Books as for counterfeiting the King's Coin. However, Strollers are the better for these Pretenders, and are the more careffed in all the Towns in which they act; for being the Parrots of the Poets, and some among them who have Wit, writing fometimes Plays, either out of their own Stock, or what they borrow from feveral others, People are in a Manner ambitious of knowing them, of being in their Company. In our Days the World has done Justice to their Profession, and shewed a greater Esteem for them than was done formerly; And to speak Truth, Plays in themselves are a most innocent Diversion, and may be as instructive as entertaining. They are now a-days, at least at Paris, purged from their former Licentiousness; and it were to be wished, the Play-houses were as well cleared of Pick-pokets, Pages, Foot-men, Whores, Orange-wenches, and fuch other Vermine, who haunt those Places rather to nim a Purse, or pick up a Cull, than to hear the silly Jests of Farces: But now Farces are in a Manner exploded, and I am fure there are many private Assemblies where they laugh heartily at low and smutty Equivocations, at which the front Boxes would be offended in the * Hoftel de Burgone: But here let's make an End of this Digression. Monsieur la Garoussiere was overjoyed to find Destiny in the Inn, and made him promise to Sup with the Company of the Coach, which confifted of the Bridegroom of Mans, his Bride, whom he was carrying to her own Country Laval, the Bridegroom's Mother, a Gentleman of that Province, an Advocate of the Council, and Monsieur la

^{*} As much as to fay the Theatre-Royal in London.

Garoufiere, all related to one another, and whom Defling faw at the Wedding where Angelica was stolen away. Add to all these I have named, a Chamber-maid or Waiting woman, and you may find that the Coach was pretty well crammed; not to mention that Madam Bewvillon (for fo was the Bridegroom's Mother called) was one of the largest Women in France, tho' perhaps the Shortest, for I am credibly informed, that one Year with another, fhe wore *thirty Stone of Flesh, besides all other heavy and folid Matters which enter the Composition of a human Body. By this Description you will easily believe the was very Juicy, as all thort Women generally are. Supper was served up, Destiny appeared at Table with that good Mien which was inseperable from him, and which at that Time was not in the least lessened by dirty Linnen, Leander having furnished him with a clean Shirt and Cravat. He spoke but little, according to his Custom; yet had he talked as much as the rest, who all did it very much, he would not, perhaps, have faid fo many impertient Things as they. La Garouffare helped him to a Bit of every Thing that was good on the Table. Madam Bouvillon did the same in Emulation of la Garcufficre, and with fo little Confideration, that in one Moment all the Dishes were empty, and Defliny's Plate fo full of Wings and Legs of Fowls, that I have often wondered fince, how they could raise by Chance such a high Pyramid of Meat, on so narrow a Basis as the Bottom of a Plate. La Garoussiere did not mind what he did, so very busy was he about. talking of Poetry to Destiny, to bespeak his good Opinion of his own Wit; Madam Bouvillon, who had also a Project in her Head, continued her good Offices to the Player, and finding no more Pullets to carve, was reduced to. help him to some swinging slices of a Leg of Mutton. He was at a Lofs what to do with them, and was looking for a Place where to put two Slices he had in both his Hands, when the Country Gentleman, who was unwilling to hold his Tongue to the Prejudice of his Stomach,

^{*} The French has it thirty hundered Weight, but I fancy thirty Store pefficient to describe a Woman monstroughy fat.

asked Destiny with a Smile, whether he could eat all the Meat he had on his Plate? Destiny cast his Eyes upon it, and was not a little surprized to see, almost level with his Chin, the Heap of carved Pullets with which la Garcuffiere and Bouvillon had erected a Trophy to his Merit. He blushed, and could not forbear laughing; Bouvillon was dashed out of Countenance, la Garouffiere laughed heartily, and put all the Company in fo good a Humour, that they broke out into Laughter four or five feveral Times succesfively. The Servants began where their Masters left off; and laughed in their Turns; which the Bride found fo comical, that breaking into immoderate Laughter as she was going to drink, the spurted the greatest Part of the Wine which was in her Glass on her Mother-in-law, and her Husband's Face, and distributed the rest either on the Table, or the Cloaths of those that fat at it. They all began to Lugh agair, except Bouvillon, who coloured at it, and cast an angry Look upon her poor Daughter-in law, which palled a little their Joy. At last they made an End of laughing, because it is not possible to laugh for ever; Madam Bouvilion and her Son wiped off the Wine which trickled down their Eyes and Cheeks, and the young Bride asked their Pardons, having still much ado to forbear laughing. Destiny laid his Plate on the Middle of the Table, and every one took his own Share out of it. They talked of nothing else during the Supper, and Raillery good or bad was carried on to a high Pitch, tho' the ferious Air which Madam Bouvillon put on preposterously, did, in some Meafure, disturb the Mirth of the Company. As foon as Supper was over, and the Cloth taken away, the Ladies retired to their Chamber, the Advocate and the Country Squire called for Cards, and went to Pickett; la Garouffiere and Destiny, who were none of those that know not what to do when they do not play, had together a very ingenious Conversation, and perhaps the Best that ever was held in an Inn of Lower Mayne. La Garcuffiere discoursed with Defign, on all he thought most remote from the Knowledge of a Player, whose Wit and Judgment have generally narrower Limits than his Memory; but Defliny talked of every Thing like a Man of great Skill, and who. under-

understood the World. Among the rest, with all the Nicety of Discernment imaginable, he distinguished those Women who have a great deal of Wit, and never use it but upon Occasion, for those who use it only to be thought Witty. Likewise those Women who endeavour to imitate filly Buffoons, that can laugh at, and even make themselves licentious Allusions, and paltry Equivocations; in a Word, that set up for being the Jesters of their Parish, from those who make up the most lovely and agreeable Part of the Beau-Monde, and are the choicest Company. He spoke also of those Women who write as well as those Men that make it their Profession, and who do not publish the Productions of their Brain, meerly out of a Principle of Modesty. La Garouffiere, who was an accomplished Gentleman, and knew how to cern a Man of nice Breeding, wondered how a Stroller could be fo well acquainted with true Politeness and civil Conversation. Whilst he admires him within himself, and the Advocate and Gentleman, who by this Time had given over playing, upon a Dispute about a faced Card, yawned and gaped frequently, which probably might proceed from an Inclination to fleep; three Beds were got ready for them in the-Chamber where they had supped, and Destiny retired to. that of his Comrades, where he lay with Leander.

CHAP. IX.

Another Disaster which befell Ragotin.

Ancour and Ragotin lay in the fame Bed; as for Oliveshe fpent Part of the Night in stitching up and darning his Cloaths, which had been torn in several Places while he grappled with passionate Ragotin. Those who were particularly acquainted with this Dwarf of Mans, took Notice, that when he custed with any Body, which he did frequently, he ever tore or unstitched the Cloaths of his Adversary, either totally, or in part. This was his surest Stroke, and whoever was to sight a pitched Battle at Custs with him, might have barred tearing of Cloaths, as People are wont to do pushing at the Face in Fencing.

Rancour asked him as they were going to Bed, if he was well, for he thought he looked very ill; to which Ragotin answered, he never was better in all his Life. 'Twas not long e'er they fell asleep; and Ragotin may thank the Respect which Rancour had for the honourable Company that were come to the Inn, whose Repose he cared not to disturb; otherwise the little Man had had but a forry Night on't. In the mean Time Olive was bufy about his Cloaths, and having put them in good Repair, took Ragotin's also, and with the Dexterity of a nice Botcher, made both the Doublet and Breeches straiter, and then laid them again in their Places. Now having passed the greatest Part of the Night in fowing and unfowing, he went to Bed with Ragotin and Rancour. They got up betimes, as is usual in all Inns, where the Noise begins with the Day. Rancour told Ragotin again that he looked very ill; Olive told him the fame, so he began to believe them, and finding at the same Time he Cloaths above four Inches too strait, did not question but that he was fwoln so much during that little Time he had been asseep, and was not a little frighted at so sudden a Change. Rancour and Olive still continued to remember him how ill he looked, and Destiny and Leander, whom they had acquainted with the Plot, told him likewise he was strangely altered. Poor Ragotin was very much concerned and wept at it : Destiny could not forbear smiling, which made the little Man very angry. He went into the Kitchen, where every Body told him of his ill Looks; the like did the Company that belonged to the Coach, who having a great Way to go, were in like Manner got up betimes. They invited the Strollers to Breakfast, and all drank fick Ragotin's Health, who, inflead of thanking them, went out grumbling, and in a heavy Taking repaired to the Surgeon of the Town, to whom he gave an Account of his Swelling. The Surgeon made a long Discant upon the Cause and Effect of his Discase, which he understood, however, no better than Algebra, and for above a Quarter of an Hour entertained him with the obscure Terms of his Art, as little to the Purpose, as if he had discoursed about Prester-John. Ragotin at length grew impatient, and asked him, swearing to Admiration for a little

little Man, whether he had nothing else to say. The Surgeon would have gone on in his Reasoning, but Ragotin threatened to beat him, and had certainly done it, had not the Operator humbled himfelf before his angry Patient, from whom he drew twelve Ounces of Blood, and supped him on the Shoulders at a Venture. The Operation was just over when Leander came to tell Ragotin that if he would promise him not to be angry, he would acquaint him with a Piece of Roguery that had been contrived against him. He promifed more than Leander could defire, and fwore as he hoped to be faved, that he would be as good as his Word. Leander told him he defired to have Witness of his Oath, and therefore carrying him back to the Inn, he there, in the Presence of all, both Masters and Servants, made him to fwear a new, and after told him fome Body had made his Cloaths straiter. At first Ragotin reddened for Shame, and then turning pale with Anger and Indignation, was about to break his dreadful and folemn Oath, when feven or eight Perfons at once began to preach to him with fuch Vehemence, that the he fwore like a Madman, yet he could not be heard. He ceased to bluster; but the Company did not however give over rounding him in the Ears, which they continued doing fo long, that the poor Man had like to lofe his Hearing upon it. At last he came off better than could have been expected, for falling a finging as loud as ever he could, what Songs came first into his Head, that changed the great Noise of confused Voices into repeated Peals of laughing, which from the Matters were eccliced by the Servants, and so passed from the Place of Action, to all other Places in the Inn, whether different Businesses had called different Perfons. Whilft the Noise of so many People's laughing diminishes by Degrees, and is lost in the Air, fomewhat like the Sound of distant Ecchoes, the faithful Chronologer shall make an End of this present Chapter, under the gracious Favour of the Reader, whether courteous or uncourteous, or fuch as God Almighty had made him, fignifies not much.

CHAP. X.

How Madam Bouvillon could not refift a certain Temptation; and befides, how she get a Bunch in her Forehead.

HE Coach that was to go a great Journey the next Morning, was got ready becimes for that Purpose; the Seven that were to go in it, crowded together as close as possible. At the Time appointed it went out, but had not gone above ten Yards before the Axel-tree broke. This made the Coachman to curse his Missortune, and the Pasfengers to curse him, as if he could have warranted the Strength of his Wood. Now were his People to be drawn forth one by one, and obliged to return to the Inn from whence they came; but this did not vex them fo much as when they heard that there was no Coach-maker to be met with nearer than at a large Town three Leagues off. Hereupon they immediately called a Council, but came to no Refolutions, plainly perceiving their Caravan was not likely to be fitted for Action till the next Day. Madam Bouvilion, who had preferved to her felf a great Authority over to her Son, by Reason that the whole Estate of the Family came by her, commanded him in the mean Time to take one of the Servants Horfes, and mount his Wife on another, and fo go visit an old Uncle of hers, who was then Curate of the same Town whence this Coach-maker was to come. The Lord of that Town was likewise a Relation to the Counsellor, and moreover an Acquaintance of the Advocate and Gentleman, and therefore they also resolved to take a Vagary to the same Place, and on the same Account. For this End their Landlady was to furnish them with Horses, which she did, tho' at very great Rates. Madam Bouwillon being thus left alone, either because she was tired, or that the feigned to be fo, or elfe by Reason that no Horse was able to carry her Weight, sent her Servant to-Destiny to desire him to come and dine with her, and whilst Dinner was getting ready spent her Time in dresling. First she curled and powdered, then put on a laced Apron and Nightrail, and afterwards took to Pieces a Point de Venefe

Ass. 3

Cravat

Cravat of her Son's to make her a Commode. After this she opened her Daughter-in-Law's Trunk, and took thence her Wedding-Gown and put it on: In a Word, thus tricked up and adorned, she looked like to any little Venus in a Cloud, tho' that somewhat of the fattest. Now, notwithstanding all these Preparations of hers, Destiny had, no doubt, much rather have dined with his Companions; but then how could he have obeyed the Commands of his very humble Servant Madam Bouvillon? He therefore not knowing how to get free, was forced to comply; but was not a little furprized, when he faw his Paramour fo youthfully dreffed. She received him with a smiling Countenance, took him by the Hands to have him wash them, and squeezed him after a Manner that meant fomething more than ordinary. He, for his Part, was less Solicitous of his Invitation, than the Occasion of it, and therefore often neglected eating, which gave her an Opportunity to press it. He knew not what to fay to her, being naturally no great Talker; but which Defect she plentifully supplyed by her never ceafing Clack. She was but too ingenious to fuffer any Chasm in Conversation for Want of something to say. When a Woman who talks much, meets with a Man that fays little and does not answer her, she always talks the more, for judging of her Friend by herfelf, and perceiving that he has not raparteed to what she advanced, she presently believes he has not been pleased with what was faid; and therefore, to mend the Matter, proceeds to fay a great deal more, which commonly proves as impertinent as her first Discourse was ridiculous. The only Way that I can propose to deal with such Women as these, is to talk as much, if not more than they, for thereby, if they cannot be filenced, their Voices may at least be drowned. As for the matchless Bouvillon, she was the most immoderate Talker of nothing that ever was known, for she not only talked to herself while she was in private, but would answer herself likewise. The silent Disposition of Destiny giving her an Opportunity, she determined to divert him with fome large Relation or other. The Subject she chose to speak of, was the Intrigues of Laval, the Town where she lived; but she never happened to blame

any Person or Action, but she always took thence an Occaon to commend her felf, protesting at every sling of Satyr on her Neighbour, that tho' she was guilty of many Faults, yet in that Particular she was innocent. Tho' Deftiny was extremely mortified at the Beginning of her Difcourse, and made her no Answer, yet he afterwards found himself obliged, for Quietness Sake, to smile now and then. and fometimes to cry out, Oh! that's pleasant, oh! that's strange? both which he often spoke, however mal a propos. As foon as Destiny had done eating, the Voider was brought and the Table cleared. Then Madam Bouvillon clapping herfelf down at the Feet of the Bed, pulled him down by her, and her Servant (letting the Waiters of the Inn go out first) leaving her likewise, drew the Door af. ter her, and shut it : This Madam Bouvillon perceiving. and thinking that Destiny had also observed it, said to him. See, this foolish Jade has shut the Door after her. To which he replied, If you please Madam, I'll go open it. No, faid she, stopping him, let it alone; but you know, continued she, when two Persons are locked up together, as they have an Opportunity to do what they please, People will judge of them as they think fit. 'Tis not on fuch Reputations as yours, Madam, replied Destiny, for People to pass rash Judgments. However, Sir, quoth Bouvillon, one cannot have too much Caution against Slander. Well. Madam, replied Destiny, but People will not talk without Grounds, and fure they can have none when they reflect upon the Inequality of our Conditions. Will you please therefore Madam, continued he, that I go open the Door. By no means, Sir, quoth she, going to bolt it, and adding withal, for as long as People think it shut, it is better it was really fo, that no Body may come in upon us without our Confent. Having faid thus much, and performed the Office of a Friend for herfelf, she turned towards Destiny, giving him to understand by her large fiery Cheeks, and little sparkling Eyes, what Sport she had a Mind to be at; then she proceeded to take off her Handkerchief from her Neck, and thereby discovered to her Lover at least ten Pounds of exuberant Flesh; that is to fay, near the third Part of her Bosom, the rest being dis-K tributed

tributed in two equal Portions under her Arm-pits. This ill Intention of her's causing her to blush, (which sometimes the most impudent will do) her Neck was become as red as her l'ace, and both together might be well taken at any Distance for a scarlet * Riding Cap. All this made Definy to blush too, but it was with Shame, when Pil give you leave to guess what might be the Cause of Madam Bouvillen's blufhing. Then fhe began to complain, that she had something troubled her in her Back, and therefore moving herfelf about in her Harness as if the had itched, begged of Deftiny to thrust his Hands down her Stays to feratch her. This the Youth immediately obeyed her in, trembling all the while, but whilst he was employed in pleafing her behind, she diverted herself with him before, handling his Sides thro' his Waistcoat, and asking him often, If he was not ticklish? Whilst these Lavers were thus pleasing each other, Ragotin came to the Door, and knocking and bawling like to any Mad-man, called out aloud to Destiny to open to him. This Destiny going to perform, drew his Hand all sweaty from Bouwillon's Back, but offering to go between her and the Table, as the shortest Cut, chanced to trip against a Nail in the Floor, which brought him down with his Head against a Bench after that violent Manner, that he lay some Time for dead. Madam Bouvillon in the mean Time catched up her Handkerchief, and having thrown it over her Shoulders, made all the Haste she could to open the Door, which having done, and Ragotin pushing against it with all his Force at the same Time, gave the poor Lady so cruel a Blow on the Face, that it almost flatted her Nose, and also raised a Bumpon her Forehead, of the Bigness of one's Fift. This made her to cry out, she was dead; which, tho' the little Rascal heard, he nevertheless made no Excuse for, but leaping and bounding about the Room like a Mad-man, bawled out, Mrs. Angelica's found! Mrs. Angelica's found! This he did the louder to provoke Destiny's Anger, who was all this while calling for Madam Bouvillan's Maid to come and help her Mistress, which she nevertheless could not possibly hear, by Reason of the Noise

^{*} Caps which Country-Men use, and button about their Necks.

which Ragotin made. At length the Servant came, and brought Water and a clean Napkin, when between her and Defliny there was quickly some small Reparation made for the Damage done by the Door. But however great was Destiny's Impatience to know what more News Ragotin had brought; he notwithslanding would not leave Madam Bouvillon till her Face was washed and anointed, and her Forehead bound up with a Bandage. At last he offered to be gone, but that calling Ragotin a thousand Rogues for the Mischief he had done on the one Hand, while Ragotin drew him after him on the other, to give him a farther Account of his Message.

CHAP. XI.

Of Things that will divert, it may be the least of the whole Book.

IS true Madam Angelica was found again, and had been brought away by Leander's Servant. This Servant had but too much Wit to let any Body know that Leander was his Mafter, and Angelica endeavoured to difguife that by Policy, which Olive and Rancour had done before bluntly. Leander enquired of Madam Angelica and his Servant, whom he made to pass for one of his Friends Where and how he had found her; and which Questions he happened to ask just as Ragatin entered, leading in Destiny in Triumph, or rather dragging him after him, because he could not go fo fast as he would have him. At first Destiny and Angelica embrac'd with reciprocal Testimonies of Friendthip, and with that Tenderness which Friends long absent are wont to shew on an unexpected Interview. Leander and the careffed only with their Eyes, leaving farther Remonstrances of Kindness to a private Meeting. In the mean Time Leander's Servant began his Story after the following Manner, treating his Master all the while like his Friend. After I had left you, quoth he, addressing himself to Leander, I pursued the Ravishers of Angelica, according as you had defired me, till Sun fet, when, and not before, I lost Sight of them. Next Morning I was not a little surprized, to find the Lady I looked after at the Entrance of a Wood alone, on Foot, and all dissolved in Tears. Here-K 2

upo

upon having acquainted her that I was your Friend, and that it was at your Request that I had gone in Quest of her, the feemed to be fomewhat comforted, and begged of me to conduct her to Mans, or at least to carry her to Leand r if I knew where to find him. Now Madam, continued he, turning to Angelica, it must be your Part to relate the rest, for you know you were so afflicted on the Road, that I did not care to ask you any Questions. Those that were least curious of all the Company, had yet a Mind to learn from Angelica's own Mouth the Account of fo strange an Adventure; for strange it might well seem to them, that a young Lady should be carried away with such Violence, and be afterwards furrendered, or rather abandoned without the least Force. In order to this Relation, Angelica first defired they would help her to a Bed; but which they not being able to do, by Reason the Inn was at that Time full, the honest Curate obliged her with a Chamber in his Sifter's House, which was the next Door. Now Angelica had not so great Occasion for a Bed to sleep on, as to rest herself upon; therefore Destiny, and Leander with the rest of the Company, were admitted to her Bed-fide as foon as she was laid. Altho' she would have been glad that Leander should have had an Opinion of her Constancy, yet could not the well look upon him without blushing. The observing of this made him to pity her. Confusion extremely, and in order to divert her from doing herself any Diskindness, he immediately put her upon relating that Part of the Adventure which his Servant could not. This Request of his she forthwith proceeded to gratify, as foilows. You may imagine, quoth she, my Mother and I were not a little furprized, when while we were walk ing together in the Garden that adjoins to our House, we faw all of a Sudden, a little Door open, which looks toward the Country, and five or fix Men enter thereat, who immediately seized upon me, without regarding my Mother, and carried me away, half dead with Fear, to their Horses. My Mother, whom ye all know to be one of the most resolute Women in the World, fell furiously upon the first of those she overtook, and reduced him to that Condition, that he could not possibly get out of her Hands till he had called

called one of his Companions to his Assistance. The Person that refcued him, who was fo bafe as to beat my Mother, as I heard him afterwards brag on the Road, was, it feems, the Author of this Enterprize. He nevertheless came not near me all that Night, during which we marched like Persons pursued by an Enemy, and that thro' the most Byroads; for otherwife the Noise I made might have been fufficient to have allarmed fome Body to my Relief. They fo managed the Matter, that we met with but one little Village in our Way; the Inhabitants thereof I foon raifed with my shrill Notes, who nevertheless were not numerous enough to rescuse me. The Morning came, and then my Ravisher approached me; who had no sooner seen me than he flew from me in great Passion, and afterwards assembled a Council of his Companions, which lasted about half an Hour. My Ravisher after that seemed to be enraged as much as I was grieved, and often favore to make the Devil to do among his Companions. Their tumultuous Assembly being at an End, I could by no Means come to know what Refolves they had agreed on. We were put on our March again; and from that Time forward I had less Respect paid me than before. They quarrelled with me as often as they faw me uneasy, and curfed me as if I had been some great Offender. They carried me away, as you might perceive, fpeaking to Leander, with a Player's Habit on, which they hid by throwing one of their Cloaks over me. They met a Man upon the Road, of whom they endeavoured to inform themselves of some Matters. I was surprized to see it was Leander, and I believe he was no less astonished to fee me; for he knew me as foon as ever I discovered my Habit, as well as by my Face. He may inform you if he pleases what he did. For my Part, seeing so many Swords drawn upon him, I fainted away in the Arms of him that held me upon the Horse, and when I came to myself, found we were again upon our March, but faw Leander no more till now. Hereupon I began to redouble my Cries; but my Ravishers, whereof there was one Wounded, litt e regarding me, took their Way cross the Country, and last Night stopped at a little Village, where they lay and passed for Soldiers. This Morning, at the Entrance of a Wood K 3 they

they met a Man with a young Gentleweman on Horseback; her they immediately unmasked, and having so done, it feems, knew her, when taking her from her Guardian, and bestowing on him a few Blows of a Cudgel, they rid away with her, as they had done with me; the making as great, if not greater Lamentations than I had done. When I heard her Voice, I fancied I knew her, but could not be positive. After we had got about fifty Paces into the Wood, the Man that feemed to have the Command of the reft, rid up to the Person that carried me, and cried to him, Set down that flabbering Milkfop you have behind you, and let her shift for berself. Herein he was immediately obeyed, and I was all of a Sudden left alone upon the Ground. The Dread I had to be thus alone would have certainly been the Rud of me, had not this Gensleman here, (meaning Leander's Servant) who brought me hither, followed at a Diffance, and found me in that Condition. The rest he has acquainted you with: But, continued the, addressing herself to Destiar, I believe that fame Lady which was preferred to me might be your Sister, my Companion; and the Reason I have for it, is not only the Resemblance of her Voice with that I heard, but likewife the Man that carried her, I dare be positive, was the Servant you took last. What's that you tell me, quoth Destiny somewhat disturbed. I tell you my Thoughts, replied Angelica, but I may be deceived, one Person may be like another; yet still I fear it was she. I fear so too, replied Delliny, with his Countenance much changed, for I have some Reason to apprehend a certain Perfon in this Province for an Enemy, that would do me fuch a good Turn. But how came she at the Entrance of a Wood, continued he, when Ragotin left her Yesterday at Mans? 1'11 go fend away one of my Friends thither prefently, purfued he, to know the Truth, while I stay behind to determine a Refolution fuitable to the News he brings. As he had done speaking, he heard some Body call him out of the Street, and slepping to the Window, perceived it was Monsieur la Garouffiere, who was just then returned from his Visit, and who told him, he had fomething of Importance to communicate to him. He went down to wait on him, and thereby left Leander and Angelica together, to enjoy

each other after so tedious an Absence, and to pour out their Sighs and Vows into one another's Bosom. I fancy it would have been no small Pleasure either to have seen or heard them; but still their greatest Happiness was to have been alone. During this, Destiny demanded of la Garoussiere what he had to fay to him. Do you know a certain Gentleman called Ver-ville, quoth Garouffiere, and he is one of your Friends? He is the only Person that I have been obliged to in the World, replied Defliny, and whom I honour most, and who I believe has the like Kindness and Respect for me. I believe the same, answered Garouffiere, fo: I met him To-day at the Gentleman's where I dined. and all his Discourse was of you. He asked me a hundred Quellions concerning you, without my being able to fatisfy him any; and if I had not promised to fend you to him, he would certainly have come hither himfelf to wait on you before now, altho' he has a great deal of Business upon his Hands where he is. Deftiny thanked him hear. tily for his kind Information, and having learned farther from him, where his Friend Ferville was, resolved to go to him that very Minute, hoping to learn from him fome News of his Enemy Saldagne, whom he knew very well to be the Author of the carrying away of Angelica, and, provided the was not millaken in the Voice the heard, of the Ravishing of his dear Sair likewise. He defired his Companions to return immediately to Mans, and to congratulate Mrs. Cave in his Name, upon the News of her Daughter's being found; and moreover defired of them either to fend a Min on Purpole, or elle some one of themto come speedily back, and bring him Word how his dear Madam Star did, provided he could but hear any News of her there. He informed himfelf farther of Garouffiere, which was the Way to the Town where Verville was to be found. After which, having made the Curate to promife that his Sister should take Care of Angelica, till such Time as he fent for her from Mans, he took Leander's Horse, and got about Night to the Town where Verville was. He did not think proper to go to look after Verville himself, for fear he might meet Saldagne at his first coming, whom he knew to be thereabouts, and therefore stepping in at a little Hedge K 4. Cabaret .

Cabaret hard by, he fent the Boy to Verville, to let him know that the Gentleman whom he had defired to fee, was there waiting for him. Verville came, and throwing his Arms about Defliny's Neck, continued for fome Time embracing him, being scarce able to shew the Love and Tenderness he had for him.

CHAP. XII.

Which perhaps will entertain its Reader as little as the foregoing.

TErville and Destiny gave an Account to each other of all Matters concerning them, which they were feparately ignorant of. Verville tells Definy of the wondrous Brutality of his Brother St. Far, and of the great Patience of his Wife in bearing with him. Thence he takes an Occasion to extol his own Happiness, in having so good a Woman to his Wife, and afterwards tells him News of the Baron D'Arques his Father, and of Monsieur de St. Sauveur. Destiny, on his Part, relates all his Adventures, not concealing the least; and Verville farther acquaints him, that Saldagne still continued to live thereabouts, as ill a Life as ever, promifing withal, that if Madam Star was to be found in his Cuffody, he would do all that lay in his Power to recover her out of his Hands, at the Hazard both of his own Life, and those of his Friends, which he could command. He farther tells him, that he had no Place to retire to, but his Father's, and another Gentleman's in the Country, who was as bad as he, and befides, who had little or no Estate to maintain himself, and therefore could not be able to entertain another long. He must therefore, continued he, come to our House speedily, if he will remain in our Province. My Father bears with him, 'tis true, on Account of some Relation; but my Brother St. Far cares no more for him, whatever Friendship has been formerly between them. I would advise you therefore, proceeded he, to come along with me to my Father's To-morrow, and I will place you so that you shall observe all he does, and notwithstanding be seen by no Body but those you have a Mind to fee. Deftiny liked this Advice of his Friend Verville's

very well, and resolved to follow it; but Verville being to fup that Night with the Lord of the Town, an old Man his Relation, who had defigned him for his Heir, it could not be put in Execution till the next Morning. Destiny for his Part, supped only on what he could find in the Cabaret, and went to Bed betimes, that he might not make his Friend wait for him the next Day, for they had defigned to be on their Journey by Sun-rifing. At the Hour appointed they fet forth, and as they rid along, for three Leagues together, entertained each other with those Particulars they had not Time to speak of before. As foon as they were got to their Journey's End, Verville placed Deftiny in the House of a Servant of his, whom he had married not long before to a Woman in that Town, and who lived very prettily, not far off from the Baron D' Arque; his Father. He gave particular Orders that he should be kept private, and promifed he would return to him in a very short Time. It was not above two Hours before he did return accordingly; but acquainted Destiny at first Dash, that he had bad News to tell him. Hereupon, Deftiny began to grow pale and to tremble, but Verville foon removed the Cause thereof, by the following Relation. I was no fooner alighted, quoth he to Destiny, but I faw your Friend Saldagne carried between four Men into a Ground Chamber, and that by Reason of a Fall he had got from his Horse, which had so bruised him, that he was not able to walk. At first Sight of me he told me he had Occasion to speak with me, and defired me to come to his Chamber after the Surgeon, who was then prefent, had done dressing his Leg, which had been extremely shattered by his Fall. I came accordingly, and as foon as we were alone, he began thus. I must, says he, confess all my Faults to you, tho' you are the least indulgent of any of my Cenfurers, your Prudence being a continual Terror to my Folly. He afterwards owned he had carried away a Woman Player, for whom he faid he had had a Kindness all his Life long, and would tell me the Particulars thereof. which he believed I would be furprized at. He told me consequently, that the Gentleman I was speaking of before, who had been used to entertain him, having been obliged

K 5

to leave the Province on Account of fiding with a Brother of his, who had been found to have made bad Salt, he was forced to bring his Booty to my Father's House, and that he had defired of his Sifter, my Wife, that she would conceal her in her Apartment, for fear this Action of his should come to his Father's Knowledge, which he faid, he dreaded. He afterwards conjured me to lend him one of my Servants, by Reason his own were great Blockheads, that might conduct her fafe to an House of his in Britany, whither he faid he would follow as foon as ever he could well mount his Horse. He asked me farther, if I could not procure him a Man or two more to accompany my Servant, for well he knew how difficult a Thing it would be for three Men to carry off a Woman fo far without her Consent. I made him believe it was an easy Matter, the better to ferve you. Now, continued Verville to Deftiny, his Servants are altogether Strangers to you, and mine is a very cunning Fellow, and faithful to me, therefore I will cause him to tell Saldogne that he will take a. long with him a flout Fellow, an Acquaintance of his to his Affifiance; and the fame Fellow I defign shall be you. Therefore, purfued he, your Mistress must be acquainted with this, and this very Night that they think to get a great Way by the Help of the Moon, she must feign herfelf fick in the first Village; then will they be obliged to ftop; my Servant shall make Saldogne's Men drunk. She shall afterwards feem to recover, and then proceeding on in their Journey, it will be an eafy Matter for my Man to impose on the Drunkards, and to make them believe that you come behind with their Charge, when it shall be contrived, that you shall go a quite contrary Way, and so carry your dear Star quite off. Defliny found a great deal of masterly Contrivance in this Proposal of Verville's, and whose Man, whom they had just then sent for, entered the Chamber much at the same Time. They consulted together what they had to do, and agreed on all Points. Afterwards Verville retired with Deftiny the rest of the Day, being unwilling to part with him fo quickly after fo long an Absence, tho' he nevertheless hoped to see him again at Bourbon, whither he was to go. At length Night came

and Deffiny went with Verwille's Servant to the Place appointed. Saldagne's two Men failed not to be there likewife, when Verville, by Saldagne's Order configned into their Hands the Charge of Madam Star. You cannot imagine what Joy enflamed these two Lovers Hearts at this Interview, but speak they must not, and look languishingly they dare not, so that their Passion might be well termed inexpressible. They had not gone above half a League before Madam Star began to complain. Her Attendants exhorted her to take Courage till the came to a Town about two Leagues off, where they gave her Hopes she should rest. Her Malady increased at every Step, and Verville's Man and Destiny did all that in them lay to prevent Saldagne's Servants from mistrusting the Reality of her Sickneis, so near to the Place they set out from. At last they atrived at the Town, and immediately went to the Inn (whereof there was but one in all the Place) which they happily found full of Guelts and Drunkards. Madam Ster continued to grunt, and feigned Sickness better by Candlelight than the had done by Day-light. She called for a Bed, and lay down in her Cloaths, requiring her Guards but to leave her for an Hour only, and she did not question, but by that Time the should be fit to get on Horseback again. They left her, and Saldagne's Servants left all other Matters to the Management of Verville's Man, who had had their Matter's Orders. For their Parts, they thought they had no more to do than to make much of themselves and therefore flruck in with a jolly Company of roaring Boys, who were placed round a Table, pelting one another with Healths as thick as Hailshot, from the Mouth of a Demi-Culverin. Ver-ville's Man would fometimes flop in and take his Glass to renew the Fight, when there was like to be any Ceffation of Arms; the Reason he gave for his often flinching, was, his having the Care of the Lady, but the Truth was, he had a Mind to get an Oppo tunity to mount her and Destiny, and send them away, which he foon after did by By roads; but therein varied from the Stratagem his Mafter had laid, as you may have bler ed before. After he had to done, he returned to his D. unkards, amufing them with flim flam Stories, and telling

ing them the Lady was for the present gone to sleep, but that she would soon awake, and then they would be jogging onwards of their Journey. He told them like-wife, that Deftiny was gone into the Stable to look after the Horses, but would return presently. He then put about the Glass, and toasted several Healths, all which Saldagne's Men took in Bumpers, till at last their Heads grew so heavy, that they could not possibly lift them from the Table. It was therefore they were forced to be carried out and thrown upon a Lump of Straw in a Barn, for Beds they were not fuffered to lie upon, for fear they should have spoiled the Sheets. Verville's Man feigned himself drunk likewise, but which he really was not, by Reason he had often baulked his Glass. In the Morning he waked betimes, and going forrowfully to his Companions in the Barn, told them that their Charge was flown, but that he had fent his Friend Destiny after her, who he hoped would overtake and bring her back. However, he thought it both theirs and his Duty to mount immediately, and affift in the Pursuit, and therefore bid them rise instantly and prepare to be gone. It was at least an Hour besore he could make them comprehend what he faid, and I'll affure you, it was near eight Days after before they were wholly fober. As all the Inn was drunk that Night, even from the Hostess to the Scullion-wench, so no Body took the least Notice when Destiny and his dear Star went off; and I believe they scarce remembered the next Day whether they had feen any fuch People there or not. Whilft Matters pass thus, and Verville's Man pressed his sluggish Companions to be gone, Destiny had gained Ground a Pace with his dear Fellow-Traveller, not doubting in the least but that his Friend behind had taken Care, whenever they got out, to lead his Pursuers a contrary Way. The Moon shone out very bright, and the Road they had to go was extremely good, which led them to a Town whither we will bring them in the following Chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

A bad Action committed by the Sieur la Rappiniere, and a farther Account of Madam Star's and Destiny's Travels.

Estiny as he rode along, had a great Desire to know from his dear Star, how she came to the Wood where Saldagne had seized her; but this, tho' he would have willingly been fatisfied, yet fill he had more Regard to their Safeties, and therefore frent all his Time in spurring and switching his own, and his Mistress's Beast forwards. At length the two Lovers had leifure to entertain each other, which they did, with all the Expressions and Demonstrations of Love and Affection imaginable. Then proceeded Madani Star to tell Destiny how many good Turns she had done her Mother, Mrs. Cave, and how extremely, she believed, she would be afflisted at her Absence. As for my Part, continued she, you may well imagine I had as great Need of Consolation as she, for as foon as your Valet had brought me a Horse from you, and withal, acquainted me that you had found the Ravishers of Angelica, but were wounded. I .--, I wounded! quoth Destiny, interrupting her, I never was yet, no, nor in the least Danger of being so, neither did I ever fend you any Horse. There must be some Mystery in this, continued he, which I have not comprehended yet. I wondered indeed what made you ask me so often how I did, and whether the going fo fast did not incommode me; but now all's out. You rejoice and torment me at once, answered Madam Star, with this Relation. Wounds caused me a great deal of Disquiet, 'tis true, and now what you tell me inclines me to believe, that your Servant has been gained over to our Enemies, out of some ill Defign they have projected against us. He has rather been debauched, replied Desliny, by some that are too much our Friends. I have no professed Enemy, continued he, but Saldague, and it is unlikely that he should have feduced my Servant, because I know he beat him at that Time that he met with you. How came you to know that, faid

said Star, sor I don't remember I ever told it you? You shall know, replied Defliny, as soon as ever you have made me acquainted with the Manner of your coming from Mans. I can acquaint you with no more, quoth Star, than what I have told you already. The Day after, proceeded the, that my Mother, Mrs. Cave, and I, came to Mans, your Servant brought me a Horse from you, and told me with Tears in his Eyes, that you had been wounded by the Ravishers of Angelica, and that therefore you defined I would make all the Hafte I could to you. I got on Horseback prefently for that Purpose, altho' it was very late. I lay about five Leagues from Mans, at a Place whose Name I have forgot, and next Day, at the Entrance of a Wood, we were flopped by Persons I did not know. I faw your Servant beaten, and was extremely concerned at it, but could not hinder it. I faw likewise a Woman fuddenly thrown off a Horse, and whom I afterwards knew to be my Companion, but the great Fright I was then in, joined with the extraordinary Concern I had foryour Safety, made me to take little Notice of it. They mounted me in the Place of her they had pulled off. We travelled till Night, and afterwards having gone a great deal more Ground, for the most Part cross the Country, we arrived at a Sort of Gentleman's House, where I obferved they would not receive us. It was there that I first knew Saldagne, the Sight of whom caused me immediately to despair. We travelled after that a great Way farther, and at length I was fecretly conveyed into the House where your Friend found me. As Madam Star had just ended the Relation of her Adventures, the Day began to appear, whereby they perceived they were in the high Road that leads to Mans. They forthwith whipped their Horses sorward more vigorously than they had hitherto done, to reach a Town they faw before them. Deftiny defired earnestly to catch his Servant, and thereby to difcover what other Enemy he had in that Country besides his protested one, Saldagne; but there was no Likelihoed that he would fuffer himself to light into his Clutches, after the ill Trick he had plaid him. He learned from his dear Star, all that she knew concerning her Companion Angelica;

Angelica; but while they were thus amusing each other with Questions and Answers, their Horses started all of a Sudden, at the Sight of a Man that lay at his full Length under a Hedge. Destiny's Horse almost leaped from under him,. and Madam Star's was fo frighted, that it quite threw her off, violently upon the Ground. After Deftiny had recovered himself, he went to see how his Love fared, but could scarce alight to assist her, his Horse so snussed, pranced, and tripped. At last he made shift to leap offlis Back, and found, to his great Joy, that his dear Star hall got no Hurt. After this, the Horses being somewhat cometo themselves, he went up to observe the Cause of their Fright, and found it was a Man, whom he took either to be dead or afleep. Upon a neurer View he faw he was both, for he was dead drunk; altho' his Snoring thewest him to be alive, yet Destiny had no finall Trouble to awake him. At length, by often pulling and tearing about, he opened his Eyes, and thereby discovered himself to his Master to be his Servant, whom he had longed fo much tofind. The Rogue, as drunk as he was, nevertheless knew his Master, and by the Fear he seemed to have of him, betrayed his being Author of what he had before doubted of. Deftiny immediately asked him several Questions succeffively, without waiting for Answers, as first, Wby he told Madam Star that he was avounded? Why he carried her away from Mans? And whither he defigned to have carried her? By aubofe Order be bad the Horfe and the like. To all which nevertheless, he could not get a Word in Anfwer, either because the Rascal his Man was too drunk to have the Use of his Tongue, or else by Reason he seigned himself to be so. This made Destiny to fly into a great Passion, insomuch, that having struck him two or three Blows with the Flat of his Sword, he took a Halter and tied his Hands fast behind him and fastened the other End t) the Crupper of his Horse, intending to make him march in that Manner to his Journey's End. After which he mounted Star upon her Holfe again, and having fratched a good Cudgel out of the Hedge, got up himself to poceed on his Journey, his Man walking all the Way b his Side, like a Greyhound in a Slip. The Town which Def-

tiny faw before him, happened to be the fame that he had parted from two Days before, where he had met Monficur la Garouffere, and where his Company Aill remained, by Reason of a grievous Colera Morbus that Madam Bouwillon had had ever fince. When Defliny arrived, he found neither Rancour, Olive nor Ragotin, they having all returned to Mans the Day before. As for Leander he had never quitted in the least his dear Angelica, I need not tell you after what Manner she received Madam Star; it may be easily gueffed what Caresses two such Lovers would lavish away upon each other, after fo many Dangers escaped on either Side. Destiny immediately informed Monsieur la Garouffiere of the Success of his Expedition, and a little after his Man being brought in, who was not yet unbound, he proceeds to ask him the same Questions as before; to which nevertheless the Rascal stood mute, as he had formerly done. This Obstinacy of his caused his Master to order a Hand Vice to be fetched from a Gun-fmith's, wherewith to squeeze his Thumbs, and make him confels by those Means. At the Sight of the Engine, the Rogue immediately fell a trembling, and falling down on his Knees, begged heartily for Pardon; confesting at the fame Time, that la Rappiniere had fet him on to do what he had done, and that he had moreover promifed him for Recompence to take him into his Service. He faither owned, that la Rappiniere was then at a House about two Leagues off, which he had usurped upon a poor Widow. Destiny continued talking in private for some Time with Monsieur la Garouffiere, who soon aster sent a Footman to let la Rappiniere know that he would speak with him about an Affair of Consequence. The Counsellor of Renres had it feems a great Influence over the Provost of Mans. He had formerly prevented his being broke on the Wheel in Brittany, and had likewife always made it his Business to protect him whenever he came to be accused of any Crime, and that not because he thought him innocent, being fatisfied that he had been guilty of various Offences, but by Reason that he had married a Relation of his. The Servant that was fent to la Rappiniere, found him just then getting on Horseback to go to Mans, but no forner

had he heard that la Garouffiere had fent for him, but he put off that Journey to go wait on him. In the mean Time la Garouffiere, who had some Pretence to Wit, drew out of a Scrutore several Copies of Verses of divers Kinds, all which he read to Desliny, and afterwards shewed him, to pass away the Time, the sollowing Novel translated from the Spanis.

CHAP. XIV.

The Judge in her own Cause. A Novel.

T was in Africa, among the Rocks by the Sea fide, and not distant from the famous City of Fez above half an Hour's Journey, that Prince Muley, Son to the King of Morocco, after having straid from his Companions while he was hunting, happened to be left alone. The Sky was without the least Cloud, the Sea calm, and the Moon and Stars shone out so bright, that they, in a Manner, rivaled the Sun: In a Word, all these agreeable Accidents met together, made one of those Nights, which in hot Countries, like this, are far more pleasant than what we call the finest Days in our Northern Regions. The Moorish Prince gallopping along the Shore, diverted himfelf with beholding the exceeding Brightness of the Moon and Stars, . and which communicated their Splendor to the Water, wherein they were also to be seen as in a Mirror. As he was thus amufing himfelf, he heard feveral doleful Shrieks hard by, which his Curiofity inclining him to know the Occasion of, he spurred forwards his Horse, which, if you. please, shall be a Barbary Courser, and rid to the Place whence he thought the Noise came. He there discovered a Woman defending herfelf with all her Might, against a Man that endeavoured to bind her Hands, whilst another Woman at the same Time was struggling with her to stop her Mouth with a Piece of Linnen. The coming of the young Prince prevented all farther Violence from being offered her, and occasioned an involuntary Truce on the Assaulters Side. Muley at his first Arrival demanded of the affaulted Woman, What made her to cry out? And of the others, What they were going to do to her? But instead of an Anfwer,

fwer, the Man that was the Aggressor stept up to him with his drawn Scymeter, and launched at him fuch a terrible Stroke, as would have undoubtedly wounded him very dangeroufly, had he not dexteroufly avoided it by the Swiftnels of his Horse. Fillain, cried Muley to him, turning his Horse's Head, How durft thou of au't the Prince of Fez? I did not avell know you to be ke, replied the Moor; but fince you happen to be fo, it is became you are my Prince, that I will either have your Life, or less my onen. With that he immediately fet upon him with fo great Fury, that the Prince, as valiant as he was, thought less of chastizing his Subject's Infolence, than defending his own Life. The two Women at the same Time were at Fisticusts, and she that a Moment before had been almost over-powered, was now become comagious, and kept her Adversary from flying, hoping that her Champion would get the Victory. pair ever augments Courage, and oftentimes gives it to those whose natural Timidity made them uncapable of it before: Aitho' the Valour and Conduct of this Prince were incomparably greater than those of his Adversary, yet did the Self Conviction of this Moor, together with the Dread of Punishment, so animate his Spirits, and direct his Arm, that the Combat remained for some Time doubtful: But at last Heaven, that always is ready to protect those it raises above others, caused the Prince's Attendants to come near that Way, who being alarmed at the Noise of the Combatants and the Cries of the Women, immediately rid Polt to see what was the Matter, and arrived just at the Nickwhen their Master by a lucky blow had b ought his Enemy to the Ground. They presently knew their Lord, and therefore 1an with great Fury to have dispatched his vanquished Adverfair; but the Prince calling out to them, bid them to forbear killing him, and ordered them only to tie him to a Horse's Tail, it being his Intentions to have him referved for a more exemplary Punishment. Two of the Horsemen took up the two Women behind them, and with this Equipage Muley and his Company returned to Fez much about Day-break. This young Prince commanded in Fez as absolutely as if he had been already King. Soon after his Arrival, he commanded the Meer, whose Name was Amets .

Amet, and Son to one of the richest Merchants in that City, to be brought before him; the two Women were ordered to be brought likewife; but they were known to no Body, by reason of the Custom of concealing that Sex, which is observed here stricter than in any other Parts. She of the two whom the Prince had relieved, furprifed both him and the whole Court with her Beauty; it being fo great, that all Africa had not the like to boaft of, and withal so majestic, that even a Slave's Habit, which she wore, could not obscure it. The other Woman was cloathed like to those of this Country, who are of some Quality, and who likewife had Beauty, but which could not stand in Competition with that of her Antagonia; and had it been possible, the paleness of her Cheeks alone, occasioned by her Fear, would have loft her the Victory, when the other would have rather received Additions from a guiltless Blush than a Disadvantage. The Moor appeared before Muley with Guilt in his Countenance, keeping his Eyes all the while fixed upon the Ground. The Prince commanded him to confess his Crime, if he would not resolve to die in Torments. I know those that are prepared for me, answered the Moor boldly, all which, and greater, I have deferved; yet still, had I thought it would have been for my Advantage, even the greatest could be inslicted on me, would not have been able to have extorted the least Confession from me. But fince I am fatisfied nothing can avail to fave my Life, feeing I would have been the Instrument of your Death, know, greatPrince, that the Anger I have conceived against my felf, for not killing you, torments me yet more than the utmost of your Tortures can do. As for these two Spanish Women here, added he, they have both been my Slaves; whereof one who knew beathow to play her Cards, has married my Brother Zaide, whereas the other being more obstinate, would never yet change her Religion, ner accept the frequent Proffers of Love which I have made her. Here he floped, and would give no farther Account, either of them or himfelt, notwithstanding the great Menaces made him. This caused Maley to have him immediately thrown into a Dungeon, loaden with Irons; the Renegado, Wife of Zaide, was ordered to another Prison. But the-

fair:

fair Slave, the Prince commanded to be conducted to a Moor's House, nam'd Zulema, a man of Quality, and by Birth a Spaniard, but who had left that Country, because he would not be forced to turn Christian. He was of the illustrious Family of Zegrys, heretofore so renown'd in Granada, and his Wife Zoraide, likewife the fame Lineage, was reputed to be the finest Woman, whether for Beauty or Wit, in all Fez. She was at first charm'd with the Beauty and Conversation of this fair Christian Slave, and therefore, if she had been capable of being comforted, the might have found fufficient Confolation in her Careffes; but on the contrary, as if the had forfworn all manner of Comforts, the always defired to be alone, thereby to give : the better Vent to her Grief; for when she was in Zeraide's Company, the underwent no finall Torture by retaining her Sighs and Tears. All this while Prince Muley was very defirous of having an Account of her Adventures. He had made his Mind already known to Zulema, who being a Person from whom he could conceal nothing, he had likewife acquainted him that he had a fort of Love for this fair Christian, and which he would before have let her know, had not be apprehended from her great Afflictions fome unknown Rival in Spain, who might be too luckily. proposses'd of her Favour Zulema having receiv'd this hint from his Lord, immediately ga e Orders to his Wifeto get what Particulars she could cut of this fair Christian, concerning her Life, but especially how the came to be Slave to Amet. Zoraide was as debrous as the Prince of knowing these Particulars, and therefore was not long before the fet about it; the had little Reafon to think the fhould be refused, because she had been so wonderfully civil to her. Agreeable to her Willies, the fair Spaniard answered her, that the would fatisfy her Curiofity whenever the pleased; but having nothing but Missortunes to acquaint her with, the feared the would find her Relation formewhat tiresome. You will be convinced, replied Zoraide, that it cannot be fo, when you shall see the Attention I give to it; and by the Concern I shall infallibly shew for your bad Fortune, I dare fay you will be apt to believe you could entrust your Secrets to no truer Friend. This faid, they threw-

threw their Arms over each others Necks, and embraced fo heartily, as if they had never defigned to quit that Pofture. Afterwards the fair Slave wiping her Eyes, which shed Tears abundantly at the Remembrance of the Misfortunes, began her Story in the following Manner. 'I am,' faid she, 'a Spaniard by Birth, was born at Valencia, and ' my Name is Sophia. I was educated with that Care and Charge as would become a rich Father and Mother to bestow on the first Fruits of their Marriage. I had a · Brother younger than myself by a Year; he was lovely ' as could be, and loved me as dearly as I did him; our mutual Friendship was so great, that we were never easy when afunder, and therefore our Parents took care we 6 should feldom be so. We learned together all those Exercifes that are usually taught Youth of either Sex; and thence it came to pass, to the Surprize of every Body, that I was equally skilled with him in the Manege, as ' he was with me in the Arts of the Needle. This extraordinary Sort of Education caused a Gentleman, our ' Neighbour, to defire of my Father that his Children might be bred along with us. His Request was granted, and ' having only a Son and Daughter, about the Age of us, ' it gave Occasion to the Town of Valencia to think that ' there would one Day be a counter Ma riage between ' us. Don Carlos and Lucy, were the Names of those two ' young Companions of ours. The Former was handsome, and loved me dearly, which I reciprocally returned. Our · Parents observed it, but were so far f. om either disliking or opposing it, that they rather encouraged and approved it, and I believe would certainly have foon married us ' together, had not they thought us too young. At length our delufive Happiness was stifled by the Death of my Brother; a violent Fever carried him off in eight Days, ' and from his Death sprang the first Cause of my Misfortunes. Lucy was so affected at it, that she obstinately resolved to turn Nun, I had brought myself even to ' Death's Door with Grief, and Don Carlos likewife had ' so great a Share in our Concern, that he gave his Parents ' little Hopes he would furvive it, fo much the Lofs of ' my Brother, the Danger I was in, and the Refolutions of of

of his Sister had wrought upon him. At last, Thanks to our Youth, we all recovered, and Time, in some Meafure, moderated our Afflictions. The Father of Den Carlos ' died not long after, and left him both rich and out of Debt. His Riches furnished him with Ability to grati-' fy his gallant Humour, and his Gallantry flattered my · Vanity, exposed his Love to public Knowledge, and augmented mine. Den Carlos was often found at my · Parents Tcet, conjuring them not to defer his Happiness · any longer, and my Father was inclinable to hearken to his Request, least his profuse Courtship might in Time diminish his Fortune; he gave him therefore Hopes that he should speedily be his Son-in-Law. This raised Don · Carlos to so high a Pitch, that he lavished out his Love at « an extraordinary Rate, and which would have been alone fufficient to have convinced me of his Sincerity, had not · I had fo many preceeding Proofs of his Passion. To add to his other Profuseness, he presented me with a Ball, and invited all the Town of Palencia to it; but to his · Misfortune as well as mine, thither came among the 1est · a Neapolitan Count, whom some Affairs of Importance had brought into Spain. This Count it feems took fo eg:eat a Fancy to me, that he must needs be in Love with e me, and, in order to gratify his Passion, was not long · before he demanded me in Marriage, after having been ' informed of the Quality of my Father, in the Kingdom of Valencia. My Father was fo dazled with the Title of · this Stranger, that he immediately confented to all he asked, and from that very Hour forbid Don Carlos to pretend any farther to me. He likewise strictly enjoyned me te receive no more of his Visits, and moreover commanded me for the future to look upon the Italian Count as a Person that was to marry me at his Return from Modrid, whither he was then going, and would come back in a short Time. I dissembled my Dislike for the present to my Father's Proposals, but when I was ' alone Den Carlos would fincerely come into my Mind, whom I thought the most amiable Man in the World, while I could not find with my utmost Endeavours the · least Thing agreeable, nay, scarce tolerble in his Rival;

fo that it was equally impossible for me to love the one or to forget the other. I had Recourfe upon this Occafion to Tears, but found those a feeble Remedy against ' so great a Malady as mine. While I was in this Condition Don Carles entered the Room, but that without ' his usual Custom of asking leave. He found me all in Tears, which made him to lofe the Power of witholding his oan, however great had been his Re-6 folutions not to betray the Sentiments of his Heart till he had dived into the utmost of mine. He threw him-' felf at my Feet, and taking me by the Hand, which he all bathed with his Tears, Sopby, faid he to me, What " must I lose you then? Must a Stranger who has hardly the Honour to be known to you, be notwithstanding ' prefered to me? shall he possess you, Sopby, and will ' vou Confent to it? You whom I have loved fo dearly, and who have always endeavoured to make me believe that you loved me likewise? Shall your Father pretend ' to dispose of you, when he has already given you me? Your Father, the most unjust Man breathing! If you were a Person, continued he, whose Merit could be va-· lued my Fidelity alone would be able to purchase you. But, purfued he, fince you are inclimable, I beg you ' to believe that if I have had the Ambition to aspire to ' you, I shall not want the Courage to revenge my self on him whom you causelessly preser to me. But how-' ever, added he fighing, if it be your Pleasure that my Rival should live happy in your Favour, I will forego all Attempts upon him, and only revenge your Unkind-' ness upon myself by some cruel and sudden Death. · Don Carlos, answered I, will you join with an unjust Father, and a hated Lover to torment me, and do you ' impute that to me for a Crime, which is only a Mis-' fortune common to us both? Pity me, added I, inflead of accusing of me, and bethink of Means to preserve me ' yours, rather than reproach me with a Fault I am no ways guilty of. I believe I may have better Reason to reflect on you for not having fufficiently loved me, ' fince I find you have not fufficiently known me. But we have no Time to lose in vain Words, continued I, carry

carry me whither you please, for you shall always find , me disposed to follow you. At these Words Don Carlos was more transported with Joy than he had been before depressed with Grief; and therefore having begged my Pardon a thousand Times for the Injustice he lad ' done me, he proposed to setch me away the Night fol-' lowing. For this Purpose he spent all that Day in or-' dering his Affairs. He got together a good Sum of Mo-' ney and hired a Barcelona Vessel, which would be ready to put to Sea at what Time he defired: For my Part, ' young as I was, I had Wit enough to manage the Secret fo well, that no Body ever fo much as mistrusted us. I got all my Mother's Jewels, and scraped up what Money I could get. At the Hour appointed, Carlos's · Page Claudio waited for me at the Gate. He told me his Master had sent him to conduct me on Board, and that he could not come himself, for Reasons he would fatisfy me in when he faw me. At the fame Time came ' a Slave that belonged to Don Carlos, and who was likewise very well known to me, to accompany me. We got easily out of the City, by Means of the good Contrivance we had laid, and were not gone far before we faw ' a Vessel riding in the Harbour, whose Boat waited for us on the Shore. The Seamen told me my dear Den · Carles would come immediately, and that I had no mo.e to do, than to go into the Boat. I was carried in by the Slave, but had no sooner been set down, than I per-' ceived the Seamen forcing in Claudio, whom I observed to be unwilling to enter. This increased my Concern for the Absence of Carlos, and thereupon I immediately demanded of the Slave where he was: He furlily an-' fwered, that wherever he was, he was no more for me. ' Having faid thus much he left me, and in a little while after, I heard Claudio above upbraiding the Slave after this Manner. Is it thus, Traitor Amet, that you perform your Promise, to rid me of a Rival, and leave me with my Love? To which the Slave replied, Impra-' dent Claudio! am I obliged to keep my Word with ' you, when you have not scrupled to betray your Maf-' ter, and how could I expect you would be true to me,

and not fend the Guards out after me to take my dear Sophy from me, whom I love more than my Life, when I have observed how villainously you served both him and her? ' These Words spoken to a Woman whom I took always ' for a Man, and concerning Matters which I knew nothing of, raised so sierce a Disorder in me, that I fell dead for the present, in the Arms of the perfidious Moor. By that ' Time my Fit was over, our Vessel had got a good Way to ' Sea. You cannot imagine when I came to myfelf, what a Confusion I was in, for then I plainly perceived I was ' in the Hands of Moors, and Enemies to our Faith. I then knew the Slave Amet had all Sort of Authority, and that ' his Brother Zaide was Captain of the Vessel. Amet no 6 fooner faw me in a Condition to hear him, but he made ' me a short Declaration of his Love, professing he had had ' a Kindness for me a long Time, and that his Passion was the Cause of his carrying me away. Moreover that he ' defigned to carry me to Fez, where it should be my own Fault if I was not as happy, if not happier than I could have been in Spain. And lastly, he had the Impudence to urge to me, that he did not doubt but in a fhort Time I would have no Reason to regret the Loss of Don Carlos. I had scarce Patience to hear him out, before I flew upon him with all the Vigour and Courage that my Fit had left me, and by an Address which I ' told you before I had learned from my Education, fnatch-' ing his Scymeter out of the Scabbard, was going to ' punish his Perjury with the Loss of his Life, had not his Brother Zaide timely stepped in and prevented me. I was prefently disarmed, for having once missed my Blow, I could not possibly defend myself against so great a Number of Enemies. Amet, whom my unexpected At-' tempt had frightened, commanded all but me to go out of the Room, and afterwards followed himself. ' me in fuch a Condition as you may imagine after fo cruel a Reverse had happened to my Fortune. I spent ' all that Night in Tears, and the Day following I nothing but grieved and took on. Time that generally alleviates other Peoples Misfortunes, did but increase mine. The fecond Day was as uncomfortable to me as the first, or . f rather

rather more tormenting; for when I reflected upon the e never feeing Don Carlos more, how could I propose to " myself any future Consolation? Amet always found me ' fo terrible whenever he offered to accost me, that he came no more nearme. From time to time they brought " me Victuals to eat, but which I refused with that Obflinacy, as made the Moor to fear that he had brought me away to no Purpose. In the mean Time the Ship ' had passed the Streights, and was not far off the Coast of Fez; when Claudio entring the Room, I no fooner perceived him, than I began with him after this Manner: · Villain, faid I, you have betrayed me, and what could · induce you to so base an Action after you had been so well used both by me and Don Carlos? You were too well beloved, answered he, and fince I loved Don Carlos ' likewife, what Ill have I done in endeavouring to rid " myself of a Rival? But if I have betrayed you, added . he, Amet has also betrayed me, and I shall have as great . Reason to lament as you, if I do not think of some Expedient not to remain alone miserable. Explain these Riddles, replied I, and learn me who you are, that I . may know of what Sex I have you for my Enemy? . Sophy, then continued he, I am of the fame Sex with . you, and like you have been in Love with Don Carlos, but if our Love has been equal, its Success has been different; he always loved you, and was very inclinable to believe that you returned his Passion, whilst me he neither loved nor could think I loved him fo dearly as I did, by Reason he never knew who I was. I am of . Valencia like you, proceeded she, and was not born so low, but Don Carlos might have married me without Disparagement; yet his Mind was all set upon you, and , you was the only Object of his Vows and Wishes. It was not but I endeavoured to make my Eyes fave the . Labour of my Tongue, and take the shameful Confession of my Love upon them. I always laid myfelf in his Way, and used all those little Artifices that he would have done to captivate me had it been his own Case. I . might have often disposed of myself in Marriage to Advantage, had not the Hopes I had of one Day winning

him over, always prevented my Fortune; infomuch, that ' instead of being discouraged at his Repulse, I found it a Means to love him the more. At length, being refolved to neglect nothing that might ferve to bring him about, I put myself into Man's Apparel, cut off my Hair, and fo difguifed caused myself to be presented to him for a . Page by an old Woman, who told him that my Father was a poor Gentleman, that lived upon the Mountairs of Toledo. My Face and Mien pleased, it seems, your Lover so well, that he presently resolved to take me. He was as well satisfied with my Wit as delighted with ' my Voice and Manner of Singing, as likewise with my Skill in playing on all Sorts of Instruments that Persons of Quality are wont to divert themselves with. He 6 believed he had met with Qualifications in me that were ' not to be commonly found in Pages; and I gave him 6 so many Proofs of my Fidelity and Discretion, that he treated me more like his Friend and Confident than Ser-' vant. This you are able to testify better than any Perfon breathing; and you know befides, how often you have commended me to Carlos, both behind my Back and to my Face, and likewife done me feveral other good Offices with him; but I was mad to think that I must be indebted for all these to a Rival, and that at the fame Time that they rendered me more agreeable to my Lover, they made you more hateful to the unfortunate Claudia, (for so is my true Name.) In the mean Time your Marriage advanced, and my Hopes went back; but as foon as it was concluded they were utterly loft. The Italian Count who became about that Time in Love with ' you, and whose Quality and Estate gained as much upon your Father, as his bad Mien and Conditions loft him ' in your Esteem, gave me, nevertheless, the Pleasure of feeing you disturbed, and which caused me to flatter ' myself with those foolish Hopes which Change always offers to the Unhappy. At last your Father preferred the Stranger whom you loved not, to Don Carlos, whom ' you loved; and I had then the Satisfaction to see one that made me unfortunate, unfortunate himself, and my ' Rival that I hated, yet more unhappy. My Pleasure was augmented!

augmented, the' I confidered I lost nothing in him, because he never was mine, yet in that you was deprived of all in losing him, by Reason he was all yours. this imaginary Happiness, or to call it better, unfinished · Hope, lasted not long: I learned from Don Carlos, that ' you was resolved to go away with him, and I was employed for that Purpose to hire a Ship to carry you 6 to Barcelona, from whence you were to go either to France or Italy, I can't tell which. All the Force I had hitherto made Use of to support me in my Missortunes, forfook me at this Moment; I could now bear up aegainst the Torment of my unhappy Fate no longer, and therefore was forced to yield to it. My Griefs upon this Occasion were so great, that they made me down-' right fick, and caused me to keep my Bed. One Day as I was lamenting my hard Usage to myself, and speak-4 ing louder than ordinary, out of a Confidence that I was ' not over-heard, the Moor Amet appeared before me, who after he had fuffered me to recover out of the Sur-' prize he had occasioned in me, addressed himself to me ' in these Words: I have known you, Claudia, even be-' fore the Time you disguised your Sex to become Page to Don Carlos, and if I have all this while concealed that Knowledge from you, it was because I had a Design to of bring about as well as you. I have over-heard you enter into Resolutions of Despair. You have a Mind to -6 discover yourself to your Master to be a young Woman that dies for Love of him, and afterwards to kill your-' self in his Presence, whereby you think to incline him ' Pity, whereas you cannot otherwife engage his Heart. * Poor Girl! What other Advantage wilt thou get by kil-Ing thyself, but assuring the Possession of Carlos the firmer to thy Rival? I have better Advice to give thee, if thou hast Courage enough to take it. Deprive thy Lover of Sophia; the Means of accomplishing it are casy; and tho' it requires a great deal of Resolution, yet has Occasion for no more than thou hast already had to habit thyfelf like a Man, and thereby to hazard thy Hoo nour to content thy Love. Hearken to me then with Attention, continued the Moor, and I will reveal to thee a

· Secret which I have never yet disclosed to any Person; and if the Propofal I am about to make thee be disapprov'd, thou art at Liberty either to receive or reject it. I am of Fez, purfued he, and a Man of Quality in my own · Country; my Misfortunes made me a Slave to Don Car-· los, and the Beauty of Sophia made me the like to her. I have told you a great deal of Matter in few Words. Confider your own Unhappiness without Remedy, if ' you fuffer your Lover to carry off your Mistress to Barcelona. It is both your and my Interest to prevent it, therefore let us lay hold on the Occasion that offers. ' I have bargained for my Ransom, and have paid it. A Galliot from Africa waits for me in the Road, not far off that which Don Carlos has provided for the Execution of his Defign. He has put it off for a Day longer, therefore let us interpose our Project to carry her away before him, in the aforefaid Galliot. In order to accome plish this, do you go immediately to Sophia, as from -your Master, and let her know that he requires she flould depart this Night : For this Purpose bring her a-' way forthwith to my Vessel, and I will carry her to " Africa; whereby you will remain behind alone to pof-· fets your Lover, and who, 'tis very likely, will be in-· clined to favour your Passion, when he understands what ' you are, how well you love him, and moreover, that the Recovery of his Sophia is impracticable. At these · last Words of Claudia's, continued Sophia, I became all of a sudden so oppressed with Grief, that I sainted away and had scarce the least Sign of Life left in me. The · Cries that Claudia made for Help, who it may be now repented of what she had told me, brought Amet and his Brother into the Room. They made Use of all the · Means that were proper to recover me, when coming ' at length to myself, I heard Claudia still persisting in reproaching Amet with his Treachery. Infidel, faid fle to him, how could you have the Baseness both to betray · me, and to bring this Lady to the deplorable Condition ' you see her in? Or, how could you have the Heart to make me guilty of Treachery to the Man I love fo dearly? How dare, you report yourfelf to be nobly L.3 :

born, when you are one of the very worst of Men! Peace Fool, replied Amet, and do not accuse me of a Crime to which you yourfelf was accessary. I have told ' you before, that one that could betray a Master like yours, well deserves to be betrayed herself, I have proposed to carry you along with me, both to fecure my own Life, and prolong that of my dear Sopbia; for I could easily guess what Tortures she must necessarily have undergone had you remained behind with her Lover discovered. ' The Noise the Seamen made at their Entrance into the Port of Sclly, and the thundering of the Cannon as well ' from the Vessel as the Castle, interrupted any farther ' Reproaches between Amet and Claudia, and at the fame ' Time delivered me from the Sight of those two odious Objects. We landed, Claudia and I having our Faces all covered with Vails, and were lodged in the House of a ' Friend of the perfidious Amet's. The next Day we were ' put into a close Chariot, and carried in that Manner to Fez, where if Ames was overjoyed at the Sight of his Relations and Friends, I was no less afflicted and tormented at my Fate. As for Claudia, she was resolved to make ' herfelf easy, for the quickly turned Mahometan, and was ' married in a little Time after to Zaide, Brother of the ' faithless Amet. This wicked Woman employed all her ' Cunning to perfuade me to change my Religion likewife, and to marry with Amet, as she had done with Zaide; but I thank Heaven, I still persevered in my Constancy, both to my first Faith, and to my first Love. This caused Amet and his Friends to use me with all Manner of ill Treatment; but at last I was inclinable to believe that · Claudia was not quite so bad as she seemed. In Public fhe perfecuted me indeed as much or rather more than the rest, but in private she would ever now and then do me ' a good Turn. One Day when all the other Women were gone to the public Baths, which you know 'tis a Cuftom amongst you Mahometans to do so many Times a · Week, Claudia came to me in my Chamber, and with a forrowful Countenance accosted me in the following Man-' ner. Fair Sophia, faid she, whatever Occasion I have hitherto had to bear you ill Will, it is now at an End, by Rea-

fon of my Despair ever to possess him who loved me too Ittle, because he loved you too much, I condemn myself incessantly for having been the Means of making you miferable; but more especially for having abandoned my God, out of the Fear of Man, the least of which Remorfes 15 fufficient to make me undertake fomething unufual to my Sex. I can no longer live fo remote from Spain, and that especially among Infidels, with whom I can neither ex-' pect Health while I live, nor Salvation when I come to "die. You may judge of my fincere Repentance by the · Secret I am going to trust you with, which makes you · Mistress of my Life, by putting it in your Power to re-· venge the ill Offices I have been forced to do you, whenever you pleafe. The Secret is this, having procured about fifty Christian Slaves for the most Part Spaniards, and engaged them to Secrefy, I have furnished them with . Money sufficient to hire a Bark, wherewith to transport s us to Spain. Now you have nothing to do but to felsolow my Fortune, either to fave yourself, if the Fates -fo permit, or else to perish with me rather than live thus miserably among Infidels. Determine therefore quick -· ly, Sophia, continued the, what you mean to do, and fince we are alone, let us presently enter upon deliberating on the most important Action of our Lives. · Hearing this Proposal of Claudia's, I immediately threw myfelf at her Feet, and judging of her Sincerity by ' my own, made her all Manner of Acknowledgements both in Words and Actions. Purfuant to our Project, we fet a Time and Place for our intended Flight, and which at last, was to be behind some Rocks by the · Sea-fide, where she told me the Vessel lay waiting for sus. On the Day appointed we fet out, happily as I thought, because we got so casily out of the House and · City. I admired the Goodness of Heaven in favouring our Escape with such Facility, and more than once offered up my Thanks in the Acknowledgement; however, the End of my Misfortunes was not so near as I thought. · What Claudia acted was only by Order of the perfidious · Amet, than whom she yet more persidiously led me to 6 this abandoned Place, for no other Reason than to expose. L 4 · me

· me to the Lust of that wicked Moor, who durst not attempt any Violence on me in his Father's House, who, · tho' a Mahemetan, was morally honest. I followed in-· nocently her that thus guided me to Ruin, and thought · I could never make her fusficient Acknowledgments, for · obliging me with so fair a Prospect of my Liberty. We walked a good round Pace, till we came among those · Rocks, where she still persisted to tell me, that her · Slaves lay attending for her; when all of a Sudden, hearing a Noise, and looking behind me, I perceived the treacherous Amet coming towards us full drive, with a · drawn Scymeter in his Hand. Infamous Slaves, cried he · aloud, is it thus ye convey away yourselves from your Master's Service? I was just going to answer him when · Claudia seizing my Arms behind, and Amet throwing · away his Scymeter, and joining with her, to do the like to me before, they both endeavoured jointly to bind me with Cords, which they had provided for that Purpose. Flaving more Art and Strength than Women usually have, · I refisted, for some Time, the Attempts of these two · barbarous People; butat length, finding my Efforts over-' powered, I had no other Remedy to have Recousse to, than Cries, which I hoped would induce some charitable Traveller to come to my Relief. I was just upon the · Brink of Despair as Prince Muley arrived. You have heard how he saved my Honour, and I might say, my Life, " fince I should infallibly have died of Grief, had Amet · succeeded in his brutish Designs upon me.' Here Sophy ended the tedious Relation of her Adventures, while the friendly Zeraide exhorted her to rely upon the Prince's Generosity, who she doubted not would afford her speedy Means to return to Spain. The fame Day Zoraide went and acquainted her Husband with every Particular she had heard from Sophy, of all which, he confequently foon informed his Master Muley. Altho' what had been told him concerning the Fortune of the fair Christian, did not at all flatter his Passion; yet was Muley, nevertheless, pleased to hear she was preengaged in Affection, that he might thereby avoid the Bafeness of tempting her. He highly valued her Virtue, and was disposed by his own to encourage and affist her in the Continuance

Continuance of it; hereupon he dispatched Zoraide to let her know, that he would fend her back to Spain as foon as ever she pleased; but not caring to trust to the Frailty of his Nature, had at the fame Time refolved to keep as much out of her Sight as he could. Sopby, for her Part, was employed in thinking how to make her Return as fecure as possible. She doubted if she should meet a Christian Ship, which was nevertheless very difficult for her to do, by Reafon that few or none traded hither, whether she should not find as bad Men on Board, as she had done before among. the Moors. Sincerity is feldom observed on board Vessels, and good Faith minded as little among Seamen as among Soldiers. Wherever Innocence and Beauty are met, Impudence will always take Occasion to invade them. Whiist the was thus debating with herfelf, Zoraide advised her to take upon her the Habit of a Man, and the rather, because her Shape was proper for that Purpose: She told her also, that it was Muley's Pleasure she should do so, and who not being able to find a Man in Fez, with whom he could fafely entrust her, had provided a Companion for her, of her own Sex, who was to be difguifed likewife, whereby they both might eafily avoid the Insolence of the Seamen and Passengers, if any were that Way inclined. This Moorish Prince had formerly purchased a Prize of a Corfair of Bar. bary. It was a Ship that had belonged to the Governor: of Oran, which was carrying a Spanish Gentleman with his whole Family to Spain, whom the Governor had fent thither a Prisoner out of some Disgust. Muley had been informed that this Christian was a great Hunter; and as that Exercise was one of the choicest of his Diversions, he was refolved to keep him to himfelf; but for fear of making him uneasy, he ordered he should not be separated from his Wife, his Son and Daughter. In two Years Time he had lived in Fez, in Muley's Service, he had taught that Prince to shoot admirably well, and that either fitting or flying. He had moreover instructed him in several other Ways of Hunting unknown before to the Moors. By these Means he in a short Time had gained so far upon the Prince's Favour, and had been so serviceable to him in all his Diversions, that when a Ransom was offered for him, he Lis would

would by no Means confent to part with him, but rather made it his daily Endeavour to oblige him, and make him forget Spain. Notwithstanding this Kindness of the Prince, the Regret he had to be out of his own Country, and the Unlikelihood of ever returning thither again, had brought fo deep a Melancholy upon him, that it foon ended his Days. His Wife likewife languished on the same Account, and lived not long after her Husband. When Muley faw how fatal his Favours to these Strangers had been, he began to be touched with Remorfe, and was exceeding forry that he had not complied with their Defires; but fince it was now too late, he refolved to reward the good Services of his Sportsman to his Children, and for that Purpose immediately sent for them into his Prefence. The Daughter, whole Name was Derothy, was about the same Age with Sophy, and had both Wit and Beauty. Her Brother named Sancho, was somewhat younger, being not above Fifteen; both were made Choice of by Muley to accompany Sophia to Spain. The Affair was for some Time kept secret; three Spanish Habits for Men were ordered in the mean Time to be got ready. At length Muley displayed his Magnificence in a great Quantity of precious Stones which he prefented Sophia with. To Dorothy and Sancho he gave likewife feveral noble Presents, which, together with what their Father had left them, and which had been all obtained from the Liberality of this Prince made them to be confiderably rich. About the Same Time Charles V. made War upon Africa, and besieged the City of Tunis. He had fent an Ambasiador to Muby, to treat about the Ranfom of certain Spaniards of Quality, who had been shipwrecked on the Coast of Morocco. It was to this Ambassador that Muley recommended Sophia under the Name of a Man of Quality, called Don Hernando, Derothy and her Brother were faid to be his Attendants. one paffing for his Gentleman, and the other for his Page. Sephia and Zoraide could not part without the greatest Reluctance. They shed Abundance of Tears, and gave each other unquestionable Proofs a reciprocal Affection. Zoraide as a farthe. Token of her Love and Esteem, presented the fair Christian with a Necklace of Pearl, of that great Value

Value, that she would by no Means have accepted it, had not Zulema, who loved her no less than his Wife, acquainted her, that they should take it very unkindly if she resused what they tendered only as a Pledge of their Friendihip. Zoraide made Sophia promise to let them know from Time to Time how she did, either by the Way of Tangier, Oran, or the other Places which the Emperor then possessed in Africa. The Christian Ambassador embarked at Sally, carrying along with him Sophy, whom from henceforward we must call Don Hernando. Before he proceeded on his Voyage to Spain, he was to go wait on the Emperor at his Camp before Tunis. Our Spanish Lady in Masquerade was to be presented to him for a Gentleman of Andalousia, who had been a long Time a Slave to the Prince of Morocco. She had no fuch great Reason to be in Love with Life, as to fear the Hazard of it in the Wars, and therefore fince the had took upon her the Character of a Cavalier, the was obliged to go upon all Actions that Honour called her to. For this Purpose she placed herself among the Volunteers, resolving to loose no Occasion to signalize herself, and which she often did, to that Degree, that her Valour came at length to the Emperor's Ear. She happened to be in one Action, above the rest, wherein the Emperor was unhorfed, and the Christians like to be beaten. This our valiant Amazon perceiving, by a Performance scarce to be be lieved, the immediately remounted the Emperor, and laid about her with that Conduct and Vigour, that she almost opposed the whole Force of the Enemy, till such Time as the routed Army had rallied, and were come up to her Relief. This wonderful Action of hers, did not go without its Reward. The Empe or in Recompence, prefented to the unknown Don Hernando, a Commandery of great Revenue, as likewise a Regiment of Horse, which had belonged to a Spanish Colonel, killed in the late Fight; he al o gave him the Equipage of a Man of Quality, and from trat very Time, no Body was so much esteemed in the Army, as that valiant Heroine. All the Actions of a Man were natural to her; her Countenance was so good, and made her appear to be fo young, her Courage and Conduct wite to far beyond her Years, her Wit was to charming and

entertaining, that there was not one Man of Quality, or Officer in the whole Army, but who either fought her Friendship and Acquaintance, or humbly declined aspiring to it, as being unworthy. It must not be wondered at then, fince all the World spoke so much of her, and yes more her renowned Actions, if she came to be so greatly in Favour with her Prince. About this Time divers Recruits of Men and Ammunition arrived from Spain. The Emperor would have them all drawn up by themselves, that he might have a View of them, with the principal Officers. of the Army, amongst whom was our Female Warrior. Among these new-come Soldiers she fancied she had espied Don Carlos, and as it happened she was not deceived. This made her to be uneasy all the Remainder of that Day. She fent out often to look after him, but could not find him, by Reason he had changed his Name. When Night came, she could not sleep a Wink, and therefore rose by Day-Break, to go in Search of her dear Lover, who had cost her fo many Tears. At length she found him, but was not known by him, by Reason she was grown taller, and had besides her Complexion much altered by the scorching Heats of Africa. She made him believe the took him for another of her Acquaintance, and began to ask him Newsfrom Sevil, as likewife concerning an imaginary Person that came fust into her Head. He told her he knew no fuch Person, was never at Sevil, and that he was born and lived in Valencia. You are nevertheless much like a Person that I knew, and had a great Esteem for, replied Sophy, and therefore you must give me leave to be ranked among the Number of your Friends. With all my Heart, answe ed Don Carlos, and for the fame Reason you urge, I must beg the like Liberty from you, for you no less resemble a Perfon I loved long fince, and do still love; you have the same Visage and Voice, but are not of the same Sex, and cortainly cannot be of the same Humour, added he sighing. At these last Words of Carlos, Sophy could not forbear blushing, which he nevertheless took no Notice of, by Reason he then had his Eyes overcharged with Tears, which hindered his observing her Change of Countenance. This extraordinary Tenderness of Don Carlos moved her so extreme-

· Iy, that she was ready to discover herself; to prevent which at that Time, she desired him to come visit her in her Tent, . and bid him enquire for Don. Hernando. At the Hearing of this Name Don Carlos began immediately to be afraid, well knowing what Honours the Emperor had conferred? on that Person, and therefore feared he might not have shewed him sufficient Respect. He met with little Difficulty in finding the Tent, for it was but what every Body could direct him to. He was there received with all the Civility that a private Gentleman could expect from a General Officer. He again discovered the Countenance of Sophy in that of Don Hernando, but was more amazingly surprized at: the Refemblance of their Voices, which immediately funk into his Soul, and brought to his Remembrance the Idea of the Person in the World that he loved best: Sophy yet. unknown to her Lover, made him to dine with her, and after Dinner commanding her Domestics to retire, and giving Orders that she would be seen by no more Visiters, caused him to tell her over again that he was of Valencia, and afterwards occasioned him to relate all the Adventures that had happened between him and her, which to be furethe knew as well as he, from their first Acquaintance to the Time of his Contrivance for carrying her away. Would you believe, quoth Don Carlos, that a Woman of her Quality, who had received so many Proofs of my Love, and returned me reciprocally as many of hers, could yet be fo void of Sense or Honour to prefer a young Page, who had little or nothing to boast of, to his Master! But are you fure of what you fay, replied Sophy? Chance often controuls our Defigns, and oftner takes Pleafure to confour d our Reasoning with Events the least expected. Your Mistress may have been forced to leave you, continued she, and is, it may be, more unfortunate than blameable. to God, answered Don Carlos, I could in the least Doubt of her Guilt! All the Misfortunes which I have hitherto undergone on her Account, would be easy to me, could Ibut believe her still saithful. But alas! she is only so to the Traitor Claudie, and pretended an Affection to Don Carlos but to ruin him. It feems to me, replied Sophy, you could have but little Kindness for her, fince you can thus condemn her unheard. Can I have greater Proof of her Bafe-

nefs, cried Don Carlos, than appears by a Letter she sent her Father the very Night she went off; whereby, I suppose, she thought to take away all Suspicion of her going away with the Page. But to the End you may be a better Judge of it, added he, I have the Letter to show; then he read the Letter, which was in the following Words:

OU ought not, Sir, to forbid my loving Don Carlos' fince you had once commanded me to do it. A Defert fo great as he has to pretend to, must needs captivate the wariest Heart; and where so much Worth and Merit reigns, Interest must not think to get place. I say then away with him whom you have thought sit I should love from my Youth upwards, and without whom it is as impessible for me to live, as it would be not to grieve myself to Death in the Arms of a Stranger I hate, altho' he were yet richer than he beasts himself to be. Our Crime, therefore, if any, deferves at least your Pardon, which if you are disposed to afford us, we will return as willingly to receive, as we have shown Disposition to retreat from the unjust Violence you would do us.

SOPHIA.

' You may imagine, proceeded Carlos, what a Hurricane this raised in the old Peoples Breasts. They hoped I was either yet in Valencia concealed with their Daughter, or else that I was not far off. They kept their Loss a Secretto every Body but the Vice-Roy, who was their near Re-· lation. I was surprized to find the Constable and his Mr-' midons enter my Chamber, at Day-break, rudely asking ' me for Sophy, and whom I having demanded the fame ' Question of, they immediately hurried me in a violent ' Manner to Prison. I was questioned, and yet could say onothing in my Defence concerning Sophy's Letter; it the eby appeared I was to carry her away, but it was manifest that my Page disappeared also. Sophy's Relations made ' all imaginable Search after her, and my Friends did what they could to find whither the Page had carried her, which they were certain he must have done somewhither. At s length it being found impossible to meet with either or ' th'other, which was the only Thing that could have cleared ' my Innocence, I was accused by my Enemies of murder-

ing both. Hereupon I had Notice given me I must soon come to my Trial, and that if I escaped it was more than any Body expected. I knew the home Proofs they had. against me, and hoped only for a Miracle from Heaven ' to acquit me; but at last Despair got the upper Hand, and my Hopes consequently vanished. I resolved there. fore, not caring to trust my Deliverance to the Course of · Justice, to join with some Highway-men, my fellow Prifoners, in the Execution of a Defign they had laid to procure it for us all. Accordingly we one Night forced the "Gates of our Prison, and by the Assistance of our Friends, e got to the Mountains that were nearest Valencia, before the Vice-Roy could possibly be informed of our Escapes. We here continued a long Time Masters of the Roads! ' My Sophy's Infidelity, and her Parents merciless Prosecution, together with the Loss of my Estate and Reputa-' tion, made me fo desperate, that I cared not at what Rate I hazarded my Life, and therefore in all Cases of Refistance behaved myfelf with fo great Refolution, · that my Companions thought fit to chuse me for their Captain. I continued in this Post so successful for some "Time, that our Troop became so formidable even to the Kingdoms of Arragon and Valencia, which Countries we were so bold as to put under Contribution. I herein make ' you acquainted, continued Carlos to Sophy, with a Secret is "that concerns my Life, but the Honour you have done ' me of your Friendship, and the Opinion I have of your Integrity, make me not to doubt in the least of my Security. At length, proceeded he, I was weary of this wicked Course of Life, and forsook my Companions at a Time when they least expected it. I made my Way for Barcelona, where I listed myself a private Trooper in the . · Recruits that were just then raising for Africa. I had hitherto had no great Reason to be in love with Life, and ' therefore having made so ill Use of it as to infest my Coun. try, thought I could not do better than employ the Remainder of my Days in its Service, and more especially seeing the Kindness I have received at your Hands, has been the only Comfort I have had fince I have been made the most-' miserable of Men, by the most ungrateful of Women.' The unknown Sophia hereupon took the Part of Sophy unjustly

justly accused, and omitted nothing to persuade her Lover against passing rash Judgment on his Mistress, before he was throughly informed of her Crime. She told the unfortunate Gentleman moreover, that she was very sensible of his Misfortunes, and would do all that lay in her Power to alleviate them; and to give him a better Proof of her good Will, than what lay in bare Words, she defired him to come and be with her, and that as foon as Occasion served, she would employ all her own and her Friends Interests with the Emperor, to get him delivered from the Profecution of Sophy's Parents, as likewise from that of the Vice-Roy of Valencia. Don Carlos was not at all moved with what the counterfeit Don Hernando could fay to him concerning the Justification of Sophy, but to accept of the Offers of his Table and House he was. The same Day this faithful Lover spoke to Den Carlos's Captain to permit him to come and ferve under him, I should have faid, her. Now was our Lover under the Command of his Mistress, whom he took to be either dead or faithless. He was very easy from the Beginning under this new Commander, and would often wonder how he came to be so much in her Favour in so short a Time. He was at once her Intendant, Secretary, Gentleman and Con-The other Domestics paid not a greater Respect even to Don Hernando himself than they did to him, and he would no doubt have been exceeding happy had not the Lift " Sophy, the treacherous Sophy, come fo often into his Mind. Whatever Kindness Sophy had for him, she always took a great deal of Pleafure to fee him grieved, not doubting but it was upon her Account. At last she had justified Sophy so often, and sometimes with that Heat, that Don Carlos came to suspect that she had either been formerly her Lover, or was fo still. These Wars in Africa ended as you may read in the History. The Emperor afterwards made them in Germany, Italy, Flanders, and other Places. Our experienced She-Warrior, under the Name of Hernando, still kept up, or rather increased her Reputation for Courage and Conduct, tho' the last of these Qualities is seldom to be met with in a Person so young as this valiant Lady's Sex made her to appear. The Emperor was obliged to go into Flanders, and for that Purpose demanded Leave of the King of France to

pass

pass through his Dominions. The great King that then reigned in that Country, had a Mind to excel in Generofity a mortal Enemy, who had always furmounted him in Fortune, tho' he had not made the best Use of it. Charles V. was received in Paris with as great Magnificence as if he had been King of France himself. The brave Don Hernando was one of the small Number of Persons of Quality that attended him, and it is more than likely, if he had continued long at that Court, this fair Spanish Lady, being taken for a Man, would have enamoured all the French Ladies, and raifed Jealoufy in the most accomplished of Courtiers. While this happened, the Vice-Roy of Valencia died in Spain. Don Hernando, thro' his great Merit and Interest with the Emperor, doubted not but he should quickly obtain that Charge; and as he wished, foit soon after fell out, for he had no sooner asked than he had it given him, without the least Oppofition from any Competitor. This his good Success he immediately thought fitting to acquaint Don Carlos with, and at the same Time gave him Reason to hope, that as soon as he was gotten into Possession of his new Employment, he would not only reconcile him with Sophy's Relations, and procure him Pardon of the Emperor, for having been chief of the Vandolero's, (Highway-men) but likewife undertake to restore him to his Lands and Estate. Don Carlos might very well have received Comfort from these Promises of his Friend, had not his Love made him incapable of it. Emperor foon after arrived in Spain, and went directly to Madrid, while Don Hernando made what Haste he could to his new Government. From the very Day of his Arrival in Valencia, Sophy's Friends continually peffered him with Petitions against Don Carlos, who at the same Time was both his Steward and Secretary. The Vice-Roy promifed to do them speedy Justice, but at the same Time let Carlos privately know that he would not fail to protect his Innocence. The Cause was quickly prepared for Hearing, and in five or fix Days Time both Parties were ready to go to Trial. The Profecutor demanded of the Vice-Roy that the supposed Criminal might be fent to Prison, which Don Hernando would not nevertheless consent to, giving instead thereof, his Word, that he should not stir out of his House till the

Day .

Day affigned for the Trial. The Night before that fatal Day, which kept the whole City of Valencia in Suspence, Don Carlos defired a private Audience of the Vice Roy, which being granted, he threw himself at his Feet, and broke out into the following Words: 'To-morrow, my Lord, you ' will be able to let the World know that I am innocent; ' and altho' fome of the Witnesses you have already heard ' in my Defence, clear me absolutely of the Crime; yet do-'I here prefume to fivear once more to your Highness, as religiously as I would: do before God at the facred Altar, ' That I not only have not carried away Sophy, as my Adverfaries maliciously alledged against me, but likewise did onot lay Eyes on her from the Day before she was so car-' ried away, and have never heard the least News of her fince. I own I was to have carried her away, continued he, had not a Misfortune, too obscure for me to unriddle, " prevented me in that Defign.' Enough, Don Carlos, replied the Vice-Roy, go to Bed and take your Rest; I am both your Master and Friend, and perhaps am better informed of your Innocence that you can imagine. You are come along with me from Africa under my Protection, and I will not fail to defend and clear you against all your Enemies in this Matter. Don Garlos, after having returned his most hearty Thanks to fo obliging a Matter, went to Bed, but could not fleep for thinking on what was to enfue. He got up by Day-break, and dreffing himfelf more gallantthan ordinary, went to wait on the Vice-Roy at the Levie; but I should mistake if I told you he entered the Chamber before the was dreffed. The before mentioned Dorothy that came with herdifguised from F_{ez} , still continued to be her Consident and Companion, and did those Offices for her, which if another had done, the must have quickly been discovered. Don Carlos therefore gained not Admittance till Dorothy had fet openthe Door, as well to him as every Body elfe. The Vice-Roy no fooner perceived him than he began to reproach him with rifing fo early, alledging, that his not fleeping, was no great Token of his Innocence. To which Don Carlas, being a little disturbed, replied, that the Fear of being. convicted did not fo much hinder him from fleeping, as the Hopes he had of foon feeing himself delivered by the Justice :

tice his Highress would do him. 'But you are mighty Spruce and Gallant, quoth the Vice-Roy; nay, feem indifferent even on the Day you are to be tried for your Life. I know not what to think of the Crime you are accused of. ' As often as we discourse of Sophy, you seem more negli-' gent and unconcerned than I, who am no Party, nor e-' ver have been suspected to have been beloved by her, nor to have made away with her, and possibly the young ' Claudio likewise, as you have been. You say you have ' loved her,' continued the Vice-Roy, ' and yet you furvive the Lofs of her, and endeavour nothing fo much as to get ' yourself acquitted, that you may forget her, and live at ' Ease; you that ought rather to hate Life, and destroy ' those very Charms that have rendered you so amiable to her. Ah! inconstant Don Carlos,' proceeded he, it may well be suspected you have some other Love to supply the Place of Sophy you have been so much obliged to.' At these Words, Don Carlos, in a great Agony, was going to answer, but which the Vice-Roy, not thinking fit to here, interrupted him in, and with a fevere Countenance faid to him; ' Hold your Peace, and referve that Eloquence ' you are about to make Use of here, for your Judges. ' As for my Part I shall give little Ear to it, and will not, ' for the Sake of one of my Servants, let the Emperor have Reason to entertain an ill Opinion of my Justice. In ' the mean Time,' continued he, turning towards his Guards, ' some one of you secure his Person. I should ' indeed be very imprudent,' added he, ' to believe, that one who had once broke Prison would not again seek to ' avoid Justice hy Flight.' This said, Don Carlos's Sword was immediately feized, which raifed a great deal of Pity in the Standers by, to observe what a sudden Change of Fortune he had undergone, While the poor Gentleman was repenting of confiding too much in great Mens Favours, his Judges entered the Chamber, and took their Places after the Vice-Roy had feated himself. The Italian Count, who yet continued at Valencia, together with Sophy's Father and Mother, appeared against him, and produced their Witnesses; whilst Carlos was almost ready to despair of his Cause, and had scarce the Courage to answer. They alledged the Letters he had formerly writ to Saphy, and.

and proved his Hand; they confronted the Neighbours and Sophy's Servants with him, and lastly produced against him the Letter the had written to her Father the Night before they pretended he had carried her away. Carlos caused his Servants to be heard likewise, who swore they saw their Master go to Bed; but then he might have risen again afterwards, which they could give no Account of. In his Defence he faid, it was not likely he should carry her away to live separate from her, and much less that he would murther one whom he had always loved fo dearly. But all this availed him not, for Sentence was just going to be pronounced against him, when the Vice-Roy commanding him to be brought nearer, faid to him, 'Unfortunate Don Carlos! you may well think from all the Tokens of Friendship I have shewed you, that if I ' had in the least suspected you had been guilty of the · Crime you are accused of, I would never have brought ' you to Valencia. But now after what has been fo plain-' ly proved against you, I am more than obliged to condemn you, if I would not begin the Execution of my-Office by Injustice. You may easily be convinced of my-" Concern for you, by the Tears that unavoidably come into my Eyes. If your Profecutors were not of that-· Quality they are of, I might be inclinable to think they were biassed by Malice; but as they are, there are no-Exceptions to be made to them, and therefore if Sophia does not appear suddenly herself to release you, I am to give you Notice, you must prepare for Death.' Carlos despairing, at these Words, to be saved, threw himself at the Vice-Roj's Feet, and after some 'Time, faid to him, You may remember, my Lord, that all the while I had the Honour to ferve your Highness, both in Africa and here, as often as you have engaged me in a tedious Recital of my Misfortunes, I have always told them after the same Manner; and you may likewife be affured that what I have told. you, that have been fo good a Master to me, I would scorn. to deny afterwards before any Judge. I have all along told your Highnels the Truth, as I would have done to my God, and therefore shall not slick to repeat what I haveso often professed, that I not only ever have, but also

ever shall to my Life's End love and adore Sophy. 'What fay you?' (interrupted the Vice-Roy, with Concern in his Countenance) ' do you pretend to adore her?' I do, replied Don Carlos, not a little furprized at the Manner of the Question, and have not only promised to marry her, but likewise to carry her off to Barcelona. But if I have carried her away, or know where she is at present, may I be put to the cruellest of Deaths. As for dying, continued he, I know it is impossible for me now to escape it, but I shall nevertheless die innocent, if it be not a Crime to have loved fo faithfully, fo perfidious and inconstant a Woman. ' But,' cried the Vice-Roy, with a stern Countenance, 'What is become of this Woman and your Page? Are they mounted up to Heaven? Are they con-' cealed in the Earth? Or whither are they gone?' The Page, answered Don Carlos, was a spruce Gallant, and she a fine Lady; he was a Man and she a Woman, ' Ah Trai-' tor !' replied the Vice-Roy, ' now you discover your base Suspicions, and the small Esteem you entertained for the unfortunate Sophy. Curfed be that Woman,' continued he. ' that confides in the Promises of Men, and suffers herself to be abused by to easy a Belief. Neither was · Sophy a Woman of a common Virtue,' added he, 'nor vour Page Claudio a Man. Sophy was a conflant Maid, and your Page a ruined Woman that had been in Love with you, and confequently flole away and betrayed her as a Rival to her. I am Sophy, unjust and ungrateful · Love: !' proceeded he, ' I am Sophy who have undergone · incredible Hazards and Hardships on the Account of a " Man that deferves not to be fo well beloved, fince he could think me guilty of the very worst of Treacheries. Sophy found it not in her Power to fay any more: her Father immediately knew her, and catched her up in his A ms, her Mother swooned away on one Side, and her Lover Don Carlos on the other. She foon defingaged herfelf from her Father's Embraces, to run to the two that were fainted away, and who coming quickly to themfelves, she was in doubt which to embrace first; her Mother all bedowed her Cheeks with Tears, and she returned the like. She embraced her dear, dear Den Carlos, with

all the Passion imaginable, and who was like to have fwooned away again with the Excess of the Delight. He nevertheless held her fast, and not yet daring to approach her Lips, endeavoured to fatisfy himself on her Hands, both which he kiffed above a thousand and a thousand Sophy was scarce able to withstand all the Kindresses and Compliments made her. The Italian Count on his Part going to profer his, still insisted on his former Pretensions to her, as being promised him both by her Father and Mother; this Don Carlos hearing, and having at the same Time one of her Hands, greedily kissing at his Mouth, he instantly quitted it, and laying his Hand to his Sword, which had been just then brought him, he put himself into a Posture enough to have frighted an Army, and fwore, that rather than suffer himself to be deprived of his dear Sophy, provided she would but still continue to love him, he would hew down the City of Valencia, and bury its Inhabitants in its Ruins. She on her Part declared she would have no other Husband than her dear Carlos, and therefore conjured both her Father and Mo. ther either to refolve to approve of him, or to expect to fee their only Daughter fpeedily cloistered up in a Convent. Her Parents hereupon gave her Liberty to make Choice of what Husband she pleased, which the Italian Count perceiving, he immediately took Post and rid away for Italy. Sophy afterwards gave an Account of her Adventures, which being fo very extraordinary, were admired by every Body. A Courier was foon after dispatched to carry the News of this wonderful Discovery to the Emperor, who thereupon sent Orders that Don Carlos, after he had married Soply, should be invested with the Vice-Royship of Valencia; and moreover as a Recompence for all the great Services his Lady had performed under the Name of Don Hernanda, he gave to this happy Lover a Principality, which his Heirs enjoy to this very Day. The City of Valencia was at the Charge of the Wedding, which was performed with all the Magnificence and Splendor imaginable, and Dorothy who had refumed her Female Habit much about the fame Time with Sophy, was married not long after her to a near Relation of Don Carlos.

CHAP.

CHAP. -XIV: XV

A matchless piece of Impudence in the Sieur la Rappiniere.

THE Counsellor of Rennes had just done reading his Novel, when la Rappiniere arriv'd at the Inn. He entred the Room boldly, where he had been told Monsieur la Garouffiere was, but as soon as he perceived Destiny standing in a Corner both he and his Man that came along with him began visibly to change Countenances. La Garouffiere after having thut the Door, demanded of the bold la Rappiniere if he could not guess upon what Account he had been fent for. Is it not upon the Account of a Comedian, replied the Villain laughing, whom I had a mind to have my share of: How do you mean your share, answered la Garonffiere with a serious Countenance, Does it become a Judge as you are to talk after that rate? And did you ever yet condemn a Person that deserved Hanging more than yourself? La Rappiniere continued to turn the thing to Ridicule, and would needs make it pass for the Act of a good Companion. But the Senator urged it so home, and after so severe a Manner, that he had at last made him to Confess that it was an ill Action, and for which he immedialety made fome trifling Excuses to Destiny, who notwithstanding could scarce forbear calling him to an Account for Offending him so basely, after he had been obliged to him for his Life, as you may find he had been in the beginning of these Comical Adventures. But Destiny had another Quarrel to debate with this wicked Provost of greater Consequence, which he had communicated to Monsieur la Garoussiere, and who had promised to make him give him Satisfaction. Whatever Pains I have taken to drive into la Rappiniere, I could never yet discover whether he were more wicked towards God, or towards Man; more unjust to his Neighbour, or more vicious in himself. I know only this to be true, that never any Man had more Vices heaped up together, nor in a more eminent Degree than he. Ho confest he had a Defign to carry away Maddam Star, as boldly as if he had Reafon

Reason to boast of it as a good Action; and farther impudently told the Counsellor and the Comedian, that he never in the least doubted of the Success of that Enterprize: For, continued he, addressing himself to Destiny, I had gained over your Man; and your Sister, thinking you were wounded, was fo conveniently caught in the Trap, in Expectation to find you not above two Leagues from the Place where I waited for her, that I had certainly had her, had not the Sot that conducted her suffered some Devil or other to take her from him, whereby I lost a good Horse, and he got a good Beating. Desliny at the Hearing this, first grew pale with Anger, but then presently blushed with Shame, to hear a Villain tell him that with Indifferency, which he ought to have told with the greatest Reluctancy and Regret. La Garouffiere was greatly offended likewife, and not less angry with fo dangerous a Man. I cannot imagine, faid he to him, how you could have the Impudence to tell us the Particulars of fo base an Action with fo much Unconcern; for which Monsieur Deftiny would have nevertheless rewarded you, had not I interposed and hindered him. But I would advise you, continued he, to restore to him the Box of Diamonds you flole from him at Paris when you was a Pick-pocket Rascal, or he may yet do it. Doguin, who was at that Time your Accomplice, and fince your Servant, confessed to him on his Death-Bed that you had it; and I declare to you, added he, that if you do not fpeedily let him have it again, I will for the future prove as dangerous an Enemy to you, as I have hitherto been a ferviceable Friend. La Rappiniere at these Words stood as if he had been Thunder-struck, and had not Power to deny any longer, according to his usual Custom, what he had done. He owned therefore, stammering like one that was confounded, that he had the Box at Mans, and swore horribly to return it upon Demand. The Use he made of Oaths was out of Policy to conceal the Truth, for tho' it was true he had the Box, yet had he not it at Mans, but carried it always about him, with Defign to have prefented it to Madam Star, in Case she rejected his Amour. This he afterwards confessed in private to Monsieur la Garoufficre,thinking

thinking thereby to regain his Favour, and into whose Hands he put the Box and Picture to dispose as he thought sit. The Picture was that of Madam Star's Father, set round with Diamonds, whose Face it seems so much refembled hers, that she might be easily known to her Father by it. Destiny at the Receipt of the Picture knew not how to thank Monsieur la Garouffiere sufficiently for it. When this Box was taken away from Destiny, he was not fo much concerned on his own Account, as on that of Madam Star's Mother, who had a long Time kept it as a Pledge of her Husband's Love. You may easily guess then what an Excess of Joy the Recovery of it raised in them both. He for his Part, went immediately to acquaint his dear Star with the News, whom he found where he had left her, in the Curate of the Town's Sifter's House, and in Company with Angelica and Leander. They consulted together about their Return to Mans, and resolved upon it for the next Day, Monsieur la Garoussiere prossered them a Coach, which they would however by no Means accept. The Men and Women-Players supped with Monsieur la Garouffiere and his Company that Night. They afterwards went to Bed betimes, and next Morning by Break of Day Defling and Leander took each of them their Miftresses behind them, and posted away to Mans, whither Ragotin, Rancour, and Olive, had been gone before. Monfieur la Garouffiere proffered a great deal of Service to Deftiny, on Account of Madam Bouvillon who had feigned her felf sicker than she was, on Purpose that she might not be obliged to take Leave of that Comedian, whom the for the present was not at all pleased with.

CHAP. XVI.

Ragotin's Misfortune.

HE two Comedians that returned to Mans with Ragotin, were led out of their Way by that little Rascal, who would needs treat them at a small Country House of his, which had been built proportionable to his Size. Altho' an exact Historian would now think himself obliged

M to

to tell all themost important Particulars of this Man's Life, and the Places wherein they happened, yet shall not I be very certain in what Part of our Hemisphere this little Hovel of Ragotin's flood, whither he was carrying his Brethren that were to be, being not yet admitted of their Strolling Order. It shall suffice then to inform you, that it was on this Side the Ganges, and not very far off from Sillé le Guillaume. When he had got thither he found his House filled with a Company of Gypsies, who in Spite of his Tenant had got into Possession thereof, and that under Pretence of their Captain's Wife's being ready to lye in, when their truest Reason was that they might have an Opportunity to cat Poultry gratis, at a Farm fo much out of the Road. At his first coming Ragotin began to be extremely angry, as l'ttle Men foonest are, and threatened the Gypses with the Provost of Times to whem he faid he was allied by having married a Portail. Then began he to read his Auditors a long Lecture on the Validity of Relation, without being able at the same Time to forbear is moderate Swearing, which he often intermixt with his Discourse. He threatened them likewise to complain to Provost la Respinie: e's Lieutenant, whose Name alone was enough to make them tremble. But the Gyply Captain raised his Passion Leyond all Patience when he began to compliment and tell him, That if he had before been acquainted with his Quality, he should never have presumed to have fet Foot fo rashly within his Castle, so the waggish Varlet called this little House, which was only fortified with a withered Hedge; he added moreover, That his Lady would foch be delivered, and then he would march away his Troops with Bag and Baggage, but first would fatisfy his Tenant for the Damage he and his Men together with their Horses had done him. Ragetin was at his Wits End to find that he could not reasonably pick a Quarrel with this Fellow, and that especially when he plainly perceived himfelf abused by the many apish Cringes made him: Nevertheless, at last his Choler was raised by the phlogmatic Gyffy, but then it was just at a Time when Rancour and the Captain's Brother began to recollect being formerly acquainted, and who confequently enitracing, foon

foon folddered up the Difference that was about to have proceeded to Ragotin's Disadvantage. Rancour then earneffly begged of his Companion to be quiet, which he was inclinable to hearken to, and would have proffered of himfelf, had not his natural Pride pushed him on beyond his Ability. In the mean Time the Gypsy Lady was brought to Bed of a brave Boy; great was the Joy in the little Troop upon this Occasion, and the Captain thereof, as a Token of his being reconciled to Ragotin, invited both him and his Company to Supper, having already prepared a Fricassee for their Entertainment. They set down to Table, and had besides the Fricasse some Patridges and Hares, which the Gypsies had taken with their Dogs, two young Turkies, and as many Pigs, which they had stolen, a Westphalia-Ham, and several Neats Tongues, which they had got by Stratagem; and lastly, they had a Hare-Pie, borrowed of a Baker, the Crust of which was voraciously devoured by five or fix young Gypfies that stood at their Mother's Elbows. Add to all these another Fricassee of Pigeons which Ragotin gave them, and you must confess they had Cheer enough. The Guests, besides the Comedians, were to the Number of Nine, all good Dancers, and yet better Thieves. They began their Healths with that of the King and Princes, and afterwards proceeded to remember those honest Noblemen that suffered them to harbour within their Jurisdictions. The Captain proposed to the Comedians drinking to the Memory of the deceased Charles Dodo, who was Uncle to the Lying-in Lady, and who had been hanged during the Siege of Rochel, by the Treachery of one Captain la Grave. Every one began to curse that Captain as a false Brother, and at the same Time railed heartily at all Provosts. Ragotin's Wine in the mean while went plentifully about, which had nevertheless this Quality, that it occasioned no Quarrels among the Guests, who even to the Man-hater Rancour, were fo extremely pleafed with one another, that they complimented, and flobbered, and kiffed like so many Beaux. Ragotin for his Part was refolved not to bring a Scandal on his House by Flinching, and therefore fucked up his Tipple like to any Spunge. Having drank all Night one would have thought M 2

they

they should have been fit for Sleep by Sun-rising; but it fo happened, that the same Wine that made them good Friends the Night before, had now inspired them with a Spirit of Separation. They refolved to part therefore, and the Gypfies packing up their Awls, not forgetting to nim something here and there from their Host the Tenant, went one Way, while the jolly Landlord mounting his Mule rod another, and who being now as ferioas as he had been before transported, took his Journey directly towards Mans, not minding in the least whether Rancour or Olive followed him or not, being wholly taken up with blowing a Pipe of Tobacco, which had nevertheless been smoaked out above an Hour before. He had not been gone above half a League, still fucking his empty Pipe, which afforded him not one Whiff of Smoak, before the Fumes of the Wine began to seize his Crownoffice, and consequently soon caused him to tumble out of his Saddle. As foon as the Master was off, the Mule thought she had nothing left to do but to return from whence she came, and therefore instantly posted back to her Stable, while the poor Ragotin, after having indifferently unburthened his furcharged Stomach, fell into a profound Sleep in the Middle of the Highway. He had not slept long, snoring however like a craked Organ pipe, before a naked Man, I mething refembling the Picture of our first Parent, but extremely hairy, dirty, and nafty, came up to him, and began prefently to strip off his Cloaths. This wild Man took more than ordinary Pains in drawing off Ragotin's new Boots, which I have told you fomewhere before, in this true History, his Friend Rancour claimed as his; which one would have thought might have been fufficient to have awaked him, had not he, as the Saying is, been dead drunk; but as he was, all this Force had no other Effectupon him, than to drag him bare breeched two or three Rods from the Place where he first lay. Being thus unmercitully used, a Knife by Chance sell out of the Sleeper's Pocket, which the wild Fellow immediately seizing as if he would have flead the scarce animate Carcas, fell to ripping up his Cloaths, Shirt, Boots and Stockings, with whatever elie he could not eafily get off, and packing them'upon his Back

Back, fled away with them as swiftly as a Wolf would have done with a Lamb. Leave we this Man to run away with his Spoil, he being the same that had formerly so teiribly frighted Deftiny, while he was in Pursuit of Angelica; and let us return to affilt Ragotin, who yet continued afleep, tho' he ought by all Means to be waked. Altho' his naked Body had been for some Time exposed to the scorching Sun, and endured the stinging Assaults of several Sorts of Infects, yet was it not possible to wake him, till some Peafants came by ratling with a Cart. They no fooner perceived him, but they all cried out, There he is, and afterwards coming up foftly, as if they had been unwilling to disturb him, made sure of his Legs and Arms, and binding them fast with good strong Cords, took him up, so hampered, and canted him into their Cart, which they imm-diately drove away with as much Expedition as a Lover would have done a Coach with a stolen Heiress in it. Ragotin was as yet so damnably drunk, that neither the Viclence offered to him, nor the excessive Jolting of his Caravan could possibly awake him, when the Peasants driving on heedlesly, with a great deal of Precipitation, overthrew at length, both him and the Cartin a hugh Slough of Mud and . Water. The fudden Cold he there felt, together with his Bruifing against the Stones, or some such like Thing, at his Fall, foon forced him to be sensible of what a Condition he was in, and the being in that Condition almost made him to run mad. He found himself bound both Hand and Foot, and wallowing like David's Sow in the Mire; he felt his Head ake, as well upon Account of his Drunkenness as Fall: And lastly, could not but extremely wonder to see four Country Fellows lifting him up out of the Water, while as many were employed in dragging the Cart out of the Dirt. This Adventure so exceedingly scared him, that he spoke not one Word, tho' he was naturally a great Talker, and had never to much Occasion as now; and a Moment after he could not possibly have been heard had he spoke never so much, for the Carters untying his Legs only, without giving any Reason or observing any farther Civility to him, immediately began to drive their Cart back to the Place from whencethey came, as violently as they had done it hither. The dif-M-3 . creet

creet Reader may perhaps have a Defire to know what these Fellows would have had with Ragetin, and how they came to do nothing to him, but which I could not pretend to fatisfy him in, had it not come to my Knowledge by Chance. A Priest of the lower Mayne, a little melarcholymad, having been brought up to Paris by a Suit of Law, during the Time his Cause was preparing for a Heating. would needs fpend his Time in printing some whimfical Fancies of his on the Revelations. He was so exceeding fertile in Chimeras, and always fo fond of his last Productions. that he still blotted out the former; whereby his Printers were forced to correct the fame Sheet at least twenty Times over. This made them fo mad, that for every Sheet he was obliged to look out for a new Printer, till at last he happened on the Person that printed this present Romance, wherein he chanced to light upon some Leaves which mentioned this fame Adventure I have told you. This Priest knew more of the Story than I who writ it, having, it feems, been informed from the Peafants own Mouths who had carried aways Ragotin, what had been the Occasion of their fo doing, which I could not possibly have come to the Knowledge of. He saw at first Dash wherein my Relation was defective, and acquainted my Printer therewith, who was extremely futprized at the Information, thinking, with the rest of the World, that my Romance had only been a fabulous Story of my own Invention. Supposing it might be of some Service to me to put me in the Right, my Printer defired he would come and give me a Visit, which he readily consented to. Then did I learn from this faithful Mansean that the Peasants who had bound Ragotin while afleep, were fome of the nearest Relations to the poor Mad-man that run about the Country, who had frighted Destiny in the Night, and stripped Ragotin in the Day time. They had, it feems, refolved among themfelves to coop up their Kinsman whenever they met him, and had made feveral Attempts for that Purpose, but lie still beat them off, and got clear of them, being a stout rugged Fellow. Some Perfons therefore of a neighbouring Village having espied Ragetin lying naked in the Sun, took him for a mad Fellow afleep, but dearing not to come near him for fear of a Beating, they gave Notice of the

Matter

Matter to the Country-Fellows his Relations; who, venturing to feize him, tho' with all the Caution before mentioned, took him without knowing who he was; but difcovering afterwards their Miltake, fet his Feet at Liberty, but not his Hands, for fear he might attempt fomething against them. These Memoirs I had from this Priest pleased me extremely, and I must own, did me no ordinary Service; in Return, I thought I made him sufficient Recompence by advising him not to proceed any farther in the Publishing of his ridiculous wishonary Comment. Some Readers perhaps will now condemn me for having inferted this needless Circumstance, and others, it may be, at the same Time, commend me for my Sincerity. Return we now to Ragotin, with his Body all befmeared and bruifed, his Mouth dry and gaping like to the parched Earth, his Head heavy and dull, and his Arms pinioned behind his Back. He got up as well as he could, and having cast his Eyes round him as far as he could fee, and perceiving neither House nor Man near him, beat it on the Hoof, taking to the nearest Road he could find, and all the Way racking his Brains to find out the Cause of this Disaster. Having his Hands tied behind him, he was not a little incommoded by feveral obstinate Flies, that chose to fix on those Parts of his Body, which by Rea. fon of his being bound, he could not possibly reach, therefore he found himself frequently obliged to lie all along upon the Ground, either to rub off or crush the troublesome. Vermine. At last he came to a hallow Way, having a thick Quick set Hedge on either Side, and wherein a little purling Stream ran down to a neighbouring River. This gave him Occasion to rejoice, hoping thereby to get clear of his Mud and Dirt, which hang plentifully about him. Coming near the Ford, he faw a Coach which had been just then overturned, and out of which the Coachman and another Fellow we e hauling by five or fix Nuns, that had been well drenched in the Water. This Piece of Charity he perceived to be performed at the earnest Exhortations of a venerable Prelate, who stood hard by looking on. Among these Nuns was the old Abbess of Estival who was coming from Mans, whither an Affair of Importance had called. The Abbess and Nuns were no sooner drawn out of.

M4

the Coach, but they perceived at a Distance Ragotin's naked Figure marching towards them, whereat they were extremely affrighted, and much more Father Giflot the discreet Director of the Abby. He caused the devout Sisters to turn their Faces another Way, that they might not defile their Eyes with fo great Impurities, and at the fame Time calling out as loud as he could bawl to Ragotin, commanded him not to approach any nearer at his Peril. Ragotin nevertheless kept onwards on his Way, till at last coming to a long Plank that had been laid a cross the River for People to walk over, he was met in the Middle thereof by Father Giffet, followed by the Coachman and Peafant, who all doubted at first whether they were not best to exercise him. His Figure feemed to them diabolical. At length the Vather took Courage, and demanded of him, Who he was? Whence he came? How he came to be naked? And laftly, What made him to have his Hands tied behind him? All which Questions he asked with a great deal of Gravity and Decorum; which notwithstanding Ragotin answered very faucily, requiring of the Priest, What he had to do to ask him fo many. Questions? And afterwards pressing to go forwards upon the Plank, he pushed the reverend Father so rudely, that he tumbled him over Head and Ears into the Water; the good Priest drew in after him the Coachman, and he in like Manner the Countryman, all which Ragotin perceiving, and being pleased at the Sight, immediatly set up a great Laughter. He afterwards held his Way on towards the Nuns, who covered their Faces with their Veils, and would by no Means be feen by him. Ragotin for his Part was indifferent whether he faw their Faces or not, and confequently went onwards on his Way, thinking speedily to get quit of his Adventure, which nevertheless Father Giflot did not intend he should. He pursued him therefore close with the Countryman and Coachman for his Seconds, which last being naturally the most Choleric of the three, . and besides put out of Humour by the Abesses scolding at him, detached his Body from the reft, and coming up to Ragotin, revenged himself with his Whip on his Hide, for the Water he had bestowed on his. Ragotin durst not abide a fecond Charge, and therefore immediately put himself

nto a Posture to fly. He sed then like a Dog with a Bottle to his Tail, while the incenfed Coachman, not satisfied with a Lash or two, gave him half a Score more to increase his Speed, leaving at every Stroke the Characters f his Wrath, imprinted in Blood upon his Breech. Giflot, tho' almost out of Breath with Running so fast, had yet still enough left to cry out Whip him, whip him foundly; which animated the Coachman to redouble his Stripes, and poor Ragotin to increase his Speed, till at last a Mill presented itself in his Way as an Afylum to save him. He ran in there with the Executioner close at his Heels, and finding the Door of a little back Yard open, he entered it in great Haffe, but which he had no sooner done, than he was caught by the Buttocs by a Mastiff Dog. Thereupon he began to shrick out most dolesully, and flying to an adjoining Garden with great Precipitation, happened to tumble down five or fix Hives of Bees that flood just at his Entrance. This proved much the worst of all his Misfortunes, for these little winged Enemies with their pointed Stings affailing a naked Body that had no A ms to defend it, tormented and blittered him most cruelly. He thereupon bawled out so loud that the Dog that had bitten him was scared away for fear. The same Cause drove away the Coachman and Father Giffet; which last having given his Revenge too great a Loose, and kept his Charity too strait laced; began to repent of his Cruelty, and hastened immediately to call the Muster and his Man to the Assistance of the poor Fellow, who was thus miferably handled in the Ganden. The Miller made no great Haste, nevertheless came at last, when featching up Ragotin from among his venomous Enemies, tho' he might be a little displeased at the overthrow of his Hives, yet had he nevertheless more Charity than the Friest, and began at first Sight to pity him. He then proceeded to demand of him, What the Devil made him to thrust himself while naked, and with his Hands tied, among his Stocks of Bees ? But tho' Ragetin was ... going to answer him, yet could he not, by Reason of the e coeffive Pams he felvall over his Body. A Bear's Cab but newly whelpt, and never licked into Form, could not be to Shapele.s as our Rogotin was in his human Figure, after MI5 having

having been flung by these merciless Creatures, being swelled excessively even from Head to Foot. The Miller's Wife, as pituous as most good Women are, got a Bed provided for him and laid him in it. Father Giffet, the Coachman, and Peasant, returned back to the Abbess of Estival, who. with her Nuns being re-imbarked in their Coach, fet forwards on their Journey under Convoy of the reverend Father mounted on a Mare. It happened that the aforesaid Mill belonged either to du Rignon, or his Son-in-law Bagottiere, I cannot fay whether, this du Rignon it seems was a Relation of Ragotin's, which when the Miller and his Wife came to know, they took more than ordinary Care of him,. and caused a Surgeon from a neighbouring Town to come and Cure him, which he happily performed in a short Time. As foon as he was well able to walk, he returned to Mans, where his Joy for Rancour and Olive's having found his Mule, and brought it Home along with them, foon made him forget his Fall out of the Cart, the Coachman's Lashes, his bighting by the Massiff, and his being. stong by the Bees.

C H A P. XVII.

Some Passages between the little Ragotin and the great Baguenodiere.

Estiny and Star, Leander and Angelica, two Brace of noble and sincere Lovers, arrived at the capital City of Mayne, without meeting any the least Missortune by the Way. Destiny soon re-instated Angelica in her Mother's Favour, to whom he had given so plausible an Account and Character of Leander's Amours and Condition, that Mrs. Cave began now to approve the young Man's Passion, as much as she had before opposed it. The poor Company of Strollers had had no great Reason to biag of their Gettings at Mans, had not a Man of Quality that loved Plays extremely, made them amends for the Losses they had sustained by the Citizens. The greatest Part of this Person's Estate lying in Mayne, he had taken a House at Mans, whither he often invited many as well Countiers as Country Gentry, among whom were sometimes the great-

est Wits, and oftentimes Poets of the first Rank, to all which he approved himself a kind of modern Mecænas. His chiefest Delight was in Comedy, and therefore he not only cherished the Composers thereof, but likewise invited every Year the best Comedians in the Kingdom to come to Mans. This Nobleman happened to come thither much about the fame Time that these poor Strollers were going thence on Account of the Thinness of their Audiences, but he defired them by all Means to continue there a Fortnight longer; and the better to encourage them to it, presented them with a hundred Pittoles, promifing to give them as many more at their Departure. He was glad of this Occasion to Divert feveral Persons of Quality of both Sexes, that he had brought along with him to Mans, and who were to make fome short stay there at his Request. This Lord, whom I will call here the Marquis of Orfe, was a great Hunter, and had brought all his hunting Equipage to Mans, which in every respect was the finest that could be met with in France. The Downs and Forests of the Country of Mayne made it to be one of the best Places for those Sports in the whole Kingdom, and that either for Deer or Hares; and it being now the Seafon for fuch like Divertisements, the City of Maus was full of Huntsmen, which the approaching Festival had drawn thither, most of them with their Wives. These were extremely ravished at the sight of the Court Gallantry, thinking they flould now have Matter fufficient to furnish them with chat for the longest Winter's Evening. It is not the least Ambition of the Country People to be able to relate fornetimes and brag, that at such a Time, and in such and fuch a Place, they had feen fuch and fuch Courtiers, whom they falute only by their Sir-names, and mention without any addittion of Title; for Example, one will tell you he lost his Money to Roquelaur, Crequi won fo much, Conquin hunted a Stag in Touraine and the like. But if you fuffer them to enter either upon Politics or War, they will never cease talking till they have drained the Subject as Dry as they were at first empty. But let us here put an end to our Digression. Mans was then filled with Nobility and Gentry of all forts: The Inns were crouded with Guells, and the greatest Part of the principal Citizens who lodged

lodged fuch Courtiers or Country Gentry as were their Friends, had in a short Time their best Linnen fouled, and their Family Provisions exhausted. The Strollers quickly opened their Shop, refolving to let their Customers have lumping Penny-worths, fince they had been fo well paid before hand. The Citizens of both Sexes prepared for the . Diversion, and the Town and Country-Ladies were over. joyed to behold every Day the Court-Madams from whom they learned to dress alamode, or at least better than they were wont to do; which tho' it occasioned Expence to their Husbands, yet was of exceeding Benefit to their Taylors, who by these Means had many an old Gown to alter. They had a Ball every Night, where feveral wretched Dancers . moved awkardly in Courants, and many young Citizens triped it about in Holland Drawers, and waxed Slippers. Madam Star and Madam Angelica fired the Hearts of most of the young Men that saw them, and raised Envy in the greatest Part of the Women. Inezilla, who danced a Saraband at the Request of the Players, was admired, and Roquebrune was just ready to die with Love at the Sight. of it. Ragotin likewise confessed to Rancour, that if he dld not quickly bring him into Favour with Star, France would foon have Reason to lament the Loss of him. Rancour presently gave him Hopes, and as a more particular Testimony of his Friendship, desired him to lend him twenty or thirty Francs. Ragolin turned pale at this surprizing Request, and not only repented of, but was also ready to renounce his Love. However, at length that domineering -Passion prevailing in him, he made up the Sum demanded, . out of different Kinds of Money, and out of several Pockets; and gave them with a forrowful Countenance to Rancour, who engaged at the same Time, that in less than twenty four Hours he should be fure to hear himself talked of .. That Day was acted Sir Noisy Parrot, a Play as merry as he that writ it had Cause to be sad. The Audience was numerous; the Comedy indifferently well played, and every Body was well enough pleased, except the unfortunate Ra. gotin. He, thro' fome Occasion or other, came to the House late, and therefore must crowd in where he could get a Seat. His ill Fortuse had placed him just behind a Country Gentlemau.

tleman of the largest Size, who had a great loose Coat on, which not a little increased his Bulk. Besides his spreading Haunches, Chine and Shoulders, he was of a Stature fo much taller than other Men, that altho' he fat down, Ragotin, who was but one Row off him, thought he flood a Tip-toe, and therefore cried out incessantly to him to sit. down like the rest, not believing that one who sat on the fame Bench could be fo much taller than any of his Companions. The Gentleman whose Name was la Baguenodiere, knew not for some Time that Ragotin had spoke to him, till at length being fliled by the Title of the Gentleman with the Green Feather, whereof indeed he had a very . flaunting one in his Hat, but that none of the cleanest nor finest, he turned his Head about-and saw the little Importinent, who thereupon bid him, somewhat roughly, to sit drun. This, nevertheless la Buguenodiere was so little moved at, that he turned his Face again very gravely towards. the Stage, as if nothing had been faid to him; hereat Ragotin began to call to him again to fit down, but which he took as little Notice of as before, only turning about and looking upon him, and then returning to his former Posture. This at last so vexed Ragetin, that he bawled out to him again: a third Time; which, notwithstanding, la Baguenodiere regarded as little as formerly. During all the Time the Play lasted, Ragotin still treated him after the like Manner in great Fury, and la Eaguenodiere as often looked upon him with the same Unconcern, without speaking a Word to him; which was sufficient to have enflamed the most phlegmatic Soul in the World. One might have compared la . Baguenodiere, in this Adventure, to a large Mastiff, and Ragorin to a little Cur that tuns backing at him by his Side, which provokes the great Dog fo little, that in Contempt ? of him he only steps aside, and lifting up his Leg, pisses against the Wall. At length the whole Company began to take Notice of what had passed between the largest and the least Man among them, and every one pursumed to smile at it, just at the Time that Ragotin began to swear and rave thro' Impatience, while la Baguenodiere returned him only a cold and indifferent Glance. This Baguenodiere was at the same Time the largest Man, and the greatest Brute in

the

the World, I should have said Clown. Hedemanded with his accustomed Gravity, of the two Gentlemen that fat next him, what they laughed at? to which they inflantly replied very ingenuously, that it was at him and Ragotin; whereby it seems they thought rather to have tickled than displeased him. However it so happened that it disgussed him, and made him to reply in a great Rage, then you are a Couple of Soits: Which Affront he cast in their Teeth with fo great Indignation, and fuch a fower Look, that they pretently perceived he was pigu'd, and therefore thought themselves obliged in requital of his Compliment to give him each, of them, a good found Box o'th' Ear. La Baguenodiere having his Arms hampered in his Coat, could do nothing to them again at first, but hunch them to and fio with his Elbows, which the two Gentlemen that were Brothers, and naturally very brisk, taking the Advantage of, before he could well difengage himself, gave him half a Dozen more swinging Cuffs on the Chaps, which they happened to deliver with such an equal Measure of Time, that those who heard the Sound, without seeing the Blows given, thought verily they had been so many fingle Claps. At last Baguenodicre got his Arms free f om under his combersom Coat, but being so close pressed by the two active Brothers, who boxed him most unmercifully all the while, he had not Room to move those carnal Weapons. He found himself therefore obliged to retreat, which going to do forwards, pardon the Incongruity of the Expression, his Enemies having secured him behind and on either Side, chanced to fall on a Man below him, and by the Weight of his Body, tumbled both him and his Seat down upon the unfortunate Rogotin; who I should have told you, not finding himself able to prevail with the Country Gentleman to let him see over him, had got a Seat a little under him; who was thereby forced down upon another, that beat him backwards upon another, and fo onwards to the last Man or Woman, no Matter which, that fat below; whereby all these Tumblers in this Condition looked just like so many Ninepins that had been dextroufly tiped by a skilful Touch of one. The Noise of the Persons tumbling, the crushed Legs, the frighted Maids, the crying Children,

the babling Women, and in a Word, of those that laugher's. of others that lamented, and lastly of such as either claped or hiffed, made fuch a confused Din, as one would have thought could have happened no where but in the Valley of Jehosaphat at the last Day. Never did such a triffing Cause occasion so many great Accidents; but that in my Opinion, which was the most wonderful, was that there happened not to be one Sword drawn, tho' the Scuffle first began among those that wore them, and whereof there were above a Hundred in the Company. I was equally furprized at Baguenodiere's Stupidness, who could cust and be cuffed, and receive Ashaults and make them, as if he had been about the most indifferent Thing in Nature. It was farther observed as another Instance of his Dulness or Sullenness, call it which you please, that he had not once. opened his Mouth all that Afternoon, except when he uttered those unmannelly Words, which brought such a Shower of Cuffs about his Ears; neither did he afterwards, speak one more all that Night, so well was this huge Man's Flegm and Taciturnity proportioned to his Bulk. grand Confusion of Seats and Persons huddled together, was no small Time putting in Order; which while some were bufy about, and others charitably interposing between the three Combatants, who by this Time were got to Fifty-cuffs again, a fudden Howling was heard as proceeding from ... under Ground. Who could this now be but Raguin? For Fortune when the has once begun to pe fecute any poor Wretch, seldom leaves tormenting him till she has undone him. It feems the Seat which this little Imp fut upon, was placed on a Plank that lay over a Drain belonging to the Tennis-Court, which Deain is commonly in the Middle, just under the Line. It was an ordinary Receptacle for the Rain-Water, or any Filth that was swept a vay, and this Plank ferved as a Lid to cover it. But as Time confumes all Things, fo had it rotted this to that Degree, that Ragotin's Weight being greatly increased by those that fell upon him in the late Hurly-burly, it presently gave Way under him, and he immediately falling in had the Misfor une to have another Man of a confiderable Bulk fall upon hin, whose Leg, which by the Way, was both booted

and

and spured, slipped into the Hole where Ragetin's whole Body lay; the Spur fo pricked this poor Creature's Th. oat, that it obliged him to howl after a most frightful manner. A Stander-by observing the Accident, and giving the Man his Hand to lift him out, Rogetin perceiving the Foot leaving him, gave it so terrible a nip with his Teeth, even . through the Boot, that the Man letting go his hold dropt down again, thinking verily he had been bit by a Serpent. He likewise gave so frightful a Shriek at the same Time, .. that the Fellow who was helping him out ran away for Fear. The same Person recovering himself soon after, lent him his Hand again, and then at one lufty Pull he brought both him and Ragetin out at once, who it feems had the -Wit to hold by the Man's Coat. The little Man no fooner faw the Light again, than he began to threaten every Body with his Nods and Looks, but more especially those whom he observed to laugh at him. He afterwards thrust himself among the Crowd that were now going out, meditating all along upon fomething that should prove as honourable for him to perform, as fatal to his Adversary . Baguenodiere. I never came to know whether this last Person and the two Brothers ever accommodated their Difference or not, however they happened to fall out, but this I heard, that they never afterwards affaulted each other. This was what disturbed the first Play that our Comedians afted before the illustrious Company then assembled at Mans.

C:H'A P. XVIII. .

Which has no Occasion for a Title.

Ext was represented Nicomedes, a Play written by the incomparable Monsieur Gorneille. This Comedy is a mirable in my Judgment, being the only one of his that has most of its Author's own in it. In it he has sufficiently displayed the richness of his Genius, and given all its Persons bold and shining Characters, but that quite different from each other. While this was playing there happened to be no Disturbance, and which it may be, fell out by Reason that Ragetin was absent. Scarce a Day passes

wherein he did not meet with some Broil or other, to which his prevish Pride and rash Presumption exposed him as much as his ill Fortune; which fcarce till now had given him the least Respite. The little Man had spent his Afternoon with Inexilla's Husband, the Operator Ferdinando a Norman by Birth, tho' he called himself a Venetian, and who, as I have already told you, profest Chymistry; tho' to speak freely, he was a great Quack, or rather a great Cheat. Rancour to rid himself of the tedious Importunities of Ragotin, to whom he flood engaged to make Madam Star love him, had it feems inclined this little Fellow to believe that this Operator was a great Magician, and could by his Art force the wifest Woman in the World to run after a Man in her Smock, but that he did not care to practife much that way, except for a particular Friend, whose Discretion he was well satisfied of, by Reason he had formerly undergone fome Trouble by being overperfuaded by fome great Lords at Court. He counfelled Ragotin therefore to do his utmost to gain his Friendship, which he nevertheless told him was no easy Matter to do, the Operator being a Man of Parts, and would confequently effeem only such as were so likewise, but then where he once took a Fancy to a Man he kept nothing Secret from him. One need only to praise or commend a proud Fellow to get what one will out of him; when it is quite otherwise with the Meek and Humble, for they are not so easily imposed upon. Rancour then persuaded Ragotin to what he pleased, and he went immediately and persuaded the Operator that he was a great Magician. I shall not need to repeat all he faid to him; it fuffices that the Operator being prepared by Rancour beforehand, acted his Part so well, that he denied his Profession, only that his Bubble might be the more enclinable to believe it. Razotin then as I have faid before, staid the whole Asternoon with him; but by Reason the Operator had then a Chymical Preparation in Hand, he would by no Means fatisfy him in any thing that Day, and which occasioned our impertinent Mansean to have but an ill Night of it after he went from him. Next Morning betimes he got to the Operator's Chamber before he was up, which Inexilla took

took very ill, she not being then so youthful as to come out of her Ded as fresh as a Rose, and for that Reason always required some Hours in private, before she could be ready for a public View. She therefore immediately flipped into her Closet, her She-Blackmore following her with Love's Ammunition, and left her Husband and Ragotin to discourse the Matter at Liberty. Ferdinando than began to open his Magazine of Miracles and Performances, but would nevertheless promise to perform nothing for him. Rogotin would therefore needs incline him to it by Demonstrations of his Bounty, and consequently invited both him and his Wife to Dinner. The Men and Women-Players were invited likewife. I shall not give you any Particulars of their Entertainment, I would only have you to take Notice, that they were very merry and fed heartily. After Dinner Inexilla was defired by Deftiny and the other Comedians to read some little Spanish Novel or other to them, which she had either composed herself, or translated by Help of the divine Roquébrune; who had sworn by Apollo and the nine Muses, that in fix Months Time he would teach her all the Graces and Perfections of the French Tongue. Inexilla was so obliging that she did not require much Intreaty, and therefore while Ragotin was taken up with confulting the Magician Ferdinando, she read the following Novel, with a most charming Voice, and judicious Accent. -

CHAP. XIX.

The two Rival Brothers. A Novel.

Orothea and Feliciana de Montfalva were two the mostamiable Ladies in all Sevil, but the they had not been such, yet their Fortunes and Quality were so very, considerable, that those alone had been sufficient to have engaged any Gentleman to court them, that had Inclinations to be well married. Don Manuel their Father had not yet declared himself in Favour of any Person, and Dorothea, who as his eldest Daughter ought to have been first married, had, like her Sister, so well managed her Looks and.

Astions, that the most confident Pretenders to her had yet Reason sufficient to doubt whether their Addresses would be well or ill received. However these fair Sisters never went to Mass without a great Croud of Lovers after them, exceeding sparklish tricked up, and they never came near the Holy-Water but there were Hands of all forts and fizes ready to dip with them, out of a peculiar kind of Devotion. Whenever they happened but to lift off their Eyes from their Prayer-Books, they immediately became the Center of I know not how many wishful Glances; and they could not make the least Step in the Church but they had prefently abundance of Courtifies to returnto the great number of Beaux that bowed to them on all Sides. But however troublesome were the Civilities paid to them in Public, the frequent [Serenades under their Windows made them confiderable amends, and rendered that Restraint supportable which they were obliged to undergo by the Cuftom of their Country. Hardly a Night passed but they were regailed with some Music or other and often in the Day time there was running at the Ring, and Tilting just under their Windows, which looked towards the Market-place, most proper for those Exercises. One Day amongst the rest, a Stranger begot the Admiration of the Spectators by his wonderful Address, beyond the Ability of any of the Gentry of the City, who was likewise observed by the two Sisters to be a very complete Cavalier. Divers Persons of Sevil, who had been formerly his Acquaintance in Flanders, where he had commanded a Regiment of Horse, invited him to run at the Ring. with them, which he accordingly performed in a Soldier's. Habit. Some Days after, there happened the Confectationof a Bishop at Sevil. The Stranger, who went by the Name of Don Sancho de Sylva, would needs be at the Ceremony, and confequently appeared in the Church, together with the greatest Gallants of the City. The fair Sifters came thither likewise, with many other Ladies disguised after the Mode of the Place, with Mantles of thick. Stuff, and Hats with Plumes of Feathers in them. Sancho had by Chance placed himfelf between the two Sifters and another Lady whom he accosted; but she defiring

hira

him civily to defift, and leave a Place next her for a Friend she expected, he obeyed her, and turned towards Dorothea de Montsalva, who fat nearer him than her Sifter, and had observed all that passed betwixt him and the Lady. " I was in hopes, Madam, quoth he, addressing himself to Dorothea, that the Lady there, to whom I have just ' made my Applications, would not have refused me her ' Conversation, upon the Account of my being a Stranger, but she has justly rewarded my Presumption in thinking · I had any thing tolerable to offer. I nevertheless besech -' you Madam, continued he, to shew more Pity and Ge-' nerofity to a Gentleman who has a mind to experience ' the Bounty of the Ladies of Sevil.' You give me much greater Cause to use you ill than you have done this Lady, replied Dorothea, fince you offer me only what the had before refused; but that you may have no real Reason to Complain of our Ladies of this Country. I confent to Converse with you as long as this Ceremony lasts, to convince you I have no Affignation to attend. 'That is what does not a little surprize me, replied Don Sanche, being fo wonderfully beauteous as you are, and which makes me inclinable to believe, that either you are very formidable, the Gallants of this Town very faint-hearted, or elfe that the Person, whose Place I now usurp, is ' absent.' And do you believe then, Sir, quoth Dorothea, that I am so little skilled in the Art of Love, that I could not refrain from appearing in Public without my Gallant, if I had any? For the future you would do well not to entertain such unbecoming Opinions of those you are wholly unacquainted with. 'You may be convinced, · Madam, replied Don Sancho, that I have a better Opi-' nion of you than you imagine, if you would but allow ' me to adore you fuitable to my Inclinations.' Our first Motions are always fallacious, answered Dorothea and besides there are no small Difficulties te be encountered in the performing of what you propound. 'There are none fo great, replied Don Sancho, but I would endeavour to ' furmount them all, to gain the Honour of your Esteem.' That is not the Work of a few Days, repartee'd Derothea, .. you do not confider perhaps, Sir, that .. you do but travel

thro' Sevil, and it may be, are ignorant that I should not well like to be beloved only en passant. But grant me, Madam, what I humbly request, replied Don Sancho, and I will be bound to continue in Sevil as long as I live.' Now you speak like yourself, replied Dorothea; and I cannot but wonder, continued she, that a Person that was able to fay so many fine Things, should not before this have provided himself with a Mistress to exhaust his Gallantry upon. Is it, added she, that he never yet thought any of them worth his Trouble? 'It is rather, replied Don Sancho, out of a distrust he has of his Abilities, Arfiver me percifely, Sir, continued Dorotheas to what I shall now demand of you, which is this; Which among all your Ladies is it that would be soonest able to keep you in Sevil, were it her request? 'I have told you already, Madani, replied Don Sancho, that you might, if ' you so pleased, the soonest of any.' You never faw me before, Sir, quoth Dorothea, therefore pray let fome other happy Lady be the Person. ' I must acknowledge then, answered Don Sancho, fince you command it of me, ' that had Dorethea de Montfalva as great a stock of Wit as I have discovered in you, I should think that Man happy whose Merit and Services she could smile upon. There are many Ladies in Sevil, replied Dorothea, that not only equal but excel her. But added she, have you ever yet heard that among all the Crowd of her Admirers she ever favoured one more than another? 'As I found myfelf · very far from deserving her Favour, answered Don San-' cho, I never troubled myself to enquire into the good " Fo. tune of others.' Why should you not think you self as deserving as another, demanded Dorothea? Womens Humours are for the most Part unaccountable, added she, and it often happens that the first Assault of a Stranger has better Success with them than the continued Siege of a constant Votary. 'You have got a very pretty way to eget rid of me quoth Don Sancho; for notwithstanding what you have faid, I plainly perceive that the Services of a new Comer will not at all be acceptable to you, in ' prejudice of some more happy Persons you have before been engaged to.' Do not let that enter into your Head, replyed

replied Dorothea, but believe rather, that I am not fo easy as to be cajolled with the bare Pretence of a Passion from one that never faw me in his life. . If that be only wanting, · Madam, to compleat my happiness, replied Don Sanclo, ' conceal yourfelf no longer from a Stranger that has been already so charmed with your Wit.' You would not be so much with my lace, answered Dorothea, if you faw it. ' Ah! you cannot chuse but be most lovely, replied Don Sancho, firce you so freely confess you are ' fo; nay, now I have greater Cause than ever to believe ' you are weary of my Company, fince that I either feem Troublesome, or because every Corner of your Heart has been already taken up by others. It were unjust therefore continued he, that your Goodness should be any ' longer trespassed upon by my Boldness, and which I ' had discontinued before, had not I had a mind to con-' vince-you that I had more honourable Defigns, when I ' made you the faithful Tenders of my Life and Freedom, ' than to make you my Pastime and Diversion.' And to shew you, replied Dorothea, that I do not think that Time lost which I have spent in hearing you, I will be contented to continue with you fo much longer as may fuffice to let me know who you are. 'It cannot be my Crime then to · fatisfy you answered Don Sancho, and therefore I shall ' proceed to do it. Know then most amiable unknown ' Lady, added he, that my Name is Sylva, which I had ' from my Mother; that my Father is Governor of Quitto ' in Peru; that I am travelling this Way by his Orders; and that I have before spent some Part of my Life in · Flanders, where I have by Services attained to the chiefeft Commands in the Army; and laftly, had confirmed ' upon me a Commandery of the Order of St. Jago. This, ' in few Words continued he, is a faithful Account of what ' I am, but what I would be all my Lifelong, rests only in · your Power to give me leave to express in a Place less ' public than this.' That shall be as soon as possible, replied Derothea; but in the mean Time to prevent your Defires of knowing more of me at prefent, unless you mean to run the Hazard of not knowing me at all, know that I am of Quality, and that my Face is not fo homely as to frighten

you. This faid, Don Sancho took his Leave with a most profound Bow, and weat up to a Company of Gentlemen that were then discourfing together in a Knot. Some fullen Ladies now, who are ever centuring others Conducts, and magnifying their own; who take upon themselves the Arbitration of what is good or ill, tho? one might lay odds in a Wager on their Vertues, as not easy to be made appear, and who fancy that for a little brutish Coyness, and pretended religious Squeamishness, they have a Title to Supererogation in point of Honour, tho' the Wantonness of their pail Youth hath left more Scandal than ever their crabbed Wrinkles will be able to give good Examples. These mumping Madams, I say, to short fighted as to their own Faults, will perhaps be apt to affirm, that Madam Dorothea had too indifcreetly managed herfelf in the late Rencounter, and that not only in receiving Addresses so kindly from a Person she never saw before, but likewise in suffering him to make Love to her at all; and farther, that if any young Lady whom they had the Government of should have done as much, she should not have long continued above Ground. But let these Novice-Ladies learn from me, that every Country has its peculiar Customs and Manners, and that tho' in England and France, where the Women and Maids walk about at Liberty, they are or ought to be offended at the least Declaration of Love made them by a Stranger; yet in Spain it is quite otherwise, for there the Women being all cloister'd up like Nuns, are glad of every Occasion of having Love tendered them, altho' it were from one that had not the least Thing worthy about him. Nay, the Women there go farther, for they commonly make the first Overtures, and are first taken, by Reason they are last to be seen, having only an Opportunity to see the Men through their Veils, and that but at Church in the Walks, from their Balconies, or thro' their Grates. Dorothea made her Sifter Feliciana acquainted with the Conversation she had with Don Sancho, and moreover frankly owned to her as her Confidence, that the thought him able the most agree Cavalier in all Sovil. Her Sifter very much approved her Defign upon his Liberty. The two fair Ladies entertained each other for some Time on the Advantages and Privileges

vileges that Men had above Women. They urged that Women were never to be married but at the Pleasure of their Parents, which did not alway fuit with their Inclinations, when Men are at Liberty to pick and chuse where they pleafed, and marry when they pleafed. 'As ' for my Part, faid Dorothea to her Sister, Love shall ' never make me do any Thing contrary to my Duty; and I am resolved, continued she, never to marry any · Man but who shall fingly possess all those good Qualities which are only to be found disperced among divers others; and, added the farther, I would rather chuse to be shut ' up in a Convent, than to marry a Man I could not like.' Feliciana told her that was her Resolution too, and they both together confirmed each other in their Opinions, with all the Reasoning their Ingenuity could furnish them with. Dorothea found it a little difficult to perform her Promise to Don Sancho. which she had given him to make herfelf known to him, and confequently acquainted her Sister with the Perplexity she was in. Feliciana, who was happy in finding out Expedients, put her Sister in mind of a Lady that was a Relation of theirs, and more than that, an intimate Friend, for all Relations are not fo, who she was certain would serve her faithfully in any Affair that concerned her Happiness so much as this did. ' You know, fays this good Sister to her, that Mariana, ' who has been a long while serviceable to us, is married to a Surgeon, and lives in a House belonging to our ' Kinfwoman, and adjoining to hers, which two Houses have a Door of Communication betwixt them, Now, ' continued she, these two Houses stand in a By-part of the Town, and tho' it may be observed we go oftner to ' visit our Relation than ordinary, yet will it not be taken onotice of that Don Sancho goes to a Surgeon's; besides ' he may take the Opportunity of the Night, or else go ' disguised to avoid Discovery.' Whilst Derothea was contriving this Intrigue, by the help of her Sister, and inflructing her Kinswoman and Mariana in what they had to do, Don Sancho's Thoughts were wholly taken up ahout his unknown Lady. He could not fatisfy himself whether she had made those Fromises of farther Discove-

ry to abuse him or not, or whether he did not see her every Day, tho' disguised, either at Church, in her Window, or elsewhere receiving the Adoration of her Gallants. Whilst he was thus in doubt, and one Morning dressing himself in order to look after her, a veiled Lady came to the Door to ask for him. Being admitted, she delivered him the following Billet.

SIR,

I Should sooner have let you heard from me had it been in my Power. But if the Desires you have shown to be acquainted with me be not yet wholly vanished; be pleased to accompany the Bearer, about the Dusk of the Evening, to a Place where she shall conduct you, and where it is probable you may find,

Your humble Servant.

You may better imagine, than I express, the Joy that Don Sancho conceived at this News. He embraced the Ambassadiess with all possible Acknowledgments, and moreover prefented her with a Gold Chain, which she after a modest Refusal accepted. She appointed him a remote Place to meet her in, without Attendants, in the Evening, and fo departed, leaving him the best satisfied, tho' at the same Time the most impatient Man in the World. At length Night came, and she failed not to be at the Place of Assignation richly habited and persumed. He was conducted by her first into an ill-savoured little House, and afterwards into a very fair Apartment, where he found three Ladies veiled. He prefently distinguished his unknow Mistress from the rest by her Shape and Stature, and therefore immediately addressed himself to her intreating her to pull off her Veil. She made no great Difficulty to comply with his Request, and therefore both she and her Sister forthwith discovered themselves to the happy Don Sancho, to be the two beautiful Ladies Dorothea and Feliciana de Montsalva. 'You may now perceive I told you true, faid Dorothea to him, throwing off her Veil, when I affured ' you that a Stranger might sometimes obtain more Kinde nefs

* ness from us Women in a Minute, than the most im
* portunate of our Lovers could do by many Years Court
* ship. And, continued she, you would be the most un
* grateful Person of your Sex, did you either not highly

* esteem the Favour I have done you, or misinterpret it to

* my Disadvantage.' I shall ever value what I receive from you, replied Don Sancho passionately, as if it came from Heaven, and you may be able to guess by the Care I shall take to preserve to myself the Favour you have done me, that if I ever am so unhappy as to let it be known, it will rather be the effect of my Missortune than Crime.

They said, in short, without controul, All what such Lowers use to say, When Lowe is Master of the Soul.

The Mistress of the House, and Feliciana, who had been before instructed what they had to do, were retired to a convenient Distance from the two Lovers, whereby they gave them an opportunity to exchange their mutual Affections with greater Ardency than they had time to do at their first Meeting, as likewise to appoint another Assignation to enflame them yet more if possible. Derethea promised Don Sancho to give him as many Meetings as she could conveniently, for which he returned her all the Acknowledgments he was capable of making. The two other Ladies entertained each other apart for some Time; but at length Mariana thought herself obliged to acquaint the Lovers that it was time to separate; at which Dororothea was presently concerned, and Don Sancho visibly changed Countenance; however part they must. The gallant Cavalier wrote the next Day to his fair Mistress, and had an Answer suitable to his Wishes; but I cannot pretend to give you a fight of their Letters, by reason that none of them ever came to my Hands. What I can fatisfy you in is that they met often in the same Place, and after the fame Manner, and at length arrived to that Fervency of Affection, that without murthering themselves like Pyramis and Thiste, they might well have been said to be as passionate Lovers. It is a common faying, That Love, Fire, and Money cannot lie long concealed. Dorothea, who had

had the gallant Stranger continually in her Mind, could not forbear talking of him frequently, taking all Occasions to fet him so much above all other Gentlemen of Sevil, that at last some Ladies, who had concealed Assections as well as she, and who observed her continually crying up Don Sancho, not only took Notice of, but were piqued at it. Her Sister Feliciana had often advised her to be more cautious, and above a hundred times in Company, when she was even transported in his Praise, would tread upon her Toes, till she had almost crippled her, to desist. last thro' her Indiscretion, her Intrigue came to one of her Admirer's Knowledge, by means of a Lady a Friend of his. He had Reason enough to believe her in Love with Don Sancho, fince from the time that Stranger first appeared in the City, neither he nor any of her other humble Servants could obtain the least favourable Look from her. This Rival of Don Sancho's was rich, of a good Family, and very well received by Don Manuel, who nevertheless had not yet pressed his Daughter to marry him, because as often as he talked of any such Thing to her, the had always conjured him not to marry her to young. This Gentleman, I begin to recollect his Name was Don Diego, had a mind to be fully affured of what he had yet but suspected, he had one of those Valet de Chambre which we call spruce Fellows, who wear as good Linen as their Masters, and sometimes that of their Masrers, who bring up Fashions among the inferior Servants, and are as much, or rather more envied by the Waitingwomen than beloved by them. This Fellow's Name was Gusman, who having a small Tincture of Poetry, composed those forts of Sonnets at Madrid, which in London and Paris we call Ballads. He was accustomed to fing them to his Guittar, but that never plain and downright, but always attended with the ridiculous Gestures of his Head and Body. He moreover danced the Sarabande, was never without Castagnets, would more than once have got to be a Player, had he not as often been refused; and to make up the Composition of his Character, was fomewhat inclined to the Bully; tho' to tell you the Truth, it was that of the most sneaking Kind. All these noble Ta-

N 2

lents.

lents, added to a little Eloquence his Memory had furnished him with from his Matter's Table talk, made him to be the Idol, if I may fo speak, of all those Servant Maids that had best Opinions of themselves. Don Diego commanded him to cast an Ogle or two upon Isabella, a young Wench that waited on the two Ladies Dorothea and Feliciana de Montsaiva. He forthwith obeyed his Master's Commands, and Isabella was almost as soon caught in the Trap as it was fet for her, believing herfelf not a little happy to be beloved by Gu/man, whom she in a short Time loved again, as he in a little while after did her really, tho' his first Intentions were only to impose on her by his Master's Orders, and for his Ends. As the Love of Gu/man was a Thing much coveted amongst the Servant Maids of that City, fo was Isabella's Fortune as great as the most ambitious Valet de Chambre could expect to be raised to. She was very well beloved by her Mistresses, from whom she received many Favours, and was besides in Expectation of a Fortune from her Father an honest Tradesman. Gusman then thinking seriously on the Mat. ter, refolved to be her Husband, as she on her Part did to be his Wife; and therefore having only taken one another's Words, they lived together as fuch. Isabella was not a Bittle displeased to observe that Mariana the Surgeon's Wife, at whose House Dorothea and Don Sancho had their private Meetings, still continued to be their Confidante, in a Business whence she knew must come a great deal of Profit She had found out the Gold Chain which Sancho had given her, and befides, discovered many other Presents he had made her, and moreover imagined that there might have been several more which she knew nothing of. This caused her to hate Mariane to Death, and which inclines me to believe that this young Lafs was not a little mercenary. It is no Wonder then if at the first Request her dear Gujman made her to tell him truly, whether her Mistress Dorothea was in Love or not; the confessed the whole Secret to him, on whom she had beslowed her Heart. She informed him therefore of as much as the knew of the Intrigue between the two Lovers, and concluded all with railing at Mariane for depriving her of her Vails, which-

fhe

Part II. Scarron's Comical Romance. 269

the faid were due to her as a Servant of the House. Gusman defired of her farther to let him know the Day and Hour when the Lovers were next to meet, which she soon after satisfied him in, and he consequently acquainted his Master with not only that, but likewise all the rest he had? learned from treacherous Isabella. Don Diego hereupon habited himself like a Beggar, and taking his Post just at Mariane's Door the Night that his Man had informed him the Rendezvous was to be, he faw his Rival enter there, and fome Time after a Coach flopping before Dorothea's Cousin's House, observed both his Mistress and her Sister to come out thereof and go in there, which you may imagine left him in no fmall Rage, well knowing what a fecret Communication there was between the two Houses. He plotted therefore from that very Minute, to rid himfelf of fo formidable a Rival as Don Sancho might prove. The furest Way to take him off he thought was by Assassins, and confequently forthwith hired two for that End. With these he watched for him divers Nights together, and at last meeting him, set on him with the Assistance of histwo Bullies, both like himself well armed. Don Sancho no fooner perceived their Intentions than he put himfelf in a Potlure of Defence, being also indifferently well provided. for that Purpose; for over and above his Sword and Ponyard, he had two Pistols ready charged fluck in his Girdle. Don Diego was more forward to engage than his Companions, who were only led on by the Hopes of Gain. Don Sancho at first gave Ground out of Policy; till he had drawn his Affailants to a convenient Distance from the Houe where Dorothea was. But at length fearing he might receive Prejudice if he still continued on the Defensive, and perceiving Don Diego to press more vigorously than ordinary upon him, he let fly one of his Pistols at him, and: brought him to the Ground half dead, but nevertheless crying out and bawling for a Priest as if he were mad. At the bare Hearing the Report of a Pistol the Bullies immediately trooped off. Don Sancho retired to his Lodgings, and the Neighbours coming out of their Houses to see what was the Matter, found the wounded Man just expiring, who nevertheless had so much Life left as to accuse Don Sancho

N:

270 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II.

of his Murther. This our Cavalier had some Notice of, by means of his Friends, who told him moreover, that altho? the Law could not reach him, yet would not Don Diego's Relations let his Death be unrevenged, but rather feek all Opportunities to murther him wherever they could meet him to Advantage. Don Sancho hearing this, thought it his best way to retire to a Convent, where he knew he might be fafe, which he immediately did, and from thence fent his dear Dorothea an Account of his Safety, ordering his Affairs so in the mean Time, that he might be ready to leave Scuil at the shortest Warning. Whilst Matters passed thus, the Magistrates of the City were doing their best to find Den Sancho out, but all to no Purpose. After the heat of the Search was a little over, and every body was of Opinion he was got clear off, Dorethea and her Sifter under pretence of Devotion, were carried by their Coufin to the fame Monastery whither Sancho had retired. There the two Lovers had another Meeting in the Chapel, where they mutually promised eternal Constancy and Fidelity to each other; and at parting uttered fo many moving Expressions, that Feliciana, her Kinswoman, and the good Monk that attended, wept exceedingly, and which they were always afterwards inclinable to do whenever the Remembrance of this Interview came into their Minds Don Sancho foon after got from Sevil in Difguise, leaving Letters behind him with his Father's Factor to be transmitted to the Indies by the first Opportunity. By these Letters be gave his Father an Account of what had befallen him, and which had obliged him to leave Sevil to retire to Naples for the Safety of his Life. He arrived there in a little Time, and was very kindly received by the then Vice-Roy, to whom he had the Honour to have formerly belonged. Notwithstanding the great Favours shewed him, he nevertheless led but an uneasy Life in Naples for above a Year or more, and that by Reason he had heard no News all that while of his dear Dorothea. Some small time after the Pice-Roy equipped fix Gallies to go out a cruizing after the Algerines. Don Sancho's Courage would not suffer him to neglect fo fair an Occasion of shewing it, and therefore he was resolved to engage in this Enterprize. The Admiral that-

com-

Part II. Scarron's Comical Romance. 2716

commanded received him on Board his Gally, and lodged him in his own Cabbin, being not a little proud that he had a Person of his Quality and Merit to accompany him. These fix Neopolitan Gallies met eight Algerines almost within Sight of Meffina, and were not long before they engaged them. After a dubious Fight the Christians took. three of the Turks and funk two. 'The Neopolitan Admiral happened to be grappled with the Turkish Admiral, which being better manned than the rest, had a much greater Refiltance. The Sea in the mean Time grew rugged, and the Storm increased so fast, that at length both Christians and Turks had more Regard to their own Safeties than to endeayour each other's Ruin. They as it were consented then mutually to withdarw their Grapling-Irons, and difingage them elves from each other, and which happened much about the Time that Den Sanche being over-bold, had thrown himself into the Turkish Admiral, without being fo happy as to have any body to follow him. Seeing himfelf thus alone, and more than that in the Power of his Enemies, he preferred Death to Slavery, and immediately flung himfelf into the Sea, hoping only to escape drowning by his excellent swimming. But the bad Weather proving to extraordinary, it hindered him from being discovered by the Christian Gallies altho' the Admiral having been an Eye-witness of his Action, and being extremely concerned at the Loss of him, which he looked upon as unavoidable. had tacked about towards the Place where he faw him leap in. Den Sancho in the mean Time cut the Waves with his skilful Arms, and after having swam a while to the Leeward, whither both the Wind and Tide carried. him, he by luck met with a Plank which had been torn from the Sides of one of the Turkifb Gallies by the Cannon, this he looked upon as a Present sent him from Heaven, and which he immediately made use of with that Success, that in a short time he get a Shore on the Coast of Sicily, which was not above a League and a half from the Place where the Battle had been fought. He landed without any Prejudice done him by the Rocks; and after having returned Thanks to Heaven for his Preservation, walked. forward as fast as his Weakness would suffer him. At last:

N A.

making

272 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II.

making shift to get up a little Hill, he from the Top perceived a neighbouring Hovel, whither he immediately went and found it inhabited by Fishermen, who nevertheless approved themselves to him the most charitable People in the World. The over-heating himself in the Fight, and afterwards drenching himself in the Water, together with the wet Cloaths he was forced to wear, brought fo violent a Fever upon him, that he was obliged for fome Time to keep his Bed, but whereof he in a short Time recovered, without doing any Thing more to himself than living regularly. During his Illness, he did all that in him lay to make the World believe he was dead, thereby as well to abate Don Diego's Relations Malice, as to make Trial of his Dorothea's Constancy. Whilst he was in Flanders he had contracted an extraordinary Friendship with a Sicilian Marquiss of the Family of Montalto, whose Name was Fabio. He defired one of the Fishermen to make Enquiry whether he was then at Meffina, where he knew he lived. Being informed he was, he went immediately thither in a Fisher's Habit, and arrived at the Marquis's House about Night. The Marquis was extremely over-joyed at the Sight of a Friend whom he had given over for loft. Don Sancho gave him an Account how he came to be faved, and moreover told him his Adventure at Sevil, without concealing from him the violent Passion he had for Dorothea. The Marquis proffered his Service to go for him into Spain, and to carry off Dorethea, and bring her to Sicily, provided she would but consent to the Doing of it. Don Sancho would by no Means put his Friend upon fo dangerous a Trial of his Friendship, and therefore proposed to go along with him. Sanchez, Don Sancho's Man, had been fo afflicted for the Lofs of his Master, that when the Gallies came into the Port of Messina to refresh themselves, he entred into a Convent, resolving to pass there the Remainder of his Days. Fabio, who had been the Cause of his being admitted, fent to the Superior to release him again, and which was the readier complied with, by Reason he had not yet received the Habit of the Order. Sanchez was over-joyed at the Sight of his dear Master, and as soon shook off all Thoughts of returning to the Monastery again.

Kinds:

His Master not long after sent him into Spain to prepare his Way for him, and in the mean Time charged him to fend him News of his dear Dorothea, who like others had been possessed with the Belief of his Death. This Report had spread itself even to the Indies, and which had caused his Father to die with Regret, leaving four hundred thoufand Crowns to another Son, on Condition, that if his Brother Sancho appeared again, he should refund to him a. Moiety. Don Sancho's Brother's Name was Don Juan de Peralta the same with his Father's. His Father being dead he embarked for Spain, and arrived at Sevil about a Year after the before-mentioned Misfortune had befel his Brother. Having a quite different Name, it was eafy for him to conceal they were Brothers, and which he thought very necessary for him to do, since he was obliged to reside for fome Time in that City where Sancho had left fo many Enemies. He happened foon after to have a Sight of the fair Dorothea, and like his Brother, became quickly enamoured of her, tho' not with the same Success. fair afflicted Lady could love nothing after her dear Sancho. All that Don Juan de Peralta could do to please her, proved only tiresom; and she moreover utterly resused the best Matches in Sevil, which her Father Don Manuel had proposed to her. About this Time Sanchez came to Sevil and observing his Master's Orders, immediately set himself about inquiring into Dorothea's Behaviour. He learnt from a common Report about the City, that a very wealthy Person lately come from the Indies, had fallen desperately in Love with her, and who omitted nothing to fet forth his Gallantry and Affection. This he foon informed his Mafter of, but made the Story much worse than it had been told him, and his Master believed it yet to be much worse than he related it. The Marquis Fabio and Don Sancto embarked not long after at Messina, on board the Gallies that were then returning to Spain, and arrived fafe in a short Time at St. Lucar, where they immediately took Post for Sevil. It was Night before they got thither, when they went forthwith to the Lodgings which Sanchez had provided for them. They kept all the next Day close in their Chambers, and at Night took a Walk towards Don Manuel's House. They there heard Instruments of several:

274 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II.

kinds tuning under Dorothea's Window, and lafterwards an excellent Confort; when that was over a fingle Voice, accompanied only by a Theorbo, complained for some Time of the Cruelties of a Tygress in an Angel's Form. Don Sancho was fo provoked at this, that he certainly truffedup the Serenaders, had not the Marquis Fabio prevented it by reprefenting to him that he could have done no more if Dorothea had appeared in the Balcony to encourage his Rival; but fince she had not, he ought to believe that the Words that were fung were rather Complaints of a diffatisfied Lover, than Thanks for any Favours received. The Serenaders retired after they had performed their Task, and Den Sancho and the Marquis retired also to their Lodgings. Derothea began to be importuned more and more every Dayby her Indian Lover. Her Father Don Manuel was extremely defirous to have her speedily married, and therefore she feared that if Don Juan de Perlata being Rich and of fo good a Family as he really was, should offer himself to him for a Son-in-Law, he would eafily be prefered to all others, and the confequently more pressed by her Father to marry than she had hitherto been. The Day after the Serenade-Dorothea spent wholly in her Sister's Company, often telling her, 'That she could no longer suffer the Gallantiies. of the Indian; and farther, that she could not but wonder how he could make his courting of her fo public, before he had obtained her Father's Leave to court her.' It is a Thing, that extremely furprizes me likewife, replied Feliciana, and if I were in your Place, the first Oportunity that offered, I would treat him so ill, that he should ever after be out of Hopes either of faying or doing any Thing to please me. For my Part, continued she, I can not discover any Charms in him to please a Woman. He has not that Air which is to be acquired only at Court, and the great Expences he is at here has nothing of the Polite, and plainly shews him to be a Gavacho. ceeded to finish with a very disadvantageous Character of Don Juan de Perlata, not remembring that at his first appearing in Sevil, she had confest to her Sister that she liked him, and that as often as she had had Occasion to Speak of him, the had always done it with fome Sort of Concern. Dorothea observing her Sister so altered, or atleaft.

Part II. Scarron's Comical Romance. 275

least that she semeed to be so, from the Opinion she had formerly entertained of this Cavalier, presently suspected she loved him as much as the pretended to diflike him. She therefore to clear her Doubts, told Feliciana that she had no manner of Aversion for Don Juan's Person, but rather a Respect, by Reason she found so much of Sancho's likeness in his Face. Her only Reason for slighting him was because she could love no Man after Don Sancho; and she added" farther, that fince she could not hope to be his Wife, she was resolved never to be one to any other, but determined to spend the Remainder of her Days in a Convent. Altho' you were refolved upon fuch a strange Undertaking, which I do not believe, replied Feliciana, yet you might spare me the trouble of Hearing it. 'Never doubt it dear Sifter, answered Dorothea, for it is but too true, and it is as cer-' tain that you will speedily be the richest Fortune in Sevil. ' It is therefore, continued she, that I would see Don Juan once more, to encline him, fince he is not like to have " me, to have the same Love and Respect for you. But, proceeded the farther, when I do fee him, I shall withal, defire him to importune me no more with his Addresses, ' fince I find they are so very displeasing to you. And let "me tell you, added she farther, that I know no Person in · Sevil to whom you could be happier married than to him. If I said he displeased me, replied Feliciana, I must own it was rather thro' Complaifance to you, than any Aversion I had for him. ' Confess rather, dear Sister, quoth Doro-"thea, that you Love him, and apprehend me for a Rival." At these Words Feliciana began to blush, and was extremely out of Countenance. She proceeded to defend her self against her Sister's Accusation, but which served rather to condemn than acquit her. At last she found she was obliged to confess that she loved Don Juan, which she would nevertheless not have done had she believed it in her Power to have concealed it. Dorothea was fo far from disapproving her Sister's Passion, that she encouraged her in it, by promising to serve her to her Power. Soon after Isabella, who had broke off all Communication with her Friend Gufman, ever fince the Accident that be fel Don Sancho, had Orders from Dorothea to go immediately and find out Don Juan,

276 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II

and to tell him that she and her Sister desired his Company about Midnight in the Garden, when her Father would certainly be a Bed. She likewise bad her to carry him the Key of the Garden-gate. Ifabella, who had been gained over by Don Juan, and consequently had made it her Eusiness to procure him her Mistress's Esteem, tho' without Success, was extremely furprized at this fudden Change, but at the fame Time not a little glad that she was to carry him so goed News, who had so often obliged her, the fhe brought him none but bad. She made what Haste she could therefore to his Lodgings, but found him not inclinable to credit her Message, till she shewed him the fatal Key. At the fame Time she put the Key into his Hands, he put a perfumed Purse with 50 Pistols in it into her's, which she received with no lefs Joy than she had occasioned him by her coming. As ill Luck would have it the same Night that Don Juan was to have Admittance into Dorothea's Father's Garden, Don Sancho and his Friend the Marquis happened to take their Rounds that Way. They were in the Street where Dorothea lived, about eleven o'Clock, when all of fudden, four Men well armed came up to them, and stared them full in the Face. Don Sancho thinking his Rival might be among them, forthwith told them furlily, That the Post they had taken up there he had an Occasion for, to dispatch a certain Affair in, and therefore required them to be gone instantly and give him Liberty for that Purpose. To which they immediately replied, that they would do it with all their Hearts, but that the Place was as proper for them to execute a Defign they had in Hand, which he must give them Leave to do before he could find any Room there. This Answer so nettled Don Sancho, that it was only a Word and a Blow with him, for he immediately fet upon them with that Vigour that he foon put them into Diforder, and his Friend the Marquis charging them at the same Time, they were driven to the End of the Street before they knew where they were. There Don Sancho received a flight Wound, but in Return gave his Enemy so home a Thrust that he was some Time in getting his Sword out of his Body, and whom he left for dead. In the mean Time the Marquis was pursuing those that sled, which they quickly

quickly did as foon as they faw their Comrade fall. Don Sancho at last saw several Lights coming towards him at a Distance; which suspecting to be the Watch, as it really was, he began to think of his Escape. He retired therefore in fome Confusion, thro' all the blind Allys he could find, and which at length bringing him into a large open Street, he met full-but with an old Gentleman that was then lighting along with a Lantern, and who had drawn his Sword at the Hearing of Don Sancho running towards him. This old Cavalier was Don Manuel, who had been playing a Game at Cards at a Neighbour's House, and was now returning Home after his usual Custom, thro' a little Gate of the Garden, which was near the Place where Sancho met him. At the first Approach of our Adventurer, Don Manuel cried out, Who goes there? ' A Man, answered Sancho, whose Business'tis to make the best of his Way, if you do not stop him.' It may be, Sir, continued Don Manuel, some Accident has obliged you to search in fuch Hatte for a Sanctuary, if fo, my House is near at Hand, and may, if you please to accept it, be of Se vice to you. 'Tis true, replied Don Sancho, I am in Quest of 4 a Sanctuary to screen me from a Pursuit which I fear is ' made after me, and fince you have been so generous as ' to offer a Stranger the Protection of your House, he will trust himself wholly in your Hands, and never forget both the Kindness and Honour you will do him.' Hereupon Don Manuel immediately opened the Door with a Key he had always about him, and put him in a Grove of Lawrels, whilst he went into his House to seek for a better Conveniency for him. Don Sancho had not been long in the Grove, before a Woman came to him and cried, come away, Sir, my Mistress Dorothea waits for you. At the Hearing that dear Name, Don Sancho began immediately to think he was in his Mistress's Garden, and that the old Gentleman who had brought him in, might be her Father. He likewise suspected, with Reason enough, that Dorothea had made some Rival of his an Assignation, and that this was the Time of their Rendezvous. He therefore followed Isabella, but was more tormented with Jealoufy, than the Fears of a Pursuit. In the Interim Don Juan came at the Hour appointed, and with the Key which

278 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part IK.

which had been given him, opened the Garden door, and went and hid himself in the Grove of Lawrels, whence Don Sancho was but just gone: A Moment after he perceived a Man to come directly up to him, which at first gave him so much Surprize, that he thought good to put himself into a Posture of Desence; but observing it to he Don Manuel, he endeavoured only to conceal himself. Den Manuel foon finding him out, faid to him, come, . come, follow me, and I will put you in a Place where you shall not need to fear being discovered. Don Juan gueffed by what he had heard, that Don Manuel had faved some Person or other that sled from Justice, nevertheless thought himself obliged to follow him, tho' he was not the Man he took him for. As he went along he returned him a thousand Thanks for his Civility; but you may imagine was not inwardly a little displeased at him, for disappointing him of his Amorous Intrigue. Don Manuel conducted him into a Chamber, where he left him while he went to prepare a Bed for him in another adjoining Room. There we must leave him likewise in no small Trouble and Perplexity, and return to speak of his Brother Don Sancho de Sylva. Him Isabella had carried into a Ground? Chamber which looked into the Garden, and where Dorothea and Feliciana staid waiting for Don Juan de Paralta, . the one as a Lover, who was fludying to fay fomething to please him, and the other, as one that could not love him, and defigned there to tell him fo. At Don Sancho's entering the Room the fair Sifters were wonderfully furprized, Dorothea immediately swooned away at the Fright, and would have certainly dropped down on the Floor had not her Sister held her up in her Chair. Don Sancho stood like a Statue. Isabella was ready to die with Fear, believing that Sancho's Ghost was come to revenge the Wrongs her Mistress had done him while alive. Feliciana, tho' extremely frighted likewife, was nevertheless so employed about recovering her Sister, that she did not fo much mind it as she would have otherwise done. At last Dorothea came to her felf, and then Don Sancho fpoke to her after the following Manner. ' If the Report's fpread abroad of my Death did not in some Measure ex-

6 cuick

Part II. Scarron's Comical Romance: 279

cause your Inconstancy, ungrateful Dorothea, quoth he, . I should not now have Breath enough left to reproach · your Infidelity. But it was I that occasioned that Report. to be forgotten of my Enemies, and not by you, who · have so often promised to Love none but me, and yet. who have fo foon, nay, fo treacheroufly broke that Pro-· mife. I might well revenge myfelf now I have an Op ... · portunity, continued he, and complain fo loud, that I might awake your Father, and he consequently rise and find your Lover, whom you have hid in his House. But · Foul that I am, I am yet afraid to displease you, and c torment myfelf more with the Thoughts that I must love you no longer, than with those that so plainly suggest to me that you love another. Go on faithless fair one! Go on, proceeded he, enjoy your happy Lover; be apprehensive of no Danger in this new Amour : be . affared I will rid you speedily of the Man that has it in . his Power to reproach you of Treachery all your Life long; nay, of one you have betrayed even at a Time . that he has exposed his Life to come to worship you.' At these Words Don Sancho would have been gone, but Dorothea held him, and was going to juffify herfelf just at the Time that Isabella came running into the Chamber to + tell her Don Manuel was coming. Don Sancho had only Time to flep behind the Door before the old Gentleman came in. He began immediately to repremand his Daughters for being up so late, and afterwards went out of the Chamber, which he had no fooner done but Don Sancho got out likewise, and getting into the Garden hid himfelf as before among the Lawrels, expecting an Opportunity to get away. Don Manuel's Business in his Daughters Chamber was to light a Candle, to go to the Gardengate, where the Constable and Watch were knocking like mad for Admittance, having been told, that one of the Persons that had made the Fray in the Streets was got in there. Den Manuel made but little Disficulty to suffer them to enter and fearch his House, as believing they would not open his Chamber wherein he had hid the Gentleman he protected. Den Sanche perceiving it impossible for him to escape, amidst the great Number of Watchmen.

280 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II.

and Mob that were spread all over the Garden, came out of his own accord from the Lawrel-Grove, and going up to Don Manuel, who was not a little surprized to see him, whispered him in the Ear, That a Cavalier of Honour should always keep his Word, and ought never to abandon one he had once thought fitting to take into his Protection. Hereupon Don Manuel defired the Conflable, who was one of his Friends, to leave Don Sancho in his Cuftody; which Request was readily granted, he being a Man of Quality, and the rather, because the wounded Person was not yet dead. After this the Constable and Watch retired, and Don Manuel having discovered Don Sancho, and finding by his Answers he was really the Person he had admitted into his Garden, he did not doubt but the other must have been fome Love-adventurer intended to have been introduced to his Daughters by Isalella. To be the better convinced of this Truth, he defired Don Sancho to go into a Chamber, and not flir thence till he came to him again, which Sancho promifed he would not. In the mean Time Don. Manuel went to Don Juan de Peralta, to whom he feigned that his Servant had come into the Garden at the fame Time with the Watch, and defired to speak with him. Don Juan knew very well that his Servant was fick a Bed, and therefore could not well come to him; besides, he had had no Orders from him fo to do, and moreover knew not where he was; all this together made him extremely concerned at what Don Manuel had faid to him: Nevertheless, that he might not discover himself thro' the want of a ready Answer, he immediately replied to Don Manuel, at random, If you please, Sir, let him be ordered to attend me at my Lodgings. Don Manuel then presently discovered him to be the young Indian Gentleman that had made fuch a Noise for sometime in Sevil; and having been already informed of his Quality and Estate, resolved not to suffer him to go out of his House till he had married one of his Daughters whom he could best fancy. He discoursed some Time with him, to be better satisfied. in those Matters, which kept him still in suspence. Isabella faw them talking together from the other Door, and immediately went and told her Mistress. Don Manuel foon

foon perceived her, and thought she was coming to bring a Message from one of his Daughters to Don Juan, and therefore left him to run after her, and intercept her Defign. Just as he overtook her the Light that was in the Chamber, was burnt out. Whilft he was groping after her, being in the Dark, Isabella got clear of him, and went and told Dorothea and Feliciana that Don Sancho was in their Father's Chamber, and that she saw them talking together. The two Sisters immediately ran thither. Dorothea for her Part was not afraid of meeting her dear Don Sancho with her Father, being resolved to confess how much she loved and was beloved by him, as likewise for what end she had made that Assignation with Don Juan. She happened to come into her Father's Chamber just at the same instant that Don Juan was stealing out, whom the taking for Don Sancho, caught by the Arm, and spoke to him thus, ' Why cruel Don Sanche, dost thou thus fly me, and wherefore wilt thou not hear my Vindica-' tion against the unjust Aspersions thou hast cast upon " me? I confess you could not have reproached me sufficiently, had I but been guilty of what you have some fort of Reason to believe: But you know there are ma-'ny Falsities which sometimes have as great resemblance of Truth as Truth itself, which is ever best discovered by Time. Allow me therefore fo much as may ferve to unravel this Confusion, wherein yours and my Misfortune, and perhaps that of divers others, has involved ' us. Help me to justify myself, and let not thy Pas-' fion which hurries thee on to condemn me, provoke thee to pronounce an unjust Sentence before a due Con-' viction.' You may perhaps have heard, continued she, ' that a certain Cavalier loves me, but did you ever hear ' I return'd his Love? You may likewise have seen him here, and it is most true that I have fent for him; but when you shall also know for what Reason, I am pretty well affured you will repent of your cruel Ufage to me, and be inclinable to own I could give you no greater. · Proof of my Fidelity. Why is he not now in thy Pre-' sence, this Spark that importunes me so frequently with his Passion, that I might have an Opportunity to make his

282 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II.

him before thee, whether I ever gave him Leave to pro-6 fefs he loved me, or if he ever had any Reason to be-' lieve I had read his Letters? But my Misfortune is fuch, ' added she Sighing, that as often as I would have shunned him, he has appeared before me, but now I have Occafion for him to clear my Innocence he is absent.' Don Juan had fo much Patience as to hear all the could fay without giving her the least Interruption, and that chiefly that he might thereby discover what she had all along before kept a Secret from him. At last, just as he was going to reproach her with Baseness, Don Sancho, who had been groping from Room to Room to find the Way into the Garden, and fill miffing it, at length came to near as to hear Derothea talking with Don Juan; whom he knowing by her Voice, approached them as foftly as he could, but was notwithstanding soon discovered by Den Juan and the two Sisters. At the same Moment Don Manuel came into the Chamber with Lights carried before him by two Servants. Hereupon the two Rival Brothers presently stared each other in the Face, looking stercely, and laying their Hands upon their Swords. Don Manuel stept in between them to prevent any Mischief, and immediately commanded his eldest Daughter to make Choice of one of them, who, as her Husband, might be authorized to chaslife the other. Don Juan then began to speak, and told Don Manuel, that for his Part he refigned up all Pretenfions to the Cavalier that was before him, but that not thro' fear. Don Saucho faid the fame Thing; adding moreover, that fince Don Juan had been introduced into Don Manuel's House by his Daughter, it was probable she both loved him and was beloved by him, and therefore for his Part, he would die a thousand Deaths before he would marry one with the least Scruple upon her. Then Dorothea throwing herfelf at her Father's Feet, conjured him to hear her. She related to him all that had passed between Don Sancho de Silva and her, to the Time of his killing Don Diego on her Account. She afterwards informed him how Don Juan de Peralta had made Love to her, and what Defigns she had to disabuse him, and to propose her Sifter to him in Marriage; and to conclude all, she told

Part II. Scarron's Comical Romance. 283

told him that if she could not persuade Don Sancho to believe her innocent, the was refolved next Day to that her self up in a Nunnery, thence never to set Foot out again as long as fhe lived. By this Relation the two Brothers came to the Knowledge of each other. Don Sancho was forthwith reconciled to Dorothea, whom he demanded in Marriage of her Father. Don Juan likewise begged Don Manuel's Confent to have his Daughter Feliciana, and both were accepted by him for his Sons-in-Law, with fo great Satisfaction as is not to be expressed. As soon as Day appeared, Don Sancho fent for his Friend the Marquis Fabio, who foon came to partake of his Joy that was then in Agitation. Don Sancho's Mar. iage was kept fecret till fuch: Time as Den Manuel and the Marquis had had an Opportunity to perfuade the Coulin and Heir of Don Diego toforget the Cause of his Kinsman's Death, and to lay aside all Enmity to Don Sancho. During this Negotiation the Marquis Fabio fell in Love with this Gentleman's Sister, and consequently desired her of her Brother in Marriage. His Request was granted with a great deal of Readiness; the Gentleman being presently sensible what Advantagefuch a Match must be to his Family. The three Marriages. weae folemnized in one Day and every thing succeeded fo well, that there was no Difagreement between either of the Parties for a long while after, which you must confess is not a little to be wondered at.

CHAP. XX.

After what Manner Ragotin's Sleep came to be disturbed.

HE agreeable Inexilla concluded the reading of herNovel, which made her Auditory forry, it was no longer. Whilft fhe was reading it, Ragatin, who instead of hearing her had busied himself in asking her Husband Questions about Magic, was fallen asleep in a low Chair where he sat, and which the Operator was likewise in his. Ragatin's Sleep was not altogether voluntary, for if he could possibly have kept down the Vapours of the Meat, which he had eaten in great Quantity, he would not have been so. rude as not to have hearkned attentively to Inexilla's Novel.

He

284 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part II

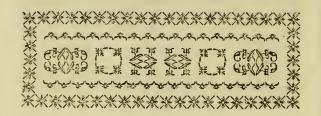
He did not fleep therefore foundly, but ever would now and then fee-saw his Head down to his Knees, then raise himself up again half awake, afterwards tlart, and then drop down, in like manner as drowfy Sinners are wont to do at Conventicles, when the good Man proves tedious as well as dull. There happened to be a Ram bred up in the Inn, which roguy Boys that went up and down the Yard had been accustomed to present their Heads to, but holding their Hands stretched out before at the same Time, to keep them from doing them any Harm. At these Boys this Ram would run with all his Might, as those Creatures are naturally given to do. This Animal had his free range all over the Inn, came oftentimes into the Chambers and it seems was in that of the Operator when Inezilla red the Novel. He observing Ragetin nodding to and fro with his Hat dropt off, took him for a Champion that had purposely presented himself to try his Courage with him, and therefore drawing back four or five Paces, as good Jumpers are wont to do, ran full Speed like a Horse in his Carrier, with his horney Head against Ragotin's bald Pate; which no doubt he would have shattered, asmuch as a Piss pot could have been, when thrown upon the Stones from the Top of a high Tower, had it not been this little Man's peculiar Fortune that the Assault wasmade while he had his Head up, fo that he received no other Damage than a superficial Graze on the Cheek by. one of the Creature's Horns. All the Company was foextremely surprized at this Action, that they remained for some Time aftonished, which nevertheless could not hinder them fram laughing. This gave the Ram an Opportunity, having been used to make his Course more than once, to have anotherRun, which it feems he performed fo inconfiderately, that he ran against his Knees, and therefore only wounded his Hands, which had each of them a Horn to stand the brunt of. Ragotin finding his Face bleed and fmart, tho' he was a little stunn'd, yet began to recover himself, and having opened his Eyes, which he did not do till the fecond Shock, foon discovered the Author of his Misfortune; which he had no sooner done, but he fell to belabouring of himabout the Head, till the hardness of his Horns made him to

Part II. Scarron's Comical Romance. 285

withdraw his Hands; which finding to be all over bruised, as well by buffetting as sustaining, he slew into a great Rage, threatning Revenge on all the Company if they did not defist laughing at him. He afterwards would have gone out of the Inn in a great Fury, had not his Host stop him to pay the Reckoning, which you may imagine he was as unwilling to do, as he would have been willing to have put up his Damage and Affronts, could he but have got off Scot-free.



SCAR-



S C A R R O N's

Comical Romance.

to the traction of the tractin of the traction of the traction of the traction of the traction

PART III.

<u>ᡧᡊᡷ᠅ᢆᠦᢋᢙᢆᢍᢌᡒᢆᡋᡒᢌᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᢋᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎᡎ</u> CHAP. I.

Which may serve for an Introduction to this Third Part.



N the last Chapter of the Second Part of this Romance, you had little Ragotin all bloody with the feveral repeated Buttings he received from the Ram, whilst he slept in a low Chair in the Comedian's Cham-

ber, and which occasioned him to go out thence in a great Fury. But he had received so deep a Wound from Madam Star's Eyes, and was withal fo defirous of knowing the Issue of the Operator's Scheme, that he could only afford himself Time to wash his Face and Hands before he returned. As he was just entering the Inn again, his Brain was fo disturbed, what with the Blows, and

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 287

what with the Darts, that he missook an Advocate then walking by to the Hall, for Ferdinando the Operator. He therefore accosted him very civily, and began with him after this Manner, Sir, I am bappy in meeting you so luckily; I have long defired this Opportunity, and I was just going to your Lodgings, in great Haste, to have a further Account from you of what concerns either my Life or Death. I don't doubt but you have employed the utmost of your Art, in Schemes, to serve me all the Time you slept; and I desire you to believe I would by no Means be ungrateful in my Acknowledgments. Tell me then, I beseech you, dear Doctor, continued he, will this little charming shining Star suffer me to sbare any of her Influence? The Advocate, who underflood not a tittle of all the fine Words had been spoken to him, and taking them for Rallery, was not long before he interrupted him. ' Monsieur Ragotin, quoth he, if it ' had been a little later I should verily have thought you had been drunk, notwithstanding, cannot help believing ' that you are either a Mad-man or a Fool. To whom, for God-fake, do you think you are talking, added he, and what a Devil makes you to talk to me of Schemes, and the Influences of Stars? Do you take me either for an Astrologer or a Magician? Prithey consider a little, ' Monsieur Ragotin, proceeded he, Don't you know mc. Ah! Sir, replyed Ragotin, how unkind you are, I thought I had too well informed you of my Malady, to have been refused a Remedy. Alajs! I could not-He was just proceeding with another tedious Harangue, when the Advocate lest him in a great Passion, telling him at Parting, That he was a great Sot for a little Man. Ragotin would have followed him, but that he at length perceived his Mistake, and therefore was glad to retire with Shame. He had so great Regard to his Reputation, as to keep this a Secret; and I'll affure you, I had never come to know it, had not the Advocate one Day told it me, among others of his Friends, to divert us. The little Fool afterwards turned into the Inn, and went directly to the Comedian's Apartment, which he had no fooner entered but he heard a Proposition made by Mrs. Cave and Destiny to quit Mans, and retire to some other Post. This vexed him so heartily.

288 Scarron's Comical Romance, Part III.

that he was like to have dropt down from his Height on the Floor, and which he might have fafely done fince he had no great way to fall. But what concerned him most was that the Time of their Departure was to be the next Morning, when they were to bid adieu to the good Town of Mans, and particularly to its Inhabitants, who had been their constant Auditors for some Time. They purposed to take their way to Alengon after the old rate, having been assured that the Pestilence was not there, as they had been before informed. Ifay they took their way after the old rate, for these fort of People have a constant Rule of Travelling, in like manner as the Sun has in the Zodiac. The Journies they had made and were to make in this Country, were first from Tours to Angers, from Angers to la Fleche, from la Fleche to Mans, from Mans to Alengon, from Alengon to Argentin or Laval, no matter which, according to the Road they have a mind to take, either to Paris or Britamy, both being alike to them, and indifferent to us in the Composition of this Romance. The Resolution being made by all the Men and Women Players unanimously, they proposed to play one of their best Plays, before they left Mans, to the End they might leave their Audience there in good Humour. What this Play was never came to my Knowledge. That which obliged them to go away fo fuddenly, was by Reason that the Marquis of Orle, on whose Account they had staid fo long, was commanded instantly to Court; insomuch that being like to have no Benefactor left after he was gone, and the Manseon Audience diminishing every Day, they purposed to go where they might be better used: Ragotin would needs be endeavouring to oppose this Resolution, for which Purpose he gave a great many Reasons, whereof he had always flore at Command, which nevertheless were little or nothing regarded. This vexed the little Man extremely, infomuch that he begged of the Company not to go presently out of the Province of Mayne, but to take first the Tennis Court which was in the Suburbs of Montfort, and afterwards they might go to Laval in Mayne likewise, whence they might easily come into Britany, according to their Promise made to Monsieur la Garouffiere. This Opinion of Ragotin's Destiny would by no Means

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 289

agree to, affirming, that if they took his Advice, they should make no Work on't, the pitiful Tennis-Court mentioned by him being a great Way out of Town, and more than that, on the other Side of the River, which would hinder the better Sort of People from coming near them; when the great Tennis-Court in the Sheep-Market of Alengon, was just in the Middle of the Town; and more--over, furrounded with all the best Houses, and that therefore, it were better to give fomething more for fuch a Place, than any Thing for the despicable Tennis-Court at Monfort, whose good Market was the only Reason that Ragotin had to speak for it. This last Proposition was agreed to by the whole Company, therefore they immediately ordered a Waggon to be got ready for their Baggage, and Horses for their Women. The Care of procuring these was left to Leander, who having a great many Intrigues in Mans, was the likelieft Man to have the best Acquaintance there. Next Day, before they fet out, they presented a Comedy, Tragedy, Tragi-Comedy, or Pastoral, I know not whether, but which had the Success that you may imagine. The Players were admired by every Body, and Destiny performed Wonders, especially in his Manner of taking Leave of the Audience; for he expressed his Acknowledgments and Unwillingness to leave them, with that Tenderness and Force, that he charmed them to that Degree, that, as I am informed, some among them wept. Ragotin was so concerned that his Proposal had not been followed, that he remained for some Time like a Dolt, sitting in his Chair, even after the rest of the Company were gone, and where I believe he had fat till now, had not the Marker of the Tennis-Court let him know that no Body was left, which he had nevertheless no small Trouble to make him comprehend. Being at last prevailed upon to be gone, he rose from his Chair and went home, where he resolved to go find out his Company the next Morning, and discover to them what shall be related in the following Chapter.

290 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III.

CHAP. II.

Where you will find Ragotin's Defign.

HE Cries of Aqua Vita had not yet waked those that were in a profound Sleep. when Ragotin being already drest, was going to propose to the Strolling Company his Inclinations to be admitted amongst them. He went then to the Players Lodgings, whom he found neither up nor awake, and happened to have the Difcretion to Leave them as he found them; nevertheless could not help entring one Chamber, where he found Olive a Bed with Rancour. This last he defired to get up, and walk with him to la Cousture, a fine Abby in the Suburbs of that Name, and thence to go to Breakfast at the great go lden Star, where he had ordered a Collation to be prepared for them. Rancour, who was one of those who love to Eat at other Mens Cost, was almost as foon got Ready as the Proposition was made him, and which you may eafily be inclined to believe, if you confider that thefe fort of People are accustomed to dress and undress behind the Scenes, to act in different Parts, which will admit of but little Delay. Ragotin and Rancour then marched on towards the Abby of la Consture; but we must suppose they called in at some Church or other by the Way to fay a short Prayer, for Ragotin's Thoughts he had in his Head would not admit of a long one. He nevertheless acquainted Rancour with nothing of the Matter, for fear it might have kept him from his Breakfast, which he knew he had a greater Inclination for, than to give Ear to any Thing he could tell him. They came to the Inn, where being entered, the littleMan began to fly in a great Pafsion, because the petits pâtez he had ordered were not ready. To which the Hostess answered, without rising off the Seat where she sat; Truly, Monsieur Ragotin, I know not how you could expect I should divine when you would come; but fince you are now here, the patez shall not be long after you: Pray walk into the Hall, where you will find a Cloth laid, and a Westphalia Ham to stay your Stomach. This the spoke after a grave Hostes-like Manner, and which inclined Rancour to be on her fide; who

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 291

who turning to Ragotin, cried, Sir, pray let us comply with my Hotless's Proposals, and take a Glass or two while our Breakfast is getting ready. They sat down to Table, which in a very short Time after was covered, and they breakfasted after the Manner of Mans, that is to say, very heartily. They drank the same, and put about several Healths, among which the Reader may imagine Madam Star's was not forgot. Little Ragotin toffed up above a Dozen Glasses successively, sometimes sitting, and sometimes standing, with his Hat in his Hand. But at last he would needs drink his Mistress's Health on his Knees and bareheaded, which made him to look just for all the World as if he had been doing Penance at the Door of some Church. It was then that he earnestly reminded Rancour of his Promise to assist him in the Conquest of Madam Star's Heart. Whereupon, Rancour half angry, or at least feigning to be fo, answered him a little roughly. I thought, Monsieur Ragotin, you had known me to be a Man that never embarked without Ammunition, I mean, engaged in any Thing that I was not able to bring about. Be fatisfied then I will omit no Opportunity to ferve you. I tell you fo again, and have Ways in my Head whereby to compass it. But I fee one great Obstacle in our Way, and that is our fudden Departure from hence; the only Method therefore that I can advise you to bring about your Ends, is to refolve to be admitted amongst us. You have all the Qualifications for it that can be defired. You have a good Mein. a strong Voice, a good Tone, and a better Memory: And in a Word, feem to have nothing about you that looks Country. You look as if you had lived all your Life Time at Court, having so much the Air of it, that you might be known for a Courtier above a Mile off. You need not, proceeded he, to act above a dozen Times before you will be able to out do all our young Pretenders, who must resign their Parts to you, and then leave the rest to me. As for your Mistress, quoth he, you will have but a tough Bit of her at first, you must manage her with Policy, whereof I know you to have sufficient, however, a little Instruction cannot be amiss. I would advise you therefore not to let her know your Defign at your first Admittance of our Compa-0 2

ny,

292 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III.

ny, that being certainly the Way to lose her, but rather to keep her in Suspence till you have a convenient Opportunity to make your Addresses, and after you have sufficiently won upon her by your Conversation, which I dare promise you'll soon do. The little Man had been so attentive to Rancour's Discourse, that he was almost ravished into an Extafy, imagining he had already, as we fay, the Wolf by the Ears; when coming to himself all of a sudden, as it were out of an Apoplexy, he started from the Place where he fat, and went to the other Side of the Table to embrace Rancour, whom he thanked heartily for his Counsel, and begged of him to continue his Friend in this Affair; protesting at the same Time, that his only Defign in inviting him to Breakfast was to have declared his Mind to him concerning his being admitted of his Society, and which he resolved forthwith to be. After this they reckoned with their Landlady, and Ragotin paid all. When they were out of Doors they took their Course directly towards the Strollers Lodgings, which was not far off. They found the Women up and dreffed; but Rancour had no fooner opened Ragotin's Defign to them than he was interrupted by a Messenger from Leander's Father, who sent his Son Word by him that he was fick to Death, and defired to fee him before he paid that Debt to Nature, which all Men fooner or later must. This obliged all the Company to lay their Heads together to confult how they should bear up against an accident so unexpected. Leander took Angelica afide, and told her his Time was now come to live happy if she would but contribute towards it, otherwise he must be unfortunate the' rich, and poor the' he had a good Income. She promifed him all the Favours that lay in her Power, and particularly those you will meet with in the following Chapter.

CHAP. III.

Leander's Project and Harangue, together with Ragotin's Admission among the Strollers.

HE Jesuits of la Fleche having not been able to make Leander continue his Studies, and perceiving his Inclinations

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 293

clinations ran high to he a Player, presently concluded he must be in Love with some Actress or other, which they were altogether confirmed in, when after the Departure of the Company they found he had followed them to Anvers. They therefore thought themselves obliged to acquaint his Father therewith by a Messenger on purpose, which they foon after did, and who arrived just as a Letter was delivered the old Gentleman from Leander, whereby he gave his Father to understand that he designed for the Wars, and therefore defired a Sum of Money to accoutre himfelf. This Stratagem had been laid between Destiny and he, when he first discovered his Quality to him at the Inn where he was wounded. His Father foon finding the Cheat, flew into an excessive Passion, which together with his greats Age, threw him into a Distemper that quickly ended his Days. Perceiving his End to approach, he called one of his Tenants to him, and commanded him immediately to go find out his Son, which he told him he was most likely to do among the Stroilers. This the Farmer knew as well, as he, having been the Person that had furnished Leander with Money from the Time he left the College; fo that understanding there was a Company of Strollers at Mans, he made all the hafte he could thither, and found his young Landlord as you have it in the foregoing Chapter. Ragotin was defired by the Company to leave them for some time to confer with the Tenant newly arrived, which you may imagine he was very unwilling to do, yet at last he retired into an adjoining Chamber, where he waited with great Impatience till their Bufiness was over. They had. no fooner got him out of the Room but Leander brought in his Father's Tenant, who immediately related the bad Condition the old Gentleman was in, as likewise his earnest-Defire to see his Son before he died. Thereupon Leander immediately craved Leave to comply with his Father's dying Request, which was judged by the whole Comprny reafonable to be granted. It was then Destiny revealed the Secret of Leander's Quality, which he had all along kept private, and which he did not come to the Knowledge of till after the ravishing of Madam Angelica, as you may have read in the second Part of this true History. He thought it now high Time to let it be known, as well to disabuse Mrs.,

Q- 3.

294 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III. Cave, who could not get it out of her Head, but that Le-

ander was either the Principal, or Accessary in the carrying

off her Daughter, as to oblige him who had done him the Honour to be his Serving-man, and would have continued fuch had he not found himself obliged to tell who he was, while he was in Quest of Madam Angelica. He was moreover so far from consenting to the carrying away of Angelica, that having met her Ravishers he had hazarded his Life in her Assistance; but not having been able to resist so many People, he had been dangerously wounded, and left for dead upon the Place. All the Company then immediately asked his Pardon for not having treated him suitable to his Quality, which they nevertheless thought themselves the more excusable for, in not having had any Knowledge of the Matter before. Madam Star added, the had always fufpected fomething from the great Store of Wit and Merit the had observed in him, and which she was afterwards confirmed in, especially when she saw her Mother Mrs. Cave's Letters from him; nevertheless did not know what to think, when she saw him so employed in her Brother's Service. Then began Mrs. Cave to speak, addressing herfelf to Leander, after the following Manner. Truely, Sir, after I had, in some Measure, discovered your Quality, by the Letters you writ to my Daughter, I had no small Reafon to diffrust your Sincerity, being not inclinable to believe that a Person who was to have so good an Estate after his Father's Death, would ever condescend to marry a poor Stroller: But, continued she, I thank Heaven the Time is at length come that you are to be made happy in plentiful. Possessions, and I am to be delivered from a future Possibility of being any more imposed upon by your false Preten. sions. Leander being extremely surprized at these Words, quickly replied. 'All you fay, Madam, I am likely to posses, would not render me a Jot happy, if I were not affured at the same Time of the Possession of your Daughter Angelica. Without her, I renounce all the Fortune which Nature and my Father's Death shall cast upon me, and declare to you, before all this good Company, that I go with fo much Willingness to enter upon my Succesfion, upon no greater Account than to return speedily toperform:

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance: 295

' perform my Promife to marry your Daughter, which I here once more confirm, and will speedily accomplish, ' provided both she and you will do me the Honour to afford your Confents. And if fo, added he, I would not ' have you to think, that I defign to carry her to my own Home, that it is not at all in my Intentions, for I have found so much Pleasure in a Strolling Life, that I could ' never be perfuaded to quit fo many worthy Companions that have so largely contributed towards it. After this obliging Declaration, both the Actors and Actresses speaking all together, returned him their most humble Acknowledgments, averring at the fame Time, that Mrs. Cave and her Daughter would not be a little to blame if they refused fo advantageous a Proffer. Angelica, for her Part, faid nomore than became one that was at her Mother's Disposal, only she bid Leander, at parting, to Hope, if he continued in the same Mind at his Return. After all the mutual Endearments and Tears that commonly pass between parting Friends, it was agreed, that Leander should go the next Morning upon one of the Horses that had been hired; but which he refused, chusing rather that of his Tenant, which he thought would carry him better, and would leave the Hackney for his Companion. But we forget all this while, quoth Deftiny, that Monsieur Ragotin is waiting without to fpeak with us. Is there any Body among us, added he, that knows what he would have? Hereupon Rancour, who had been filent for some Time, opened his Mouth, to let them understand that he knew, and that that very Morning he had treated him with a Breakfail toprocure himself an Opportunity to acquaint him that he had a Mind to be admitted of the Company, without pretending to any Share in the Profits, having sufficient of his own, and which he would rather chuse to spend in seeing: the World, than to live altogether at Mans, as he had been advised to do. Hereat Roquebrune presently advanced to give his Opinion, that he ought not to be admitted, and that for these Reasons, Because, said he, two Poets under one Roof never agree, it being with them as with Women, where there are more than one there are too many. Befides, quoth he, Ragotin's Shape would never fuffer him. to be an Ornament to the Stage, but would rather difgrace Q. 4.

296 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part HI.

it: For, added he, What Parts could he propose to act? As for the principal ones Monsieur Destiny would not permit him to undertake them, and for the fecond best they belong to Olive. And then for a Nurse or Confidente, continued he, he must not pretend to either of them, his Person being altogether as deformed in a Disguise as out of one. Therefore concluded he, it is my Opinion in few Words, that he ought by no Means to be received. And it is mine, replied Rancour, that he ought by all Means to be received, for where there is Occasion to represent a Dwarf none can · be fo proper; and then for a Monster, as that in Andro-" meda, it were better to have a natural one at Hand, than · to be at the trouble to contrive one that would be only Ar-* tificial.' He added farther, that as for speaking a Part, he could affare them he would be like another Orpheus, that drew every Thing after him. ' For proceeded he, whilft-· Olive and I were feeking after Madam Angelica, we over-' took him riding upon an Ass no bigger than himself, and repeating the Adventures of Pyramus and Thisbe, with sos good an Emphasis, that several Russics that were then ' going the same Way, came up with him, and gave so constant Attention with their Hats off, that they would " not leave him till they came to the Inn where we all baited. If then, continued he, he could gain fo far uponthese Rustics, what will he be able to do when he comes " to speak before Men of Sense? This Relation made every body to laugh, and the Company was thereupon resolved to hear Ragotin speak for himself. He was sent for in, and after about a dozen low Congees he began his Harangue in the following Manner. Illustrious Personages, and August Senate of Parnassus quoth he (fancying himself no doubt, speaking at the Bar of the President's Court at Mans, where he had been admitted Advocate but a little before) it is a common faying, That evil Company corrupts good Manners, and on the contrary, good must needs improve them. This Exordium, fo well begun, made the Company believe he was about to preach a Sermon, therefore they tuined their Heads one way, and the other, and could hardly forbear Laughing. Some Critics perhaps may think much of the Word Sermon; but why might not Ragotin be

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 267

thought capable of performing such a Task, when he had feveral Times fung Ballads to the Organs? But however, he proceeded. I find myfelf so destitute of Vertues, that I defire to be admitted of your illustrious Society for Improvement: You are the Muses Interprete s, the living Echoes of their dear Darlings, and your Merits are fo well known throughout all France, that you are admired even beyond the Poles. As for you, Ladies, quoth he to the Women, you charm all that do but look upon you; and it is impossible to be within the hearing of your harmonious Voices, but one must needs be ravished into Extacy. In fine, said he, you are meer Angels of Flesh and Blood; and all the Poets have thought themselves happy in celebrating your Praises. And for you, Gentlemen. continued he, no Alexander nor Cæsar ever equaled the Valour of Monsieur Destiny, nor of the other Heroes his Companions, and therefore you must not wonder if I am ambitious of encreasing your Number by one, which will be easy for you to suffer me to do, if you can but consent to it. I promise you moreover, proceeded he, that I will be no manner of Charge to ye, neither will I pretend to any Share in the Profits of our Performances, but all along continue your most humble and most obedient Servant. Ragotin having thus ended his Harangue, he was defired to withdraw for a Minute, that what he had faid might be confidered. He withdrew, and the Company was just going to proceed according to Form, when the Poet Roquebrune threw himself in again to make a fecond Opposition to Ragotin's Preferment, but he was prefently thrust out by Rancour, who had pushed him more violently but he had regard to his new Suit which was bought with the Money he had lent him. At length it was agreed that Ragotin should be admitted amongst them. for the Diversion of the Company. He was thereupon called in, the accustomed Ceremonies passed, was enrolled in the Register, took an Oath of Fidelity, had the Word given by which the Strollers knew one another; and after all, supped with the whole Caravan-

CHAP. IV.

Of Leander's Departure; The Strollers going for Alengon, and Ragotin's Misfortune.

A Fter Supper every Body would be congratulating Ra-gotin upon the Honour he had received, and which made him to swell so enormously, that he burst the Waistband of his Breeches in two Places. In the mean Time Leander took Occasion to entertain his dear Angelica with Love-stories, and to whom he reiterated his Design to marry her, which he pronounced with fo much Softness and Tenderness that she could answer him only with Tears, whereof she shed abundance. I know not whether these proceeded from her Joy at the fair Promises he made her, or thro' her Concern for his fo fudden Departure; however it was, 'tis certain they exchanged feveral mutual Endearments, which were not in the least interrupted by Mrs. Cave. But at length Night drawing on a pace, it: was convenient they should both retreat. Leander took Leave of the Company and went to Bed. Next Morning. he got up betimes, and fet out with his Father's Tenant, with that Expedition, that he quickly arrived at his Journey's End, where he found the old Gentleman very ill, who neverthelefs, told him he was glad to fee him. He likewife expressed to him, as far as he was able, the great: Grief his Absence had caused him, as also that he was. now come feafonably to receive his last Blessing, together with his Estate, altho' he had been advised to disinherit, him for the ill Courses he had taken. The rest of Leander's Affairs we shall learn at his Return. The Actors and Actrefies being got ready dreffed, took care to pack up their Baggage as fast as they could, that they might be ready to depart in good Time. At length all was prepared and nothing was wanting, except a Horse for one of the Women, which they had before provided, but were difappointed in. They therefore had defired Olive to get another just as Ragotin entered the Room, who hearing their Proposition, told them there was no Occasion, by Reason he had one that would carry double, and if they pleased:

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 299)

pleased, either Madam Star or Angelica should ride behind him. This he urged the rather, because he told them it was impossible they should reach Alengon in one Day, being above ten Leagues off; but being obliged to make two of it, his Horse would serve well enough for the Purpose he proposed. Whilst he was thus recommending his Contrivance, Madam Star interrupted him, affirming the could not ride double; this vexed the little Man extremely, but which he was a little after the better fatisfied with, when Angelica told him she would. They breakfasted all together that Morning, and the Operator and his Wife were invited; but whilft the Collation was getting ready, Ragotin took an Occasion to talk farther with Signior Ferdinando, to whom he made the fame Speech he dad done before to the Advocate, whom he had taken for him; to which. the Magician answered, that he had tried all that lay within the Compass of his Art to serve him, but without effect, which made him inclinable to believe that Madam Star knew more of the Magic than he; that her Charms were more powerful, and in a Word, that she must needs be a dangerous Person, not fit to be conversed with. Ragotin would have replied to these Reflections on his Mistress, but that he was just then called upon to wash his Hands, and fit down to Table, which they did all at the fame Time. Inexilla protested, to all the Company, and chiefly the Women, that both she and her Husband were extremely concerned at their fo speedy leaving them, and would willingly have waited on them to Alengon, to have had their Conversation longer, had they not been obliged: to mount their Stage and act their Farces, which her Hufband chose rather to do-at Mans when they were gone, than to incommode them by doing it in the same Town whither they were going; it being certain the People would fooner run after them where they paid nothing, than to go to fee a Play where they must pay. The Company thanked both the Husband and Wife for their Civilities, and returned them a thousand Acknowledgments for their good Will. The Women wept, and a great many Compliments passed between both Parties; only the Poet, who upon other Occasions would have talked as much.

300 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part. III.

much as four, upon this fpoke not one Word, the parting with Inexilla being so cruel a Thunder-stroke to him, that tho' he fancied himself all over covered with Lawrel, the common Preservative against Thunder, yet could he not fecure his Carcafs. The Waggon being loaded, and ready to set out, Mrs. Cave took her Place as she had done formerly, in the Beginning of this Romance, Madam Star mounted upon a Horse which Destiny I.d., and Angelica got up behind Ragotin, who took care to avoid the like Accident in mounting as had before befallen him. All the rest went on Foot in the same Order as they came to Mans. When they were got to a little Wood about a League from the Town, a Stag that was then hunting by the Marquis of Lavardin's Servants happened to cross the Road, which Ragotin's Horse that went before perceiving, was extremely affrighted at, which obliged Ragetin, to quit his Stirrups, he at the same Time clapped his Hand on the Carabine he had by his fide, and thinking to kill the Stag, happened to touch the trigger before he had well mounted the Piece; whereby, being greatly charged, the Carabine recoiled, and threw him off, and flriking at the same Instant against Angelica's Side, forced her off likewife, but who received little or no Harm. As for Ragotin it was his Misfortune to fall against the Stump of a Tree, which was about a Foot out of the Ground, whereby he got a Bump on his left Temple, which however by a Bandage with a Piece of Silver inflead of Lead was foon cured. This Accident caused a great deal of Laughter in the Company, after they faw there was no more Harm done, which they would otherwise have forborn. The little Man nevertheless was extremely enraged at their making a Jest of his Misfortune. Being remounted, together with Angelica, he would needs charge his Carabine again, but which she would by no Means suffer him to do. They then proceeded on their Journey, and at last came to a little Inn where they were to bait. The Actors for their Parts must take an Afternoon's Luncheon, and the Actresses proposed to lye on the Bed, as well to repose themselves as to observe how lustily their Companions eat and drank. The briskest Drinkers were Rancour and Ragotin, who

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 301

were so hotly engaged to Angelica's Health, which they thought nobody had observed, that she was forced to call out to the latter to bid him drink less, and bid him take more Care of his Charge for the future. This caused a Ceffation of Arms, or rather of Glasses, between the two Combatants. After fome Time the Reckoning being paid, and the Horses brought out, they all set forward on their Journey. The Weather was fair and the Road good, which permitted them to arrive betimes at a Town called Vivain. They there went to the Sign of the Cock, being the best Inn in the Town. The Hostess, who was none of the best natured Women in the Province of Maine, made a great deal of Difficulty to receive them, telling them she had no Bed room for them. Her Company it feems were a general Receiver, an Exciseman, and sour or five Pedlars. Rancour thinking to give a cast of his Office, told his Landlady they defired only a Chamber for the Women, and as for the Men, they would pig in any where. This calm dealing fomewhat abated the Pride of our Lady Hostes. She admitted them therefore, and they did not unload their Waggon, but locked it up in a Stable which they found at the bottom of the Yard. The Women had a Chamber assigned them, where the Company all supped together. After Supper the Men retired, leaving the Women to go to Bed in two Beds, viz. Madam Star in one. and Mrs. Cave and her Daughter Angelica in the other. You may imagine they did not forget to take the Key in the infide of the Door, as did not likewife the two Receivers, who had ordered their Portmantues top full of Money to be brought into their Chambers. But the unwary Pedlers were not so cautious, for they took not that Care, but admitted Rancour and Olive to lie in the same Room where they had their Packs. There were three Beds in that Room, whereof the Pedlars had two, and Rancour and Olive the third. Rancour flept not a wink all Night, watching for an Opportunity to put his Defign in Execution when the Pedlers were afleep. At last he got up, thinking they were fast, and going foftly towards the Packs, was interrupted by one of the Pedlers, who being overtaken with a Looseness, was forced to rise to ease his Belly,

302 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III.

Belly. This made Rancour to return in some Haste to his Bed. In the mean Time the Pedler who had been used to lodge in this Inn, and knew all the Ways out and in, went to a Door that opened into a little Gallery, at the End whereof was the House of Office. This he did not to incommode the venerable Comedians with a bad Smell. When he had done he went to return from whence he came; but inflead of going the right Way, descended on the other Side, and went by a private Door into the Receivers Chamber, where approaching the first Bed he met, and believing it his own, he heard an unknown Voice demand of him Who was there? This caused him to turn, without faying a Word, to the other Bed, where he heardthe same Thing, but spoke with a more angry Accent. This last Person called out at the same Time for a Candle, affirming there was some Body in his Room. Hereupon. the Hoft made the Servant to rife immediately, and fee what was the Matter; but before she could possibly strike a Light, the Pedler had got out of the Room, and was coming into his own Chamber; but before he came, Rancour that had heard all the Difference between him and his-Neighbours, for there was only a thin Partition between them, resolved to lose no Time, and therefore having dextroughy untied the Cords of one of the Packs, took out thence two Pieces of Linen, which having done, he fastned the Cords again as artificially as if they had neverbeen opened; for he knew perfectly well that Secret,, known only to those of his Fraternity, as well as he did: their Marks and Cyphers. He was just going to attack another of the Packs when the Pedler entered the Chamber, who hearing him walk about demanded Who was there? Rancour, who never wanted an Excuse at a Pinch, after having thrust the two Pieces of Linen into his own Bed,. told him the Maid had forgot to fet him a Chamber-pot, . and that therefore he was looking for the Window to pifs out at; whereupon the Pedler, who was not yet got into Bed, replied, Stay, Sir, if you please, I'll go open it for you, for I know better where it is than you do. This having not only faid but done, he immediately leapt into Bed, and left Rancour to pifs out at the Window, which.

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 303

which he did as copiously as when he bedewed the Merchant of lower Maine, while he lay with him in an Inn at Mans, as you may find he did in the fixth Chapter of the first Part of this Romance. He afterwards went directly to his Bed, without shutting the Window. The Pedler cried out to him that he ought not to have left it open, and ho cried out to the Pedler that he might shut it if he pleased. for as for his Fart he should not trouble his Head about it any more, having scarce been able to find the Way to his Bed when it was shut. The Pedler fearing Rancour had a Mind to make a Squabble of it, rose without any more ado and shut the Window, and asterwards groped out his Way to his Bed again. All this while the Hoft and Hostess were brawling like mad at their Maid to light the Candle, which she was endeavouring to do, but as the Proverb has it, The more Haste the less Speed, this forry Wench had been above an Hour blowing the Small-coal before the could raise a Spark of Fire. This caused her Master and Mistress to curse her at no common Rate, and the Receivers began to be more and more enraged to find they could not get a Candle, when they had called for one so often. At length it was lighted, and the Host, Hostefs, and Servant went together into the Receivers Room; where finding Nobody, they told them they had done ill to alarm all the Family for no Reason. But they on the contrary, maintained they had both feen and heard a Man in their Chamber, and more than that, had talked with him. The Host hearing this, went immediately into the Strollers Chamber, and demanded of them and the Pedlers, whether any of them had been in their Neighbours Room? They all answered, No, none of us has been out of Bed except that Monsieur yonder, meaning Rancour, who was forced to rife to pifs out at the Window, your Maid not having fet bim a Chamber-pot. Hereat the Host presently fell upon the Servant for her Neglect, and afterwards went to the Receivers again, telling them they must needs have dreamed that Somebody was in their Room, fince not a Soul had been stirring that Way as he could hear of. After this he left them, wishing them to go to sleep again, it not being yet Day. As foon as it was well light Rancour got up, and demanding the Key of the

304 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III. Stable, went to hide the Purchase he had got in the Waggon.

CHAP. V.

What happened to the Strollers between Vivain and Mengon, together with another of Ragotin's Misfortunes.

A LL the Heroes and Heroines of our Strolling Company got out betimes. They took the high Road to Alengon, and in a little while arrived fafe at Bourg le Roy, the King's Town, called by the Vulgar Boulerey. Here they dined, and staid some Time, during which they debated whether they should go by Arjonnay, a Village about a League from Alengon, or whether they should take to the other Side to avoid Barre, a Road where in the hottest Summer there is Dirt, and wherein the Horses often plunge up to their Bellies. Being not able to conclude the Matter among themselves, they consulted the Wagoner, who told them his Horses would carry them thro' the worst of Quagmires, they being the very best for Drast of any in Mars. Also that they had not above half a Mile af bad Way; whereas if they went by the Common of St. Pater, they would find the Roads dirtier, and to longer continue fo. He remembred them likewise, that the Horses and Waggon only would go in the Dirt, and that the Foot People might step over into the Fields and walk there secure. At length they pitched upon the former Road, and , Madam Star defired the Waggoner to let her know when they came to the Dirt, because she chose rather to go on Foot in good Way, than to ride on Horse-back thro' a Bog. Of the same Mind-were Angelica and Mrs. Cave, who had some Apprehensions that the Waggon might overturn. When they were just about entering this bad Way, Angelica slipt off from Ragotin's Horse's Crupper, Destiny set down Madam Star, and some others of the Company handed Mrs. Cave out of the Waggon. Hereupon Requebrune wnipped up upon Star's Horse, and followed Ragotin, who went just after the Waggon. When they were got into the very worst of all the Road, and where there was only rooma.

Room for the Waggon to pass safe, they met about twenty Carriers Horses, driven by five or fix Country Fellows, who bawled out like mad to the Waggoner to stop; but which he little regarding, requiring the fame Thing of them in a much higher Tone, and alledging that he could turn on neither Side without inevitably plunging in the Bog. The Carriers thinking to get the better by their Expedition, trotted brifkly up to him, and gaped out fo loudly that the Waggoner's Horses took flight and broke their Traces, throwing themselves at the same Time into the Bog, whilst the Waggoner endeavouring to keep his Waggon from following them, weighed one of the Wheels too much on the other Side, which finding no firm Ground to support it, overthrew the whole Machine in the Mud. Ragotin being extremely incenfed against the Carriers, for having been the occasion of this Accident, thundered out Anathemas against them like one possessed, and thinking to come at them on the right Side, where he faw the Way open, rid furiously against them with his Carabine cocked; but he had no fooner entered the Mud but he stuck so fast, that he was fain not only to difengage his Legs from out of his Stirrups, but likewise to quit his Saddle, and leap off into the Bog, where he presently sunk so deep that he was up to his Armpits, and had been quickly to his Chin if he had not extended his Arms. This unexpected Accident caused all the Passengers that travelled in the Fields to stop and lend their Assistance. Poet Roquebrune likewise, who had hitherto out-braved all the Affaults of Fortune, was now glad to retire to a dry Place. The Carriers perceiving so many Men for their Enemies, all armed with Fusees, thought it but Prudence to retire as fast as they could, and take to another Road. In the mean Time it was judged highly necessary to remedy the Diforder that had happened as foon as possible, and therefore they proposed to begin with Monsieur, Ragotin and his Horse, who were both in no small danger of being suffocated. Olive and Rancour, were the two first that ventured to affist them; but the nearer they approached the deeper they funk into the Mud, infomuch that having tryed several Places, and found them all alike, Rancour, who had always an Expedient at Hand in Cases of Necessity.

Necessity, proposed without laughing to draw Ragotin out of the Danger wherein he was, by one of the Cart-ropes, one End to be fastened on his Neck and the other to the Horses, who were then got out into the dry Road. This Proposition made all the Company to laugh, except Ragotin, who was not a little afraid of its being executed upon him, nevertheless, at last the Waggoner, who had run a great Hazard in getting out the Horses, did the like for him; for feizing him fast by the Collar, he, at feveral-Pulls drew him out of his Hole, and dragged him into the Fields where his Company were waiting for him, who could not forbear laughing to fee him in that Pickle. Thisdone, the Waggoner returned to bring out the Horse, who beginning to exert himself, by the Help of a little Whipping, flounced about the Mud, and at length got quite out. Last of all Olive, Rancour and the Waggoner, being all. over bemired with Dirt, joined to get out the Waggon, which they foon performed by their united Endeavours, and loaded it once more with the Baggage. The Horses were put again into the Traces, and Ragotin remounted. his Courfer, tho' that with some Difficulty, his Girts being all broken. Angelica would by no Means get up behind him again, for fear of spoiling her Cloaths, Mrs. Cave and Madam Star chofe to walk on Foot likewife, all whom Destiny accompanied to the Sign of the Green Oaks, which was the only Inn to be met with between Mans and the Suburbs of Monfort. Here they staid, not caring to enter the Town in the Condition they were in. After those that had took the most Pains had drank to refresh themselves, they spent the rest of the Day in drying their Cloaths, having taken fresh to put on out of their Trunks, which Variety had been presented them by the Gentry of Mans. The Actresses supped but lightly, having lost their Stomachs thro' the great Fatigue they had undergone in walking, and which inclined them to go early to Bed. The Actors not only eat but drank heartily before they would go to Bed. They were in about their first Sleep, being near Eleven at Night, when a Company of Men came and knocked at the Gate of the Inn, enquiring for Beds. The Hoft answered his Lodgings were full, and befides.

fides, that it was an unseasonable Time o'Night, for them to require any. Notwithstanding this Answer they knocked the more, and threatened to break down the Gate in case it were not speedily opened to them. Destiny, who had always carried Saldagne, in his Mind, thought that this must needs be he, who was come to carry Star away by Force; but having looked out of the Window, perceived, by the Help of the Moon, which then shone very bright, a Man among them with his Hands tied behind him; which having whifpered to his Companions who were all ready prepared to receive Saldagne, Ragotin cried out it was Monsieur la Rappiniere, who had got some Highway-Man in his Custody, for that he was in quest of one. They afterwards were confirmed in this Opinion, when they heard them from without command the Hoft in the King's Name to open the Gates. But why the Devil, quoth Rancour, could they not have carried their Prisoner to Mans, or to the Viscounty of Beaumont, or at worst, Why could they not go to Freinay? At all which Places there are Prisons, whereas there is none here. There must, proceeded he, be some Mystery in this. The Host thought himself however obliged to open to la Rappiniere, who entered with ten Archers and a Prisoner bound after the Manner I have told you. This Prisoner was in a merry Humour, and could not forbear laughing, especially as often as he looked upon la Rappiniere, which he often did steadfastly, and which was the Reason he was not carried to Mans. Now you must know la Rappiniere having had Notice there were feveral Robberies committed, and Houses broken open and pillaged thereabouts, had fet himself diligently about looking after the Rogues. As it happened, whilst he and his Archers were hunting for them near the Forest of Persaine, they saw a Man come out of the Wood, who perceiving a Company of Horse-men, returned with Haste in again, which caused la Rappiniere to believe he must needs be one of those he looked after. Having caught him, they were extremely furprized that he answered only confusedly, and yet at the same Time laughed in la Rappiniere's Face, who the more he looked upon him the more he fancied he had feen him somewhere, but could not remem-

ber where. The Reason of his not being able to recollect himself was, that at the time of their Acquaintance short Hair and long Beards were worn, but this Man had long Hair and no Beard, and moreover wore different Cloaths from what he did when they were acquainted. All this entirely difguized him from la Rappiniere's Knowledge. La Rappiniere when he went to Bed, which he did after he had well supped, committed him to the Custody of two of the Archers, who tied him to an old fashioned Bench in the Kitchen, and fo went sto sleep in their Chairs, leaving him to do the like if he pleased on the Pavement. Morning Destiny was up first in the House, who going into the Kitchen, saw the Archers asseep in their Chairs, and a Man with his Hands tied behind him, fastned to a Bench, and lying along awake upon the Stones; who making a Sign to him, to come near him, he was not a little furprized, when the Prisoner asked him if he did not remember he was once robbed on the Point Neuf, at Paris, and that he had left among other Things a small Picture in a Box; I was then, continued he, with the Sieur la Rappiniere, who, being at that Time our Captain, forced me to attack you. You know all that paffed besides. I have learned, proceeded he, that you have been informed of all by Dognin, ou his Death-bed; and I have likewife understood that la Rappiniere has restored you your Box, nevertheless, you have now a fair Opportunity to revenge your self on him. As for my Part, added he, should they carry me to Mans, as I do not know but they may, I should be surely hanged there; but then, concluded he, it is also in yours and my Power to make him Dance the same Dance. It is but joining your Evidence with mine, and you may guess how a fury of Mans avould deal with him. Destiny having heard this left the Prisoner, and waited for la Rappiniere's rising. Being come down he met with him in an Entry, when taking him aside, he acquainted him with all that the Highway-Man: had told him, adding withal, that he might well fee he was not revengeful, fince he declined taking Advantage of what he had heard, and instead thereof, advised him to be gone, and leave the Criminal to shift for himself. La Rappiniere would have flaid till the Actresses were stirring,

had not Deftiny frankly told him that Madam Star could not behold him without the most just Indignation imaginable. He infinuated to him moreover, that if the Under-Baily of Alengon should come any ways to hear of his Crime, he would certainly fend quickly to feize him. This he himself was likewise inclinable to believe, and therefore having first unloosed the Prisoner, and set him at Liberty. he mounted on Horseback, together with his Archers, pretending to them he had been mistaken in the Man, and went his Way without paying his Reckoning, according to Custom, and likewise without returning Destiny thanks; but which last Omission was wholly to be attributed to the Disorder and Confusion he was in. After he was gone. Destiny called up Roquebrune, Olive, and the Decorator, and they went together into the Town, to the great Tenmis-court, where they found fix Gentlemen playing a Partie. They presently went to enquire for the Master of the Court. when those that were in the Gallery, knowing they were Players, acquainted the fix Gentlemen therewith, and that there was amongst them one of a better Mein than ordinary. The Gentlemen after a little while finished their Partie, and went up Stairs to be rubbed and dried, whilst Definy came into the Court, and discoursed the Master. At length the Gentlemen came down again half dreft, and faluted Deftiny, asking him several Questions concerning his Company, particularly how many they were? Whether there were any good Actors among them? If they had good Cloaths? And whether their Women were handsome? All which Questions Destiny answered to their Satisfaction; in Return for which Civility, they offered him all the Service they were capable of doing him; and having defired the Master to help them on with the rest of their Cleaths, told Destiny they would gladly drink with him, if he would but have Patience till they were quite dreft. Destiny accepted their Proffer, being glad to get as many Friends as he could to assist him, in case Saldagne should pursue him, which he was yet under an Apprehension of. In the mean Time the Hire of the Tenis court was agreed on, and the Decorator was dispatched to the Joiner, to give him Orders to fit up a Play-House according to his Model. The Gentlemen being

being at length dreffed, Destiny addreffed himself to them with fo graceful a Mien, and fo much good Senfe, that they foon conceived a more than ordinary Kindness for him. They demanded of him where his Company lay, and having understood that it was at the Green-Oaks in the Suburbs, they proposed to go and drink a Glass, and eat a Bit with him and his Friends where he pleased. A Place was named, and they met all except the Women, where they breakfasted heartily. You may imagine their Difcourse was chiefly about Acting and Plays. They afterwards went together to the Womens Lodgings, whom they found just sitting down to Dinner, which was the Reason the Gentlemen staid but little with them; but nevertheless long enough to offer them all the Service and Protection imaginable, which was much in their Power to perform, being the very top Gentry of that Town. After Dinner their Strolling Baggage was carried to the Golden Cup, being the Lodging Destiny had taken for them, and after a little while their Theatre being ready, they began to act, in which Exercise we will leave them to shew they were no Novices, and return to fee what became of Saldagne after his Fall.

CHAP. VI.

Saldagne's Death.

Part of this true History how Saldagne kept his Bed in the Baron d'Arques House in Verville's Appartment, on Account of a Fall he had had, as likewise, how his Servants had got so unmercifully drunk in a Country Inn, not above two Leagues off from the said House, that Verville's Man had no small Trouble to make them comprehend that the Lady they had in charge was escaped, and that the Man his Masterhad sent along with them had followed her on another Horse. After they had a little rubbed their Eyes, yawned three or sour Times a Piece, and stretched out their Arms as often to adjust their Chinebones, they put themselves into a Possure of Pursuit.

Verville's Man nevertheless led them a quite contrary Way to what the Lovers had taken, and that by his Master's Orders, fo that having wandered about for two or three Days in a fruitless Search, they at last returned to their Master Saldagne, who was not yet out of his Bed or cured of his Fall, they related to him how the Lady had got from them, but that the Person whom Monsieur Verville had procured them was gone in quest of her. Saldagne, was like to run mad at the first Hearing this News, and foon gave his Servants to understand, that it was well for them he was confined to his Bed, for had he been able to stand, or to lift but one Leg from off the Sheets, he would have made them fenfible by innumerable Kicks and Bastinadoes, that their intolerable Negligence was not to be excused by bare Words. He slew into that violent Passion, and thundered out so many Curses against them, cthat he quite baffled the Surgeon's Art, and brought the Fever again so upon him, that when he came at Night to dress him, he apprehended a Gangreen in his Thigh, from the great Inflammation his Disorder had occasioned there. He also observed a Kind of livid Colour on the Part, which being a farther bad Sympton, caused him to go immediately and find out Verville, to whom he related the whole unfortunate Accident. Verville seemed much astonished at the Relation, and wondered how the Occasion of such an Accident could happen, which he nevertheless knew well enough, having been informed of all before by his Servant. He notwithstanding pretended a great deal of Ignorance, and went immediately to visit Saldagne; till having enquired the Caufe of his Alteration, and hearing it from his own Mouth, he at length redoubled his Grief by confessing to him that he had been the Contriver of what had befallen him, and that rather to have done him a Service than Diskindness, which had never been in his Thoughts. For, faid he to him, You may remember Nobody would entertain this Woman when you ran away with her; and I declare to you, that tho' I did suffer your Wise, my Sister, to lodge her within my Father's House, yet was it only with defign to procure an Opportunity to restore her to her Brother and Friends. Tell me, I beseech you, proceeded he, what do you think would

would have become of you, if Information had been given in against you, and you had been taken up for a Rape? Could you have procured your Pardon, think you; and do not you yet know that the King never passes by Crimes of that Nature? You fancied perhaps, added he, that the Mearness of her known Birth, and the Baseness of her Profession would in a great Measure have got you excused; but do not flatter yourself in that, for I would have you to know, that she is the Daughter both of a Gentleman and Gentlewoman, and therefore your Hopes would have failed you there. Besides, continued he, tho' all the Efforts of Justice should not have been able to hurt you, yet remember she has a Brother who would surely have been revenged on you for debauching his Sister. He is a Man of Courage, you know, and you have experienced it in divers Rencounters; therefore one would think that fingle Confideration should incline you rather to value than perfecute him as you have long done. It is high Time now to cease that vain Pursuit, or you may quickly come to Repent of not having done it. This Discourse that one would have thought might have both enclined Saldagne to have reflected and repented, ferved rather to encrease his Refentments, and made him entertain strange Resolutions; which tho' he diffembled for the present to Verville, yet he endeavoured afterwards to put in Practice. He made what Haste he could to get cured, and as soon as he found himself in a Condition to mount a Horse, took Leave of Verville, and at the same Time posted away towards Mans, thinking to have found the Company of Strollers there; but being informed they were gone thnce to Alengon, he forthwith resolved to follow them thither. Passing by Vivain he baited his Men, and three Cut-throats he carried along with him, at the Cock, where the Strollers had lodged. He was no sconer come into the Yard but he heard a great Noise. Upon Enquiry into the Matter it appeared to be the Pedlers, who being going to a Fair at Beaument had on the Road discovered the Thest committed on them by Rancour, and were therefore returned to complain of their Hofless, requiring Satisfaction; but who told them she thought herself not obliged to make it them

by Reason they did not entrust her with their Packs, but had had them carried into their Chamber. That's true, quoth the Pedlers, but why the Devil did you put us to lodge in the same Room with those Jugglers, those Mountebanks, for no doubt it was some of them that robbed us; 'Well, replied the Hostess, but did ye find any of ' your Packs flit or torn, or the Cords unloofed?' Neither of all three, answered the Pedlers, and that is it which most furprizes us, for we found the Cords tied after the fame Manner we had left them. ' How then would you have me to repair your Lofs, quoth the Hoflefs? get " you about your Bufiness for a Company of impudent Rogues.' The Pedlers were just going to reply, when Saldagne swore, that if they did not cease their Brawling he would beat them most unmercifully. The poor Pedlers feeing fo many lufty Fellows all difguifed, thought it but Prudence to hold their Peace, however waited for an Opportunity when they were gone to renew their Dispute with the Hostels. After Saldagne and his Men and Horfes had refreshed themselves a little, they set forward for Alengon, where they arrived very late. Saldagne for his Part could not fleep a Wink all Night, and that for thinking on the Manner of revenging himself on Destiny for taking his Booty from him; and as his Inclinations had been always brutal, fo were the Resolutions he came to. Next Day he resolved to go to the Play, which was Pompey the Great of Corneille, and fent one of his Companions before to take Places for four. As for himself he came mussled up in his Cloak to avoid Discovery, but the rest were in Quirpo, being not known. All the Time the Play was acting he was as much tormented as the Audience was pleased, for all admired at the admirable Action of Madam Star who represented Cleopatra. When the Play was ended, Saldagne and his Friends staid behind all the Company, being resolved to attack Destiny before they went away. But how luckily were they prevented? for this Company of Strollers had gained fo far hoth upon the Noblefs and all the best Citizens of Alengon of either Sex, that they never came to the Theatre, or returned thence, without a great Number to attend them. The fame Night P a young

a young Widow-Lady, by name Ville-Fleur, invited the Actresses to Supper in Saldague's Hearing, which they out of Modesty declined accepting; but being pressed thereto with a great deal of obliging Compulsion, they at length confented, and promised to come. After this they retired, but accompanied, as were the Men, with a great Number of Persons of the best Note. Among the rest were those Gentlemen that Destiny found at the Tennis-Court when he first came to hire it. The second Defeat almost made Saldagne despair, till at length he resolved on one of the most villainous Actions that could be thought on by Man; and that was to carry off Star as she came out of Madam Ville-Fleur's House, and to flab all those that opnofed him, under Cover of the Night. The three Actreffes went to wait on the Lady pursuant to their Promifes, and great Numbers of Gallants came likewise to wait on them. Now Saldague imagined it was easy to carry off Star at this Juncture, as he had found it before, when she was conducting on Horseback by Destiny's Man. He took therefore one of the strongest Horses he had, and putting him into the Hands of one of his Men, placed him at one of the Doors of Madam Ville Fleur's House, which opened into a narrow Street near the Palace, believing that upon some slight Pretence or other he might get her out of the House, and then he would mount her on Horseback, and carry her whither he pleased. Whilst he was thus feeding his Fancy with vain Chimera's, and imagining his Booty already in his Possession, an Ecclesiastic who loved good Company, and had scraped some small Acquaintance with our Strollers, happened to be going that Night to officiate his Vespers at Madam Ville-Fleur's, and who perceiving a Lackey, whose Livery he did not know, to sland at her Door, began to enquire of him, Who he was, what he did there, and whether his Moster was in the House? To all these Questions the Fellow answered so confusedly that the Priest had just Reason to believe him a Rogue. He went therefore up into the Room, where all the Company was, and gave them an Account of what he had observed, telling them morcover, that he feared there was an Ambufcade laid for fome Body or other, for that he had heard feveral

several People walking about in the darker Part of the narrow Street. Destiny had taken Notice that one of the Audience had hid his Face in his Cloak, and having his Enemy Saldagne always in his Thoughts, did not doubt but it was he; nevertheless he concealed his Imaginations, and thought it sufficient for the Present only to guard the Women to Madam Ville-Fleur's House, where they were to fit up all Night, with as much Company as they could get; but when he came to understand from the Ecclesiastic, what I have before told you, he immediately concluded that Saldagne was once more contriving to carry off his dear Star. This caused him and his Company to enter into an immediate Consultation what they had best to do. At last they agreed they would wait the Event, and if Nobody appeared among them before they broke up, they would go away with as much Caution as they could. When they had just determined what to do, an unknown Person entered the Room, and enquired for Madam Star. Upon her coming, he informed her that a Lady of her Acquaintance defired to speak with her in the Street, and begged she would only come down for a Moment. Every Body then presently knew that this was the Method Saldagne had proposed to himself to procure the Possession of his Mistress by, and therefore immediately igot themselves into a Posture to receive him. It was not thought fit that any of the Actresses should be suffered to go down, and therefore they borrowed one of Madam Ville-Fleur's Chamber-Maids for that Purpose. She was no sooner got into the Street but Saldagne seized her, and offered to mount her upon his Horse; but he was not a little surprized when he perceived himself surrounded on all Sides with armed Men, whereof fome had come by the great Door round the Market-place, and others by the leffer Door. Hereupon Saldagne, who had always had no more Confideration than his Horse, and scarce so much, let fly a Pistol among them, and slightly wounded one of the Actors before he well knew whether they were come as Friends or Enemies. This rash Attempt had half a dozen Shot immediately returned, whereof one entered his Head, and two others Lis Body. His Companions who

P 2

were out upon the Scout, hearing a Noise of several Discharges, instead of coming up to affift their Friend, fled incontinently, as fuch rafcally Bullies commonly do where they find any Refistance. A Light was forthwith called for, to view the wounded Man who was fallen on the Ground; but Nobody knew him except the Strollers, who affured the Company it was Saldagne. He was thought to be dead, tho' he really was not, and which occasioned the By-standers to lend his Lackey their Assistance to throw him athwart his Horse. Being carried after this Manner to his Lodging, when he came there his Host prefently discovered some Signs of Life in him, and confequently did all that lay in his Power to recover him, which notwithstanding proved ineffectual, for he died the next Day. Being dead, his Corps was carried into his own Country, where he was received with feigned Scrrow by his Sifters and their Hufbands, both lamenting outwardly their Lofs, tho' inwardly they were not a little glad of his Death; and I dare be bold to fay, that Madam St. Far his Wife, wished him no better Fate. In the mean Time, Justice was fain to bestir her Stumps a little in the Quest of the Murderers, but Nobody being found, nor any Body mak. ing a Complaint; besides, the Persons that could be most suspected being of the best Gentry of the Town, the Profecution was let fall. The Adresics were concuded to their Lodgings, where they learned the next Day that Saldagne was dead, which caused them to rejoice exceed. ingly, being thereby out of Danger of any future Disturb. ance, meeting every where with Friends, except in him and his Adherents.

CHAP. VII.

The Sequel of Mrs. Cave's History.

HE Day after Saldegne's Death, Defliny and Olive went to return their hearty Thanks to the Eccle-fiaftic, at that Time Prior of St. Lewis, for having delivered them from a Plague they could never otherwise have hoped to have got rid of. This Priory was a Title rather Honorary

Honorary than Beneficial, belonging to a little Church fituate in an Island made by the River Sartha, and between the two Bridges of Alengon. You must not wonder it both the Actors and Actreffes of this Company received Benefit from a Priest, since you might have perceived throughout the whole comical Adventures of this famous History, how many Services and good Offices have been done them by Curates. This Prior, who before had had but a slender Acquaintance with our Strollers, by this fignal Token of Kindness had contracted so great a Friendship with them, that they interchangeably visited and eat together almost every Day. Now, one Day, while Mo: fieur the Prior was in the Strollers Chamber, which by the by, you must take Notice was on a Friday, when they did not act, Desliny and Madam Star entreated Mrs. Cave to proceed with the Account of her Life. She for her Part was at first a little loath to comply with their Request, till at length being prevailed upon, and having coughed three or four Times, spit as often, and, as some will have it, gravely wiped her Mouth with her Handkerchief, the just began to get herself into a Readiness to speak, when the Prior was offering to be gone, believing it feems, that she might have fomething to deliver which she would not have every Body know. He was notwithflanding stopped by all the Company, and unanimously defired to stay, they affuring him they would be exceeding glad to have him take Part of their Adventures. And I dare fay, quoth Star to him, being a Woman of a ready Wit, you yourself have bad a Share of some in your Time, for you don't by any means feem to be a Person that has always worn a Cassock. These Words confounded the Prior a little at first, but who after wards coming to himfelf, frankly owned he had had Adventures in his Times, which possibly might not prove unacceptable in a Romance, in the Room of many fabulous Stories it is commonly stuffed with. To which Star briskly replied, that she was very well satisfied they would be entertaining, and therefore immediately engaged him in the Relating of some of them the first Opportunity they should have. Her Request he promised to gratify, and then Mrs. Cave proceeded with her Account after the following Manner,

Manner. ' The Dog that frighted us prevented what I was then going to fay, and what ye shall now hear. The · Proposal the Baron of Sigognaccaused to be made to my Mother, by the good Curate, afflicted her no less than ' it pleased me, as I have already told you; but what yet encreased her Affliction was, that she could not propose a Way to herfelf how the might get out of his House. To do it alone the thought would be to I tile Purpofe, fince · the could not think to get far before he would certain-1 ly fend and overtake her, and perhaps abuse her to boot. . Moreover we thereby ran a Rifque of losing our Bag-4 gage, which was the only Thing we had left to fubfift on. At length Fortune offered us an Opportunity to escape, the most plausible that could be, which was this; This Baron who had always hitherto been of a morose inflexible Temper, was now all of a fudden changed from his · insensible Brutality to the sostest of Passions, Love, and that to fo great an Excess, that he became fick with the Violence of it; nay more, fick to Death. At the · Beginning of his Illness my Mother would needs be fres gently offering her Service, but the no fooner came near his Bed than he always began to rave. This my Mother perceiving, and being a Woman of no common · Contrivance, she immediately applied herself to his Ser-· vants, telling them that she observed her Daughter and · the were rather an Hindrance to their Lord's Recovery than a Help, and therefore defired of them to procure us Horses for ourselves, and a Waggon for our Baggage, · and she would be gone. This the Servants would by ono Means hearken to, till at length the Curate coming, 4 and having understood the Baron was raving, resolved · forthwith to deliver him from the Occasion thereof, and immediately fetting about it foon provided us with all those Necessaries we required. Next Morning we · loaded a Cart with our Equipage, and after having taken Leave of the Servants, but especially of the obliging Curate, we fet forth and arrived at Night at a little Town of Perigord, whose Name I have forgot, but which I nevertheless remember to be the same Place from whence a Surgeon had been fetched to my Mother, when she was wounded by the Baron of Sigog-" EGC'S

nac's Servants, who took us for Gypfies. We alighted and went to an Inn, where we were immediately dif-' covered for what we were; for the Chamber-Maid no fooner faw us but she cried out aloud to her Companions, Courage my Hearts? we shall quickly have a Play acted here, fince the rest of the Company are arrived. This gave us to understand there were some Strollers already in the 4 Town, which we were heartily glad of, being in Hopes that we might have the good Fortune to join with them and fo get our Livelihoods; wherein, as it happened. we were not deceived, for the Morning following, after we had just discharged our Waggon and Horses, two Actors who had heard of our Arrival came to see us, who acquainted us that one of their Companions with his Wife ' having quitted their Company, we, if we pleafed, might have their Places; which, if we would but condescendto accept, he promised himself to perform Wonders. My Mother, who was always very obliging, accepted their Proffer, and it was agreed the should have the chief Parts, another Woman that was among them the second, ' and I fuch as they should allot me, or think me capable of, for I was then but thirteen or fourteen Years of Age at farthest. We continued acting here about sifteen Days, this Town being not sufficient to maintain us any longer. My Mother pressed heartily to be gone, having a · Dread upon her that as foon as the Baron was recovered he might make Search after us, and give us some Affront. We consequently set out and rode near 40 Leagues before we pitched upon any Place where to ast. The Master of the Company, whose Name was Relle-fleur, talked. of Marriage to my Mother, but which she absolutely refused, conjuring him at the same Time not to trouble him-· felf with making love to her, fince she began to be somewhat old, and moreover had entered into a Vow never * to marry again. Relle-fleur hearing my Mother's Refolution, trouble her no more with his Addresses. rubbed on three or four Years with Success. At length · I began to grow up, and my Mother became so crazy that the could not well act her Parts, wherefore the · Company having a tolerable Opinion of my Performance, I was:

4 I was substituted in her Place. Belle-fleur who found he could not have my Mother, demanded me of her for his Wife; but which Favour she again denied him, having a Mind to take the first Opportunity to retire to " Marfeilles. But falling afterwards fick at Troyes in Champagne, and fearing to leave me behind her unmarried in · Case she should die, she communicated to me Belle fleur's * Request. Prefent Necessity obliged me to accept the Piofer, though he was old enough to be my Father, yet, s confidering he was a very honest Man, I was the easier · induced to confent to marry him. My Mother then had the Satisfaction to fee me married before she died, which happened in a few Days after, I was concerned as much as a good Daughter ought to be, which nevertheless wore away in a little Time. I began then to apply myself altogether to my Bufiness again, and in a short Time became with Child. The Day of my lying down being come, I brought into the World this Daughter Angelica you fee here, who has cost me fo many Tears, and is ike to cost a great many more if I continue much longer in this World.' As she was going to proceed, Destiny interrupted her, telling her she might promise herself a great deal of Satisfaction for the future instead of Disquiet, fince so rich a Gentleman as Leander had desired her Daughter for his Wife. Whilft Mrs. Cave was about to finish her Relation, Leander entered the Room and faluted allthe Company: He was all dreffed in Black, and attended by three Footmen in Black likewise, which presently gave every Body Reason to conceive that his Father was dead in earnest. The Prior left the Company and went his Way; and 'tis here I conclude this Chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

To the End of Mrs. Cave's History.

Fter Leander had finished his Compliments upon his Arrival, Destiny told him, he must defire leave both to condole him for the Loss of his Father, and to congratulate him on Account of the great Estate he had left him. Leander thanked him torboth, but as for his Father's Death,

told him, he had long expected it with impatience. Nevertheless, added he, do not intend to forsake my Profession, which has always been so pleasant to me, however, must define that my Appearing on the Stage may be dispensed with, till Such Time as we are got farther off the Place of my Nativity. This Request was forthwith granted by all. After which, Madam Star defired to know of Leander what Title she mult salute him by for the future. His Answer wis, That his Father's Title was Baron of Roche-pierre, which he had a Right to use if he pleased, but that having refolved ro continue among them, he determined to be called by no other Name than that of Leander, being the fame under which he had been so happy as to be thought acceptable to his dear Angelica. This Name therefore, quoth he, I am resolved to carry along with me to my Grave, as well for the Reason just mentioned, as to convince ye all, that I am indispensably disposed to perform punctually what I promised to the Company at my Departure hence. At these Words Embraces were renewed, many Sighs breathed forth, fome Tears shed, and all in general approved the generous Resolution of Leander, who approaching Angelica, bestowed a thousand endearing Protestations on her; all which she returned with so much Wit and good Nature, that he was more and more confirmed in his Refolution. I would willingly give you the Particulars of their entertaining each other, but that I am not in Love as they were. Leander told the Company farther, he had regulated all his Affairs, and putnew Tenants into most of his Farms, who having paid Fines amounting in all to near 6000 Livers, he had brought the same along with him, to the End that in Case the Company wanted Money, he might supply them. He received abundance of Thanks for this noble Offer. Then Ragotin, who had hardly appeared in the two forgoing Chapters, came forward, and defired that fince Monfieur Leander had been pleased to declare he would not act whilst the Players continued in this Country, that he might have his Parts, which he promifed he would perform to all the Advantage imaginable. Whereupon, Roquebrune, who had always been his Opposite, rose up, and faid, that he humbly conceived, Leander's Parts belonged P 5 rather:

rather to him, than to fuch a Whipper-snapper as he. This Word made all the Company to laugh; after which Deftiny acquainted the two Candidates, that their feveral Merits frould be confidered, and Justice be speedily done them. Then Mrs. Cave was defired to go on with her History; but first the Prior of St. Lewis was to be sent for, to the End that having heard her's, he might be the better able to relate his own. Great Attention was given, and she began again thus. ' As I remember I left off at my lyingin of Angelica, I have already told you the two Strollers ' came to desire us to join with them, but did not tell you, that those two were Olive and another who left ye afterwards, in whose Room came our Poet Requebrune. But to come to the greatest of my Missortunes, I must tell you, that one Day as we were acting the Menteur, ' Liar, of Monsieur Corneille, in a certain Town of Flanders, a Footman that had been keeping a Place for his Lady that was not yet come, left it, and went a drunkening, whereby another Lady got the Place. Soon after, the Lady to whom the Place belonged came, and finding it taken up, very civilly told the other Lady, that that Place belonged to her, and therefore defired her to let her have it. The other answered, that if she had a Place there, " she might take it if she pleased, but that for her Part she would not move an Inch from where she sat. * thus arose, and from thence they came to Blows. Ladies cuffed each other heartily, which would have figonified little, had not the Men interposed; who instead of parting the Fray, encreased it, taking to either Party, and raising Factions against one another. This was principally caused by the Ladies Relations, who both got what Friends they could on their Side. Then was there nothing to be heard but squeeking and clashing of Swords, 4 all which we only looked upon from the Stage, till at I length my Husband, who at that Time plaid the Part of Dorante, feeing fo many Swords drawn, and not acaring to look on, leaped in among them with his Sword drawn likewise, and endeavoured to appease the Tumult; o when a certain Pe son from one of the Parties, taking him * no doubt for his Enemy, gave him such a home Thrust, 6 28

as paid him notably for his Meddling. This was given unperceived by my Husband; for had he seen it, he would no doubt have parried it, being not a little skilled ' in Fencing. This Thrust nevertheless pierced his Heart, whereof he immediately fell dead to the Ground, which. occasioned all the Audience quickly to shift for themfelves. I then threw myself off from the Stage into the Pit, and went to affill my wounded Husband, but to my. great Grief found him stark dead. Angelica, who then ' might have been about thirteen or fourteen Years of Age,. ' came down immediately to me, together with the rest of the Company, who all joined with me in my just Complaints, for the Loss of fo good a Husband. I bu-' ried him in the best Manner I could, after the Coroner had fat upon him, who demanded of me if I would have his Warrant to take up the Murderer. I answered, I * should be willing to have Justice done upon him, but feared I had not wherewithal fufficient to profecute him, and fo declined it. We quickly forfook this Town, and went a Strolling on farther, being obliged to act for our Maintenance; but our Company was now by no Means good, having lost its principal Actor. I was for a long Fime fo grieved at my Husband's Death, that I could onot give my Mind to get up my Parts, but herein Angelica always supplied me from her Memory, when we were on any Scene together. At length we came to a Town in Holland, where you know that you, Mr. Deftiny, your Sifer Star, and Rancour, came to us, and · offered to join us if we so pleased, whereof we were not a little glad, being almost quite broke before. The rest of my Adventures have been common to us all, whereof you know as much already as I can pretend to tell you, and that from Tours, where our Porter killed one of the Intendant's Officers, even to this City of A-· lengo, where we now are.' Here Mrs. Case ended her Hillory, shedding a great many Tears, which Madam Star did likewise, comforting her all she was able, for the great Misfortunes she had undergone, but withal remembered her the had the less Reason to be concerned now, since she was so near to an Alliance with so worthy a Gentleman as Lea.L. 39

Leander, Mrs. Cave fobbed so violently that she could not find Time to answer her, neither can I to continue this Chapter any farther, and therefore conclude it.

CHAP. IX:

How Rancour undeceived Ragotin concerning Madam Star; together with the Arrival of a Coach full of Gentry, and fome other comical Adventures of Ragotin's.

HE Play went on prosperously, and one or other was acted every Day, with great Satisfaction to the Audience, which confifted of the better Sort, and was generally very numerous, amongst whom nevertheless happened no Disorders, by Reason Ragotin was kept behind the Scenes, having no Parts yet given him; but which he grumbled at, tho' he had been promised some when Occafion ferved. He made his Complaints almost every Day to Rancour, whom he put a great Confidence in, tho', by the Way, he was one of the very worst of Men. As he plagued him one Day above the rest, Rancour said to him, Monsieur Ragetin, disturb yourself no more about this Matter, for I must tell you, there is a great deal of Difference between the Bar and the Stage: If a Man have not a more than ordinary Affurance, he will be eafily put out on the Stage; besides, the speaking of Verse requires no common Capacity, and is more difficult to do than you. may fancy. You must observe nicely the Pointing of Verse, and when you speak it on the Stage, run one Verse into another, that it may feem Profe, and confequently be natural and easy. You must not sing it out, and stop at the Cesures, or at the End of a Verse, as the Vulgar do, but pronounce it always with a good Grace, and a becoming Action. I would have you therefore, continued he, to wait a little longer, before you come on the Stage, and in the mean Time, you may act in some private Malquerade or Farce, to bring your Hand in. You may there play the Part of a second Zani, or Merry-Andrew, and I think we have a Habit within that will be very fit for you, having formerly belonged to a little Boy called Gode:

not, who had fometimes represented that Person. added he, we must first speak to Monsieur Destiny, and Madam Star about it. This they did the same Day, and it was ordered, that the next Morning Ragotin should represent the said Person. He was instructed by Rancour in what he was to fay, who; as you may have observed in the first Part of this Romance, was altogether inclinable to Farce. The Plot of what they plaid was an Intrigue which Rancour unravelled in Favour of Destiny. As Rancour was preparing to begin, Ragotin appeared upon the Stage, to whom the former spoke thus. Little Boy, my pretty Godenot, quoth he, whither art thou a going in fuch Haste? Then addressing himself to the Company, after having chucked him under the Chin and felt for his Beard, Gentlemen, said he, I have always hitherto thought that Ovid's Metamorphofis of Pifmires into Pigmies who had at that Time War with the Cranes, was only a Fable, but now I find it to be true; for certainly this is one of that Race, or else the little Man revived, concerning whom, about feven or eight Years fince there was a Song; made to this effect.

Y Mother would needs have me weed,

But a Pigmy, alass! is the Man,

For call him a Husband who can,

That scarce takes up a Foot of the Bed?

Yet still this of him may be said,

That if he be not, he be not a Man,

He is, he is, he is, he is as much as he can.

At the End of every Verse Rancour turned and winded Ragotin about as if he had been a Poppet, making him to appear in so many ridiculous Postures, as made the Company to laugh heartily. The rest of the Song I have left out as superstuous to our Romance.

After Rancour had ended his Song, he shewed Ragain to the Company, telling them he was risen again from the Dead; and to make what he said appear, took off his Masque, and exposed him barefaced, which caused him not only to blush for Shame, but likewise to redden with

Anger.

Anger. He nevertheless was fain to bear it; however to revenge himself, told Rancour that he was a downright Blockhead for making his Song with fuch old fashioned Rhimes: But, quoth Rancour, I think you are a greater Blockhead for a little Man, fince you could not diftinguish betwixt an old Song and a new one, this having been made above an hundered Years ago. Also, continued he, it is with Rhiming as with Language, Custom must regulate all; for fince, as Montieur Regula has it, who reformed the French Tongue, we cannot give a Reason why we pronounce so and so, no more ought our Ancestors to do why they writ after this Manner; and whereas, whatever is most ancient is always most valued, so ought my Song to be for the fame Reason. While Ragotin was going to answer, Destiny entred, complaining of the long Stay his Man Rancour had made, and whom having found in a hot Dispute with Ragotin, he immediately demanded the Cause of their Dispute, but which he could nevertheless never come to know, fince they answered him both at a Time, and fo loud that they made him flark mad. His Passion being thus raised, he thrust Ragotin against Rancour with great Indignation, and whom Rancour returned again against him with like Fury, till at length they had toffed him about from one to the other so long, that he fell down on his Face, and afterwards marched away on all four under the Curtains. This the Audience all rose up to see, protesting this mute Action was worth all the rest of their Farce, which they could not proceed any farther with, by Reason the Actors had quite laughed themselves into Confusion. Notwithstanding this Affront, Ragotin still sollicited Rancour to bring him in Favour with Madam Star, and the better to incline him to it, often treated him; which was very welcome to Rancour, who did not scruple to feed heartily at the little Man's Cost. But as he was wounded with the same Dart, he had not the Heart to speak either for Ragotin cr himself. One Day above the rest Ragotin pressed him so close that he found himself obliged to tell him, Monsieur Ragotin this Star, no doubt, is of the Nature of those in the Firmament, which the Astrologers same wandering, for I have no fooner at any Time begun

to open your Passion to her, but she twinkles and leaves me without an Answer. Yet how should she answer me, quoth he, if she will not hear me. But I believe I have discovered the Occasion of her Indisserence, proceeded he, and which no Question may surprize you; but a Man that has a Mind to be fatisfied in any Thing must be prepared against all Events. This Monsieur Destiny, whom she calls her Brother, I fancy not to be fo, for I surprized them the other Day caressing after that Manner as such near Relations are not wont to do, and therefore am rather inclinable to believe he is her Gallant, and am more deceived than ordinary, if on the same Day that Leander and Angelica marry, they do not marry likewise. Otherwise I should think her the most indiscreet Woman in the World, added he, to flight your generous Proffer: You that are a Man of Quality and Merit, without taking Notice of your graceful Mien. I tell you this, continued he, that you may have the more Reason to remove her fromyour Heart, since you will not otherwise fail to torment yourself like one of the Damned. The little Man, both Poet and Advocate, was so confounded at this Discourse; that he had nothing left to fay, but immediately quitted Rancour, shaking his Head, and crying after his wonted Manner, Serviteur, Serviteur, &c. Afterwards Ragotin resolved with himself to go to Beaumont le Vicomte, a little Town about five Leagues distant from Alengon, where there was a Market kept every Monday. The Reason of his going he told the Company was to receive a certain Sum of Money that was owing him in that Town by a Merchant. But how will you do to go, quoth Rancour to him, fince your Horse has been lately pricked shoeing, and is lame? he will never be able to carry you fo far. 'It may be not, answered Ragotin, and therefore I'll hire one that shall, and if I cannot meet with one to my Purpose, I can at last walk on Foot, it is not so far, · I don't question, added he, but I shall meet with some · Company that will go from hence.' He fought after, but could not find a Hackney to let, which induced him to enquire of a Pedler that lived next Door to his Lodging, if he was not disposed to go; and finding he was,

he defired the Favour of him for a Companion; which the Pedler agreed to, in Case he would be going by one a Clock in the Morning, when the Moon would be just up, which he, with little Difficulty, confented to. Now a little before they fet out, a poor Nail-smith was gone towards the faid Market to dispose of his Nails, which he was accustomed to make every Week ready for Mondays on Purpose. This Nail-smith being upon the Road on Foot, with his Wallet upon his Back, and hearing no Noise of Travellers, either before or behind him, thought he had been got out too early; befides, he was a little afraid, when he considered he was to pass under several Gibbets where Mens Quarters hung, which obliged him to step aside out of the Road, and to go lie down upon a Bank, where he fell afleep. Some little Time after Ragotin, and the Pedler came by, but who faid not a Word to each other, the little Man's Thoughts being wholly taken up with Reflections on what Rancour had told him. When they came near to the Gibbets, Ragotin asked the Pedler if he would not count the Perfons that were hanged. The Pedler answered, with all his Heart. Then they went forwards into the Middle of them, and began to count; but at length having met with one that was dropped down, and . was very stiff and dry, Ragotin, who had always Thoughts w'rthy himfelf, asked of his Companion to assist to help. him up, and fet him against one of the Posts, the which they easily performed by Help of their Staves. This done they counted fourteen hanged, besides this last, and so went on their Journey. They had not gone far, before Ragotin had a Maggot come into his Head, to turn about and call to the dead Person to come after him, which he did in these Words; So ho! will you come along with us? The Nailfmith, who it feems did not fleep very found, hearing this, rose presently from his Post, thinking some Fellow Travellers had defired his Company, and cried, With all my Heart, I come, I come, and immediately began to follow them. The Pedler and Ragotin, thinking verily it had been the dead Corps that came towards them, ran away as hard as they could drive; whereat the Nail-smith began to run likewise, crying all the Way, Stay, stay, I come, I

come.

come. As the Nail-smith ran, his Nails he had on his Back made a great Noise, which inclined Ragotin and the Pedler the more to believe that it was the Corps they had fet up against the Gibbet, or else the Ghost of some other Person that dragged Chains after him; for the Vulgar are of Opinion, there's never a Ghost that appears, but he has a Chain fastened to him. This Belief made them to tremble so much that they could not run any farther, fo that their Legs not being able to support them longer, they dropped down. This gave the Nail-smith Opportunity to come up with them, whom they at first were miserably affrighted at; but he having bid them Good Morrow, and telling them they had given him a great deal of Trouble to overtake them, they began to come to themselves, and saw he was no Ghost. They then, joined Companies, and continued their Journey prosperously to Beaumont, where Ragotin did what he had to do, and returned the next Morning to Alengon; where he found his Friends just risen from Dinner, to whom having related the Story of his Adventure, they laughed fo heartily, that they were almost ready to burst... The Women for their Parts were fo extremely tickled, that they haw-hawed out fo loud, that they were heard cross the Way, and which 'tis probable they would have: continued much longer, had they not been interrupted by: the Arrival of a Coach full of Gentry. This Coach belonged to one Monfieur. de la Fresnay, who was about to marry his Daughter, and was come to Alengon to entreat the Strollers to come and act a Play at her Wedding. This Lady, who was none of the wifest, defired they would act the Sylvius of Mariet. This the Actresses were hardly able to forbear laughing at, telling her, that if her Ladyship would have that, she must procure them a Book, for they had not one by them; the Lady answered, she would lend them one; adding withal, that she had all the Pastorals bound up together in one Volume, viz. those of Ragan, being the fair Fisher-woman, the Love hater, Plocidon, the Mercer, &c. together with feveral others whose Titles she had forgot. Such Plays as these, quoth she to them, are proper for you Strollers that act always in the Country, and cannot perhaps go to the Expence of fuch fump-

tuous Habits, as the Death of China, Heraclius, Radoguner and the like, would require. Moreover, the Verse in Pastorals favours not so much of Bombast, as that of heroic Poems. Besides, Pastorals are of a Nature more conformable to the Simplicity of our first Parents, who wore nothing but Figleaves even after they had finned. Her Father and Mother were all the while hearkening to their Daught ter's Discourse with great Attention and Wonder, imagining that the greatest Orators of the Kingdom could not be able to utter any Thing beyond it. After this, the Strollers' defired Time to prepare themselves, and had eight Days given them. The Company parted after Dinner, just ar the Prior of St. Lewis happened to come in. Madam Star told him he had done well to come, having faved Olive the Trouble of looking after him. The Actresses seated themselves upon the Bed, and the Actors in Chairs. The Door was shut, and the Porter had Orders to send away every Body that came to speak with them. After Silence proclaimed, the Prior began his History, as you may find in the following Chapter, if you will take but the Pains to wead it.

CHAP. X.

The History of the Prior of St. Lewis, and the Arrival of Monsieur Verville.

HE Beginning of this History, quoth the Prior, cannot be but a little tedious, fince it consists of Genealogy. Nevertheless this Sort of Beginning is necessary to introduce a perfect Understanding of the Matter in Dispute. I shall not endeavour to disguise my Condition, since I am in my own Country. In another it may be I might have passed for what I really was not, which nevertheless I have never yet done. I have always been very sincere in this Point. I am then a Native of this City, the Wives of my two great Grand-fathers were Gentlewo-

[&]quot;men, and had a de tack'd to their Sir-names. But as you know the eldest Sons going away with the greatest Part of the Estate, leave but little for the younger Children;

[&]quot; who according to Custom, are either obliged to go into-

Part III. Scarron's Comical Romance. 331. Orders, or else to marry some inferior Person or other.

fuitable to their Conditions, provided she be but rich and honest, pursuant to the Proverb which has been a long ' Time currant in this Country, More Money and less Hoonour. So that my two Grandmothers were married to two rich Tradesmen, the one a Woollen-draper, and the other a Linen-draper. My Father's Father had four Sons, whereof my Father was not the Eldest. My Mother's Father had two Sons and two Daughters, whereof she was one, and married to the fecond Son of the Woollendraper, who had left off his Trade to follow Petty-fogging, whereby he fooled away most of his Estate, which was the Reason he left me but little. My Father had formerly thrived very much by his Trade, and married a very rich Woman for his first Wife, who died without Children. He was pretty well advanced in Years when he married my Mother, which she consented to rather out of Duty than Inclination, infomuch, that there was more of Aversion on her Side than Love, which no doubt was the Reason they were thirteen Years married before they had the least Hopes of having any Children. At last my Mother was big, and when the ' Time of her Lying-in was come, she brought me into the World with a great deal of Pain, having been four full Days in Labour. My Father, who was at that ' Time employed in profecuting a Man that had killed his Brother, was over-joyed, when at his Return the Women gave him loy of a Son. He treated them all as well as he could, and made fome of them drunk, having given them strong white Wine, on the Lees, instead of Perry, which he has many a Time after told " me, and whereat we have laughed heartily. Two Days after my Birth I was baptized. My Name fignifies little to be mentioned. I had for Godfather the Lord of the ' Place, a very rich Man, and my Father's Neighbour; who having understood by the Lady, his Wife, that my Mother was with Child, after fo many Years ' Marriage, desired he might hold what God sent her to the Font. What he defired was readily granted. My . Mother having no more Children than me, bred me with all the Care imaginable, and perhaps a little too nicely for

6 ons

one of her Quality. As I came to grow up it was obferved I would be no Fool, which occasioned me to be ' mightily beloved by every Body, especially my Godfa-' ther, who had but one only Daughter, that had been ' married to a Gentleman a Relation of my Mother's. · She had two Sons, one elder by a Year than I, and one ' younger by a Year, but both who were as backward in ' Parts as I was forward; which occasioned my Godfather to fend for me always when he had any of the better Sort of Company, (which you must know he often had, be-' ing accustomed to treat all the Princes and great Lords ' that passed by our Town) to divert them, which by ' dancing, finging and pratting I did. For this Purpose I was always kept in a better Garb than ordinary, and had: " furely made my Fortune, had not Death taken him away ' suddenly as he was on a Journey to Paris. I neverthe-' less was not so sensible then of his Death as I have been ' fince. My Mother fent me to study, and I profited ex-' tremely; but when she understood my Inclinations ran towards the Church, she took me from the College and brought me into the World, notwithflanding her Vow ' to devote her first Fruits to God, if He should please to ' give her any She proved quite contrary to other Mothers, who do all they can to prevent their. Childrens. falling into ill Courses, for the was continually feeding me with Money, Sundays and Holidays especially, to go a Gaming, or to the Tavern. Nevertheless having some Discretion of my own, all my Liberties and Abilities a-' mounted only to making merry fometimes with my "Neighbours. I had contracted a more than ordinary Frie dfhip with a young Lad, Son to a certain Officer be-· longing to Leavis XIII's Queen Doavager, who had likewite two Daughters. He lived in that fine Park, which as you may have heard, was one of the greatest Delights: of the ancient Dukes of Alengon. His House there had been given him by the aforesaid Queen Downger, his ' Royal Mistress, who had an Appenage upon that Dutchy. We led a pleasant Life in this Park, but that still like Children, never thinking of what was to come. This, Officer of the Queen's was called Monsieur du Fresne,. who :

who had a Brother an Officer likewife, who belonged to the King. This Brother required du Fresne to send his Son to him, which he could by no Means refuse to do. Before the Lad went for the Court he came to take leave of me, and I must own the Parting with him raised the first Grief I ever felt. We lamented our Separation reciprocally; but I had much greater Reason two Months ' after, when I heard from his Mother the News of his ' Death. I shewed as much Concern at the Loss of him ' as I was capable of shewing, and went immediately to join with his Sifters in their Grief for him, which was exceeding great. But as Time lessens all Things, when this fad Remembrance was a litt'e over, Madam du Fresne came and defired my Mother that I might teach her ' younger Daughter to write, whose Name was Mademoifelle du Lys, to distinguish her from her elder Sister, who bore the Name of the Family. The Reason of her ' troubling me, she said, was because her Writing-master had been newly gone, and tho' there were several others in the Town, yet none would teach abroad, and truely she thought her Daughter's Quality too great to go to School. She excused herself very much for this Liberty the had taken, but withal, intimated, that this Familiarity might end in something more important, mean-' ing a Marriage, which was foon after agreed on privately between my Mother and her. My Mother had no fooner proposed this Employment but I readily accepted it, and went immediately after Dinner to wait on my 'Scholar, finding a fecret Spring within, that puthed me on more than ordinary, tho' I knew not at that Time ' what it was, I had not been above eight Days in this Exe.cife, before the young Lady my Scholar, who was ' much handsomer than her Silter, began to be very fami-' liar with me, calling me in Raillery her little Matter, ' It was then I began to find something in my Heart I ' had been but little acquainted with before, and the your Lady, for ought I could perceive, began likewife to feel 'the same. We were from that Time inseparable, and were " never fo well pleased as when we were left alone toge. 4 ther, which happened not feldom. This Sort of Conver-' fation

tion lasted about six Months, before we presumed to discover the Sentiments of our Hearts, which nevertheless our Eyes had spoken sufficiently all the while. One Day I had a Mind to try to make a Copy of Verses in her Praise, to see how she would receive them; but having never made an Attempt of that kind, I was afraid I should not succeed in it. Notwithstanding I im. mediately set myself about reading the best Romance-writers and Poets I could find, having rejected those of the Melesines, Robert the Devil, Amon's four Sons, the sair Maguelonne, John of Paris, &c. which are trisling Compositions, and only sit for Children. At last looking by Chance into Marot's Works, I met with a Roundelay very proper for my Purpose. This I immediately transcribed Word for Word, and which is as follows.

Our Face and Tongue so pleasing prove,
That I both gaze and hear;
And whilf your Charms invite to Love,
Your Chains am glad to wear:
But since you make of me a Slave,
And use me at your Pleasure,
Why may not I my Mistres have
To occupy my Leisure?

I gave her these Verses, which she read with a great deal

of Pleasure, as I could perceive by her Countenance.

After having read them she thrust them into her Bosom,

whence they not long after fell upon the Ground, and

were taken up by her elder Sister, contrary to her Know,

ledge, which however she afterwards came to know,

by means of a Lackey. She thereupon asked her Sister

for them, and perceiving she made some Difficulty to let

her have them, she slew into a great Passion, and went

and complained to her Mother, who forthwith ordered

her Sister to give them her, which she presently did.

This Sort of Proceeding gave me a great deal of Hopes,

while a serious Ressection on my Condition made me as

much to despair. Now whilst we thus pleased each other

with our Fancies, my Father and Mother being pretty well advanced in Years, determined to marry me, and one Day made me acquainted with their Intentions. My Mother discovered to my Father the Project she had laid with Madam du Fresne, but he being a Man of more Sense than ordinary, absolutely rejected it; saying, that that young Lady's Quality was too great for mine, and besides, she had too little Money to support it, well knowing she would expect to be maintained according to her Condition. But as I was the only Son of my Father, who was tolerably rich, as likewife Heir to an Uncle, who had no Children, by the Custom of Normandy, ma-'ny Families looked upon me as worthy their Alliance, and confequently made me to stand Godfather to divers · Children, with several young Ladies of the best Quality in our Neighbourhood, those being the common Means to promote Marriage, which nevertheless had no Effect " upon me, having been before intirely devoted to my dear e du Lys. I was notwithstanding so continually persecuted by my Parents to marry some other, that to avoid their Importunities, I refolved to go to the Wars, altho' I was not then above fixteen or feventeen Years of Age. New Levies being made in this City to go to Denmark, under Command of the Count of Montgomery, I lifted ' myself privately with three younger Brothers my Neighbours. We set out in pretty good Equipage, and my · Father and Mother were fo extremely concerned at my Departure, that the latter was almost like to die with Grief. How du Lys bore my so sudden leaving her, I could not tell as then, but which I understood afterwards from herfelf. We embarked at Havre-de Grace, and failed very fuccessfully till we came within Sight of the Sound; but then arose so furious a Tempest, that the like was scarce ever known before. Our Ships were foon separated, and that which I was in, com-' manded by the Count himself, was driven very luckily to the Mouth of the Thames, where by the Help of a Reflux we quickly got up to London, the capital City of Figland. There we staid about fix Weeks, during which Time I had Opportunity to survey the Rareties

of that fuperb City, and above all, the shining Court of its King, who was then Charles I. of that Name. The · Count of Montgomery returned afterwards to his Seat · Port-Orsen in Normandy, whither I did not care to go, • and therefore defired of him to permit me to go for $\bar{P}a$ -' ris, which he did. I embarked then on board a Vessel 6 bound to Roan, where I not long after arrived fafe, and from thence went partly by Boat, and partly by Land to Paris. There I met with a near Kinsinan of mine, who was the King's Wax-chandler. I begged him to make Use of his Interest to get me into the Guards. He promised he would, and did it, but was fain to be my Sure-5 ty, for at that Time Nobody was to be admitted without one. I was received into Monsieur de la Rauderie's 6 Company. My Cousin lent me Money to equip my-6 felf, for in my Sea-voyage I had spoiled all my Cloaths. · I thus became equal to many Cadets of good Families, who carried Muskets as well as I. About that Time the · Princes and great Lords of France rife against their King, and amongst them Monsieur the Duke of Orleans; but ' his Majesty, thro' the Policy of the Great Cardinal Rich. broke all their Measures, but that not without tak-' ing a Journey first to Britany with a gallant Army. We arrived at Nantes where the first Person made an Exame ple of, was the Count of Calais, who had his Head ifruck off there. This raifed a Terror in all the others, ' infomuch, that they feed to his Majesty for Peace, which being granted, the King returned to Paris. In our Way we stopt at Mans, where my Father came to see me, old s as he was, having been before acquainted by my Coufin, that I was in the King's Guards. He begged of my 6 Captain to discharge me, which he obtained with some Difficulty, or rather, for fome Confideration. We then returned to this City, where it was agreed, the only Way to keep me at home was to marry me. A Surgeon's Wife that was Neighbour to a Coufin German of mire, ! hearing this, brought along with her the Under-Baily's Daughter of a Town about three Leagues off, under Fretence of Devotion, being Lent-time, but her true Reafon was to entrap me if possible. Having seen her but

once, I was desired to do it again at my Cousin's House, ' which I did, and after about an Hour's Conversation with her, she went her Way, when all the Company told me, she was a Mistress for me; to which I blunt-1 ly replied, I did not like her. My Reason was not because she was not rich and handsome, being both in Perfection, but because all the Beauty in the World could have no Power upon me, as long as my dear du Lys was in my Thoughts. I had an Uncle, my Mother's Bro-' ther, of a fevere Temper, who coming one Night to our · House, after having rallied me extremely for the Slights I had put upon the Under-bailiff's Daughter, told me I ' must resolve to go and visit her at her own House, in the · Easter Holidays, there being those of a much greater · Quality than I, who would be proud of fuch a Match. I answered neither one Way nor other, but when the Ho. · lidays came, I was forced to go thither with my faid Coufin, the Surgeon's Wife, and a Son of her's. When we came, we very courteously received and treated for three Days together. We were also carried to all the faid ' Under-bailiff's Farms, at every one of which we were handsomely entertained. We went likewise to a large 'Village, about a League off this Gentleman's House, to ' pay a Visit to the Curate of the Place, who was a Brother to this Lady's Mother, and who gave us a very civil Reception. At last we returned home as we came. that is, as to what concerned me, as little in Love as before. It was nevertheless resolved, that in a Fort-' night's Time our Marriage should be concluded; which ' Term being expired, I was compelled to return to the Bailiff's House, together with three Cousin Germans, ' two Advocates, and an Attorney of this Jurisdiction; but as good Luck would have it, they could agree upon no-' thing, wherefore the Business was put off till May next. But that Saying is certainly true, That Man propiles, and " God disposes. For a little before the faid Time, my Mother fell fick, and my Father four Days afterwards, both whose Maladies ended in Death, the former dying on "Tuesday and the latter on Thursday soliowing. Al-' tho' I was very fick myself, yet I made shift to go visit my aforesaid severe Uncle, who was extremely ill

" wife, and who died in less than a Fortnight's Time. Some Time after all this the Bailiff's Daughter was proof posed to me a-new, but which I would hear nothing of, ' having now no Parents to force me. My Heart was al-· together in the aforefaid Park, where I frequently walked, but never half so often as I had done in Imaginaof tion. One Morning, when I thought Nobody had been ' thirring in the Sieur du Fresne's House, I walked leisure-' ly before it, and was not a little furprized, when I faw ' du Lys, finging at the Window an old Song, which had of for its Upholding

Ab! why is he from me, the Man that I love?

· This obliged me to draw nearer, and to make her a very low Bow, which I accompanied with this or the · like Expression, I could with with all my Heart, Ma-' dam, you had the Satisfaction you to much defire; ' and were it in my Power to contribute towards it, I ' would do it, with as fervent a l'assion as ever I have fliewed to approve myfelf your most humble Servant. ' She returned my Salutation, answering me not a Word, but continuing to fing on, the changed the Burthen of ' her Song to,

Ha! see bim before me, the Man that I love.

' You may imagine this was not heard by one that ' was deaf, and having been a little in the Wars, I had ' Courage enough to reply, tho' not in Verse, I should ' have just Reason to believe you fincere, Madam, if you ' would but oblige me fo far as to open the Door. At the ' fame Time she called to the Lackey, spoken of before, ' and bid him to open the Door to me. I went in, and " was received not only by her, but likewife by her Father, Mother, and elder Sifter, with all the Civility and ' good Will imaginable. Her Mother asked me why I was fo great a Stranger, and why they had not feen me · we frequently as they were wont? My Mourning, the eas me, was no just Excuse, fince I must be allowed

to divert myself now as well as before; and in a Word, fhe gave me to understand that I should always be extremely welcome to her House. My Answer was only to shew the little Merit I had to pretend to, and which · I expressed in some few ill-ordered Phrases as I had done · before. But at length all concluded with a Breakfast of ' Milk, which you know in this Country passes for a good 'Treat.' And which is notwithstanding none of the worst, Sir, quoth Madam Star, but pray go on. ' When I was ' taking Leave to be gone, the Mother asked me if I would not give myfelf the Trouble to accompany her and her Daughter to see an old Relation of theirs that · lived about two Leagues off; I answered, she did me Wrong to ask me the Question, when an absolute Com-' mand would have been much more obliging to me. The 6 Journey was pitched upon for next Day. The Time ' came, and the Mother got up upon a little Mule they had in the House, the elder Sister rid her Father's Horse, and I carried behind me my dear du Lys. What Discourse we had upon the Road I will give you leave to guess, for as for my Part I have forgot it. All I am able to tell ' you is, that du Lys and I often stole from the Company, and went to recreate ourselves in an adjoining Grove, which had a little River that ran thro' the Midst of it, upon whose Banks we had the Pleasure both to hear the Warbling of the Birds, and the Purling of the Stream, to which we added our mutual Endearments, and many ' innocent Carefles which passed between us. It was there we entered into a Resolution to divert ourselves consider-' ably at the approaching Carnevale. Some Time after this ' Journey, while I was making Cyder in the Suburbs call ' ed la Barre, and which join to du Lys's Father's Park, the ' came running to me, whereby I presently guessed she ' had fomething more than ordinary to fay to me. After having chid me a little for finding me in that Condition, ' she took me aside, and told me that the Gentleman whose · Daughter was at Monsieur de Planche Planete's B:other-' in-Law's, had brought another Gentleman his Friend to ' make Love to her, and whereof the thought fit to get san Opportunity to come and tell rac. It is not, added.

\$ 50 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III. the, that I distrust my Power of refusing him, but because I had rather you should find out some Means to fend him ' packing.' To this I replied, 'Go you and make much of him, that he may not be gone before I come, and I'll assure you he shall not be there by To-morrow this Time. She left me extremely well pleased, and I immediately put off my Cyder to my Servants Management, and went directly home; where, taking a clean Shirt, and another Suit of Cloathes, I hasted to find out my Companions; for you must know there were fifteen of us young Fel-' lows, who had each a Mistress, and were all jointly en-' gaged to cut any Man's Throat that should offer but to interfere with either. I acquainted them with what I have already told you, and all concluded that this Gallant, who was a Gentleman of Loaver-Maine, must be found out, and be forced to return from whence he came. We went then forthwith to his Lodging, where he was at Supper with the other Gentleman his Introducer. We · did not flick to tell him downright that he must speedily be gone, and that there was nothing to be got for him is that Country. The Introducer replied, that we did not · know what they were come about, and that when we did, we would not be so much concerned at it. Then · I stepped up, and clapping my Hand to my Sword, sa'd, If I have her Heart, I have it, and if you do not quit her this Minute, Ill quickly fend your Souls a Wool-gathering. One of them replied, that the Contest was not equal, and that if I were alone I durft not have faid fo much. To which I answered, You are two, and here is a Gentleman and I, taking one of my Comrades, that will prefently go and dispute the Matter with you farther. The Gentleman accepted the Challenge, and we were all gong outwhen the Master of the House, and a Son of his, prevented us, persuading the Gentlemen, that their best Way was to be gone, and not to fland disputing with us,

whom they were positive they would get nothing by. They took their Advice, and we never heard a Word of hem after. Next Morning I went to wait on my dear to Lys, telling her all that had passed, wherewith she

temed very well fatisfied, and gave me Abundance of Thanks

· Thanks for delivering her from her Lover. The Winter now approaching, the Nights began to be long, and ' which we passed away at Questions and Commands, and · fuch like Sorts of Plays, but which being every Night ' repeated, at length grew tedious, and therefore I deter-' mined to give a Ball. I confer ed with du Lys about it, and the confented to it; I asked her Father's Leave, and · he granted it me. The following Sunday we danced all Day and which we continued to do often, till at length there came so many People that du Lys desired me to give it over, and think on some other Diversion. We then resolved to get up a Comedy and act it, which we not Iong after did accordingly. Here Madam Star interrupted the Prior, faying, Sir, Since you are upon Comedy, pray give me leave to ask you, if this History of yours be much longer, for it begins to grow late, and Supper-time approaches. 'Ah Madam! (quoth the Prior) there is twice as much to come yet." Then it was thought necessary to put it off to another Opportunity, that the Actors might have Time to dress for the Play; and had it not been for that Reason, Monf. Ver-vine's 21rival would have interrupted it, who eafily got into the Chamber, by Reason the Porter was asleep. His Coming furprized the Company extremely. He very courteoufly embraced them all, and chiefly Monfieur Delling, whom he hugged closely more than once. Afterwards he began to tell them the Occasion of this Journey, which you shall have in the ensuing Chapter, altho' it be very fhort.

CHAP. XI.

Resolutions of Destiny's marrying with Star, and Leander with Angelica.

THE Prior of St. Lewis would have been gone, but Defliny stopped him, telling him, that Supper would be ready very speedily, and he should keep Monsieur Verville company, whom they had entreated to sup with them. The Hostesswas called up and ordered to get some-

_3. thing

thing extraordinary. Clean Linnen was laid, g heer made, many Healths drank, and a great deal tai. . After the Cloth was taken away, Destiny desired to know of Verville the Occasion of his Coming into those Parts. He answered, It was not on Account of his Brother-in-laws Saldogue's Death, which his Sisters lamented no more than he, but by Reason of a Business of Importance he hadto negotiate at Rennes in Britany; so that being that Way bound, he could do no less than turn a little out of the. Road to vifit fo good a Friend as him. Defliny thanked. him heartily for the Honour he had done him, and afterwards informed him of all the ill Designs Saldagne had. had against him; which you may have seen in the fixth. Chapter of this third Part, as likewise with the Manner of his Death. Verville shrugged up his Shoulders at this Relation, faying, He had defervedly met with what he. had so industriously sought after. After Supper Verville made himself acquainted with the Prior, whom Destiny recommended to him for a very worthy Gentleman. Having fat up a little with them, the Prior retired, when Verwille took Destiny aside, and demanded of him what made: Leander in Mourning, and how he came to have fo many Lacquies after him all in Black likewife. He fatisfied him. quickly in his Demands, and moreover acquainted him, that he was returned with Defign to marry Madam Angelica. And you, quoth Verville, when do you design to marry? Methinks it is high Time to let the World knowwho you are, which cannot be done without a Marriage; adding withal, that if his Bufiness had not called him suddenly away, he would have flaid to fee both his and Leander's Marriage solemnized. Destiny answered, It was necessary for him to know Madam Star's Mind before he declared himfelf. Hereupon Ster was prefently called, and the Marriage proposed to her; whereto she readily anfwered, That the ever would be ruled by the Advice of her Friends. At last it was agreed, that when Verville had finished his Affairs at Rennes, he should return by Alenson, and then all Matters should be concluded. The same was agreed upon between the Company and Mrs. Cave, concerning her Daughter's Match with Leander. Then Vermille

wille took his Leave of the good Company and went to Bed. Next Morning he set forth for Britany betimes, and arrived not long after at Rennes, where he immediately went to wait on Monsieur la Garouffiere, who, after the accustomed Compliments, told him there was a Company of Strollers in that Town, one of which had a great Refemblance of Mrs. Cave. This caused him to go next Day to the Play, where having feen the Person mentioned to him, he was forthwith inclined to believe that he must needs be a Relation of Cave's, he was so like her. After the Play was ended he went up the Stage, and enquired of him what Country he was of, whence he came, how long he had been a Player, and by what Means he got into the Company: To all which Questions he answered? fo directly, that it was no hard Matter for Verville to guess that he was Mrs. Cave's Brother, who had been loft ever fince his Father was killed at Perigord by the Baron of Sigognac's Page. This he frankly owned, adding withal, that he had never been able to meet his Sister fince. Then? Verville let him know the was at that Time in a Companv of Strollers at Alenson; that she had met with many Misfortunes, but that now she was like to have large amends made her by a Gentleman of 12000 Eiversa Year, who was fuddenly to be married to an only Daughter of her's; and farther, that this Gentleman was now along with them, and acted among them. He also acquainted him, that the Marriage was to be confimmated at his Return to Alenson, and that it was very necessary he should go" along with him, both to fee his Sister, and to with his Neice Joy. The Stroller was extremely pleafed at this News, and promifed to be going as foon as he pleafed; but we must leave him a while packing up his Awls, and return before him to Alenson. The Prior of St. Lewis came the same Day that Verville went away, to acquaint the Strollers, that the Bishop of Sees had sent to speaks with him, to communicate fome Matter of Importance to him, that he was very forry that he had not then Leifure to perform his Promife, but that however there would be no Time loft, for while he was at Sees they might go to Freinage, to act-Sylvia at the Wedding of the Lord's Q.A. Daughter',

Daughter, and at his Return he would certainly finish what he had begun. He went forthwith, and the Strollers immediately set themselves about preparing for their Departure likewise.

CHAP. XII.

What happened at the Journey to Fresnaye, as likewise another Missortune of Ragotin's.

HE Night before the Wedding, a Coach and feveral Saddle-Horses were sent for the Strollers. The Actresses went in the Coach, together with Destiny, Leander, and Olive. The others rid on the Horses, and Ragotin mounted his own Nag, which he still kept, because he could not fell him, and who was now cured of his Lameness. He would have fain persuaded either Star or Angelica to have got up behind him, giving for Reason, that they might ride much easier than in the Coach, which joulted People together; but however neither of them would accept his Proffer. To go from Alenson to Fresnaye, it was necessary to pass thro' the Forest of Parsaine, which was in the Province of Maine. They had not gone above a Mile into this Forest, before Ragotin called out to the Coach-man to stop, alledging he faw a Troop of Horsemen coming towards them. It was not, however, thought necessary so to do, yet every one would be upon his Guard. When he came near the Horse-men, Ragotin gave Notice it was la Rappiniere with his Archers. Hereat, Madam Star began immediately to look pale, which Deftiny perceiving, told her, the had no Reason to sear any Insult being offered her there, by Reason la Reppiniere would never pietend to any fuch Thing, in the Piefence both of Archers and Monfieur de la Fresnaye's Servants, whose House they were also near. La Roptinicie knew well that it was the Strolling-company which were coming towa ds him, and therefore advancing to the Coach fide, with his accuftomed Impudence, faluted the Act: effes, to whom he made very coarfe Compliments; which they returned cold enough to have put any one out of Countenance, that had not so much Brass in his Forehead as la Rappiniere had He

told them he was looking after Robbers that had robbed fome Tradesmen near Balon, and that he was informed they were coming that Way. Whilst he was thus talking to the Strollers, one of the Archer's Horses, that was a little Wanton, leapped upon Ragotin's Horse's Neck, which he going backward to avoid, happened among a Parcel of dead Trees, whereof one pointing directly towards him, took him under his Waistcoat, and hung him from his Saddle; which being willing to disengage himself from, he spurred his Horse lustily, and thereby remained like a Scarecrow truffed up in the Air; for the Horse no sooner felt his Favours than he left him crying he was killed, run thro', and I know not what. The Standers by laughed to heartily to see him hanging in this Posture, that they had no Manner of regard to affifting of him: Indeed, they called once or twice to the Foot-nien to unloose him, but they ran away on the other Side laughing. In the mean Time his Horse was run quite away, and would not suffer himself to be stopped. At length, after every one had laughed their Belly-full, the Coachman, who was a strong lufty Fellow, stepped down from his Seat, and approaching Ragotin, lifted him off from his Tenter-hook, and took him down. The Company gathered about him, and made him believe he was wounded, but that they could not get him cured till they came to the next Village, where there was a good Surgeon, and therefore, that in the mean Time they must apply some green Leaves to him, to keep the Wound from festering, which they immediately did. They afterwards put him into the Coach in Olive's Room, who came out. Whilst this passed, the Foot men and Olive went after his Horse that would not be stopped, and not withstanding his being got a great Way, brought him back again to his Master. This done, la Rappiniere lest the Company, and they continued onwards of thesr Journey towards the Gentleman's House, where they soon after arrived, and fent thence for a Surgeon, whom they had privately infiructed what he was to do. He feemed to probe the imaginary Wound that Ragotin had, whom they had put to Bed. He likewise pretended to tent it, and afterwards bound it up, telling his Patient, that if it had been never

fo

fo little on the other Side, he had been no longer a Man of this World. He then ordered him a strict Diet, and so left him to his Repose. The little Man was so imaginarily afflicted at this Accident, that he could not but believe he was desperately wounded. He therefore did not think fit to rife to affift at the Ball which was given after Supper. This Ball was furnished with Music from Mans, the Muficians of Alenson being gone to a Wedding at Argenton. Several Country dances went about, and the Strollers danced divers French ones. Destiny and Star performed a Saraband together, which was admired by all the Company, confifting as well of Country Gentry as Peafants. Next Day the Strollers play'd the Pastoral which the Bride had defired. Ragetin caused himself to be carried to the Sight of it in a Chair, with his Night cap on. Afterwards they made good Cheer, and the next Morning after Breakfast, having been well paid, fet out for Alenson again. As soon as the Coach was brought out, they did what they could to disable Ragetin concerning his imaginary Wound, but all to no Purpose, for he still persisted he felt the Pain of They nevertheless put him into the Coach, and arrived fafe at Alenson. Next Day they would not act, the Actreffes being defirous of a little Respite. The same Day the Prior of St. Leavis returned from Sees, who going to visit our Company, Madam Star told him he could never meet a better Opportunity than now to finish his Hitlory. He required no farther Entreaty, but proceeded as you may find in the following Chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

The Continuation and Conclusion of the Prior of St. Lewis's History.

F the Beginning of this History, quoth the Prior, where you have met with nothing but. Foy and Contentment, has been tiresome to you, the rest you are about to hear, I fear will be much more. This Consists of nothing but the Reverse of Fortune, Despair, and Grief, for the past Pleasures. To begin then where I left off: 'You must know, that after our Comrades and I had got up our Parts, and rehearsed several

' feveral Times, we play'd perfect on Sunday Night, in Monfieur du Fresne's House; the Rumour of which be-' ing got abroad in the Neighbourhood, fo many People crouded thither, altho' we took what Care we could to keep the Park-Gates shut, that we found no small Dish-'culty to get to the Stage, which we had had raifed for us ' in a middle Sort of a Hall. This Place being not near ' large enough for our Audience, two Thirds of the Com-' pany were forced to fland without; whom to get rid of, . we promifed that on Sunday following we would play ' again in the Town, and in a more spacious Room. We ' performed our Parts indifferent for young Beginners, on-' ly one among us, who was to act the Secretary of King · Darius, the Death of that Monarch being the Subject of our Play, acquitted himself so ill, that although he had not above two Lengths to speak, which he per-' formed well enough at our Rehearfal, yet when he came s to act, he was fo fainthearted, that we were forced to s thrust him on upon the Stage; where he spoke so extremely ill, that made all the Audience to laugh. Tragedy being ended, I began the Ball with du Lys, which lasted till Midnight. We took a great deal of ' Pleasure in this Exercise, and without saying ought to any Body, quickly got up another Play; I neverthelefs · did not omit to make my ordinary Vifits in the mean ' Time. One Day as we were fitting together by the Fire-' fide, a young Gentleman happened to come in, to whom we gave Place. After we had discoursed a while, he " put his Hand in his Pocket, and pulled out a Picture in Wax in Relievo very well done, and which he faid was the Picture of his Mistress. After all the Ladies had feen it round, it came to my Turn to look on it. When I had confidered it a little, I found it was made for du Lys, to whom I fancied this Gallant pretended. I therefore without any more ado threw the Box, Picture and all, into the Fire, where the little Bustum melted immediately; and when the Owner thereof would have fnatched it out, I threatned to throw him out at the Win-Monsieur du Fresne who loved me as much at s that Time as he hated me afterwards, swore he would 5. force :

force that Intruder to make more Haste out than he had ' donein; and going to perform his Oath, the young Spark fkipped over every Bodies Head, and ran out in Con-* fusion. I followed him withoutany Body in the Company being able to hinder me; and having overtaken him, ' told him, that if he took any Thing amis, we had each ' of us a Sword by our Sides, and were in a convenient Place to decide the Difference. But his Answer was, he had nothing to fay to me; and fo went his Way. * The Sunday following we acted the same Play we had done before, according to our Promife, in a great Hall belonging to a Neighbour, by which Means we had fifteen Days to study the other Play. I designed to adorn ' it with some Interludes of Dancing; and for that Puropose chose out fix of my Companions that danced the best, and made the seventh myself. This Interlude con-' fifled of Shepherds and Shepherdeffes, that were defpe-' rately in love with each other. In the first Entry Cupid appeared, and in the others the Shepherds and Shepher-' desses, all dressed in White, and their Habits all beset with narrow blue Ribbon Knots, which was the Colour ' du Lys delighted in, and which I have worn ever fince, ' altho' for fome Reasons I will tell you hereafter I afterwards added some Bows of Fillemot. These Shepherds and Shepherdesses made their Entries two by two, and when they were all together, formed the Letters of du Lys's Name. Love let fly a Dart at each Shepherd, and threw Flames at the Shepherdesses, all which bowed the Knee, in Token of Submission. I had composed ' fome Verses to be sung in this Interlude, which were performed, but the great Length of Time has made me to forget them; and if I had remembered them, I fhould never have dared to repeat them before you, that ' are fuch able Judges. Having kept the Acting of our fecond Play fecret, we were not fo embaraffed with Company as we had been before. The Play was The Amours of Sacripantus King of Circassia with Angelica; the ' Story taken from Ariosto. We performed the Interlude ' likewife, and I would have begun as we were wont 6 to do after the Play, but Monsieur du Fresne opposed it, alledging, We must needs be too much tired;

' and the efore difmissed us. We resolved, however pri-' vate we had done it now, to make the Representation of this Play more public; which we afterwards per-' formed before every Body, in my Godfather's Hall, on Sbrove-Sunday. In the Day-time du Lys desired if I in-' tended to have the Ball that Night, that I would begin ' it with a young Lady a Neighbour of her's, who was then dressed in blue Tasseta as well as she; which I did. ' Whilst we were dancing there arose a Whispering among the Company, some whereof cried out aloud, He's mif-' taken, he's deceived; which made both du Lys and I laugh, and which the other Lady perceiving, cried, The People are in the right, for you have taken one for the other. which I answered abruptly, Pardon me, Madam, I know ' what I do. At Night I masked myself with three of. ' my Comrades, and carried a Flambeau, to prevent my being known. In this Equipage we went into the Park, and afterwards to the Houfe. My three Companions en-' tered only, and I stood at the Door. Du Lys observing the three Masquers, presently found I was not among them; when coming to the Door, she immediately dif-' covered me, and spoke to me these obliging Words; Dif-' guise yourself after what Manner you please, for I shall always know you. After having put out the Flambeau, ' I came up to the Table, where there was a Box and Dice fet. I took up the Box, and began to rattle it; " whereupon du Lys asked me who I would be at: I made ' a Sign I would be at her. She replied, How much will you throw at; I pointed to a Knot of Ribbons and Coral Bracelet which the wore on her left Arm. Her Mother would by no Means have her venture that, but she burst out a laughing, faying, she was not afraid of venturing it. ' I threw and won, and afterwards made my fair Adver-' fary a Present of my Winnings. The same did my Com-' panions to the elder Sister, and the other Ladies that ' were come to pass their Evening there. After this we ' took our Leaves, but as we were going out du Lys came ' behind me, and untying the Ribbons that held my Mask on, it immediately fell off, whereat I turning about, she faid to me, Thus People are to be used that go arway be-

before their Time. I was a little ashamed, but nevertheless very glad to have any Opportunity to talk farther with ' her. The others unmasked likewise, and we went in ' again, and fpent that Night very agreeably. The last ' Night of the Carnival I gave the Ball again, when we were fain to take up with the lesser Company of Musicians, the greater being pre-engaged by other Gentry. Dur-' ing Lent we were forced to lay afide Diversions a little, ' to give Way for Devotion, and I can assure you for our Parts, du Lys and I never wanted a Sermon. The Feast of Easter approaching, young Madam du Fresue asked me, laughing, if I would carry her and her Sifter to St: Pater, a Village about a Quarter of a League off the Suburbs of Montfort, whither People are wont to go out of Devotion on Easter-Mondays, and where one meets the Beau-monde. I answered, I would willingly wait on them both thither, or any whither elfe. The Day we were to go being come, as I was going out of our ' House to fetch the Ladies, I met a young Fellow, a · Neighbour of mine, who asking me whither I was goe ing in such Haste, I told him to the Park, to wait on the ' young Ladies there to St. Pater. To which he replied; · I might fave myself the Labour, for to his certain Know= · ledge their Mother would not permit them to go along with me. This News stunned me fo much that I had onot a Word to fay, but going into my House, set my-· felf about thinking what might be the Occasion of so fudden an Alteration. After having reflected a good while, I could guess at nothing but my little Merit and · mean Condition. This confidered, I could not but ex-· claim against their Carriage to me, since they had feemed well enough pleased as long as I diverted them with Balls, Interludes, Plays, and Serenades which I · frequently did to my no fmall Charge, but now that those ceased they slighted me. The Anger I conceived; made me refolve to go to the Assembly at St. Pater without them, whilft they it feems were waiting for me in the Park. The Time being past that I had promifed to come, du Lys and her Sister, with some other · Ladies their Neighbours, went without me. After have

ing paid their Devotion in the Church, they came out into the Church-yard, and feated themfelves on the Wall ' under a great shady Elm. Some Time after I passed by, but that at a Distance. Du Fresne made a Sign to me 'to come near, which I took no Notice of, making as ' if I did not see them.' Some Neighbours that were with me told me a Lady beckoned to me, but I feemed ' not to hear them neither, and going on, cried at the ' same Time, Come let us go and drink a Bottle at the Four Winds, which we did. I was no fooner got home to my House, but a Widow, who had been for-' merly our Confidant, came to speak with me, telling me briskly, that she wondered how I could neglect doing myfelf the Honour of waiting on the young. Ladies du Fresue to St. Pater; acquainting me moreover, that du Lys was very much concerned at the Disappointment, and that I must endeavour speedily, by some Means or other, to make a Compensation for my Fault. extremely both furprized and pleased to hear this, and hav-' ing let her know all the Reason I had to do so, which · I have acquainted you with before, I went along with her to the Park-gate, where the Ladies were. I left her to make my Excuse, for I could not pretend to do ' it myfelf, being so extremely troubled that I should onot have remembered what I faid. Then the Mother addreffing herfelf to me, told me, I ought not to have been so credulous, as to mind all People said, and that fhe believed, what had been told me was done by fomebody that envied me; and lastly, she assured me I should ' always be unfeignedly welcome to her House; and this ther we immediately went. I had then the Honour to give my Hand once more to du Lys, who also told me, ' she had been extremely concerned at my Carriage, especially when I seemed not to take Notice of the ' Sign her Sister made me at St. Pater. I asked her Par-' don humbly, yet made her but confused Excuses, being ' not entirely come to myself. I would have been re-' venged on the young Man that had fo imposed upon me, had not du Lys entreated me not so much as to think of it; adding, that I ought to be fatisfied with finding the contrary

contrary of what he had told me. I obeyed her in this, as I did in every Thing always after. We passed our · Time the most agreeably that could be, and experienced what is commonly faid of Lovers, That their Lans guage is chiefly that of the Eyes. One Sunday after · Velpers, we gave each other to understand by this mute Language, that we should after Supper go up the River, and have only fuch Perfons with us as we could best fancy. For this Purpose I sent presently to hire a Boat, and immediately after went myfelf with the · Company I had pitched upon, to the Park-Gate, where · the Ladies waited for us; but as ill Luck would have it, three young Men that were not of our Coms pany, were at that Juncture talking with them. They did what they could to shake them off, but they obferving it, feemed the more defirous to flay. This · was the Reason that when we came up to the Gate we s thought fit to pass by, contenting ourselves with only · tipping them the Wink to follow us; which they foon after did, but the young Fellows along with them; which we perceiving, immediately entered our Boat, and · landed near one of the Gates of the City, where we met · the Sieur du Fresne: He forthwith demanded of me, · where I had left his Daughters? I not knowing prefent-· ly what Answer to make, told him frankly, I had not . had the Honour to fee them all that Night. Having heard this, he took his Leave, bidding us good Night, and went towards his Park, at the Gate whereof he o-· vertook his Daughters; whom asking where and with whom they had been? Du Lys prefently answered, With fuch a one, naming me. At that the Father reached her a found Box o'th' Ear, together with, You lye, at the End on't; for, continued he, had he been with you, tho' it had been much later, I should never have asked you the · Question. Next Day, the Widow I mentioned before · came again to let me know what had happened the Night foregoing, and acquainted me, that du Lys was extreme-' ly angry with me, not only at the Box o'th' Ear she had received on my Account, but also at my disappointing her, the intending to have got quickly rid of those impertinent

· pertinent young Fellows. I excused myself as well as I could, and declined going near her for four Days together. But one Day, as she and her Sister sat with some o-' young Ladies on a Bench before a Shop in the Street next the City-Gate which I was going out at, towards the Suburbs, I passed by them, moving my Hat a little, but without fo much as looking upon, or faying any ' Thing to them: The other Ladies immediately asked what was the Meaning of my fo cold Deportment, which they fcarce took to be civil. Du Lys gave them no An-· fwer, but her elder Sister told them, She did not know the Reason; and that if they had a Mind to be satisfied farther, they must know it from myself; adding withal, · Come, let us go place ourselves a little nearer the Gate, that he may not be able to get by us, as he comes back, without taking more Notice. I quickly returned, when this good · Sister catching me hold by my Cloak, and pulling me to her, faid, How comes it, haughty Sir, that you can pass by your Mistress without taking Notice? And at the same · Time forced me to fit down by her; but when I turned to embrace her, and tell her the Reason, she flung away · like a mad Thing. I staid a little longer with them, and after went my Ways. I refolved then not to go near my · Mistress for some Days longer, the which I performed; but it feemed fo many Ages to me; till at length, one Morning, meeting Madam du Fresne, she stopped me, asking, What had made me so great a Stranger to her · House: I answered, It was on Account of the ill Humour of her younger Daughter: Whereupon she im-· mediately promifed to make up the Difference; and for that End bid me meet her within an Hour at her House. I was not a little impatient till I had obeyed her, and therefore went punctually at the Time appointed. As I was going up to her Chamber, according to her Direc-' tion, I met du Lys coming down; who perceiving me, ' made fo much Haste by me, that I could not stop her. ' I afterwards went into the Chamber, where I found her Sifler, who began immediately to fimper; whereupon I · told her how brifkly her Sifter had gone by me, but she e assured me that was all feigned, and that to her Know-· ledge,

' ledge, she had gone an hundered Times to the Window, to look whether she could see me; and farther, that she was now gone but into the Garden, whither I might ' follow her if I pleased. I took the Hint, and went tothe Garden-door, but found it locked; whereupon I. begged her to open it, but she would not; which her-Sister hearing from the Top of the Stairs, came down and opened it for me, by a Trick she had got. I went in, but du Lysran from me as if she had been mad. I fol-Iowed and overtook her, and catching her by one of her Sleeves, pulled her down upon a Camomil-bank, clapping myfelf at the fame Time down by her. I madeher all the Excuses I was capable of making, but shecontinued inexorable; at length I acquainted her, thatmy Passion was not to be fooled with, and therefore if fhe did not quickly think fit to let me know her Mind, ' Despair might drive me to the doing of something, which she might repent having been the Cause of. This, ' nevertheless, wrought nothing upon her; the which ' perceiving, I drew my Sword out of the Scabboard, and presenting it to her naked, defired she would be pleased to thrust it thro' my Heart; telling her at the same Time, that it was altogether impossible for me to furvive a Deprivation of her Favours. She thereupon rose to be gone, informing me, she had never yet killed any Body, and that when the was so disposed, I should not be the first Person. Then I stopped her, and begged shewould stay and see me do it myself; to which she anfivered coldly, I might do as I pleased, for she should not ' go about to hinder me. At that, I clapped the Point to my Breast, and put myself in a Posture to fall upon it; which she observing, immediately grew pale, and kicked away the Hilt from the Ground; fo that the · Sword falling down, the affured me, that that Action · had extremely frighted her, and begged I would let her fee no more fuch Sights. I answered her, I was willing. ' to obey her, provided she would be less unkind to me for * the future; which she promifed to be. We afterwards embraced followingly, that I could have wished to have had 4-a Quarrel with her every Day of my Life, to occasion 6 so charming a Reconciliation. Whilst we remained in 'thefe

' these Transports, her Mother entered the Garden, and told us, the would have come fooner, but that the ima-"gined we had no need of her interpoling to reconcile us. One Day, as the Sieur du Fresne, his Wise, du Lys and I were walking together in the Park, this good Mother told me aside, that she had been a faithful Advocate in my Behalf. She might eafily speak this without her -Husband's Hearing it, fince he was very deaf. We both ' thanked he, but that rather by Gesture than Words. A' Ittle after, Monfieur du Fresne took me aside, and told · me, his Wife and he had agreed to give me their younger Daughter in Marriage, before he went to Court to wait his Quarter in his Turn, and therefore defired I would ' put myfelf to no more Charges in Serenades, or the like. 1 returned him my Acknowledgements, but after a con-· fussed Manner, being more than ordinarily transported at so unexpected a Happiness. But I well remember, I: told him I should never have dared to have asked his Daughter in Marriage, as well confidering my small · Merit, as the Inequality of our Conditions. To which he replied, that as for Merit, he was well fatisfied I had ' fufficient; and for Quality, every Body knew I had that ' would very well supply it; meaning, I suppose, my Estate. I do not remember what I made, but this I "know well, that he invited me that Night to Supper," and there it was concluded, that the Sunday following "we should have a Meeting of our Friends to finish the Nuptials. He acquainted me likewise what Portion he defigned to give his Daughter; but as for that, Istold him I had sufficient for us both, and therefore required her Person only. Then I thought myself the most happy Man in the World: But alas! that Happiness ' did not last long; for one Night before we were to be "married, as du Lys and I were fitting upon a Grafsplat, we perceived at a Distance, a Counsellor of the · Prasidial-Court, coming to pay a Visit to the Sieur du · Freine his Kinfman, whereat both she and I conceived ' the same Thought at a Time, and began to be both "concerned, tho' we knew not well at what, which ' nevertheless the Event of what we feared made but too perspicuous. For next Day, when I went to · meet

"meet the Company at du Fresue's House, according to Agreement, I found du Lys at the Court-Gate crying. "Upon asking her what she ailed, I could obtain no An-' fwer; whereupon I entered the House, and found her Sister in the same Condition: I asked her likewise what was the Meaning of fo many Tears? She answered, fobbing, I should know but too foon. Then I went up into the Chamber, and found her Mother; but she no fooner faw me, than she went out, without scarce speaking a Word to me; for Tears, Sobbs, and Sighs had for diffurbed her, that all fhe could do, was to look pitiful-' ly upon me, and cry, Ah, poor young Man! I resolved to know the Cause of this sudden Change; and therefore ' immediately went to Monsieur du Fresne's Chamber, where I found him fitting in an Elbow-chair. " Coming in, he told me bluntly, he had altered his Mind, and would not now marry his younger Daughter before 6 the Elder; and tho' he did, it should be sure not to be before his Return from Court. I answered upon these ' two Heads, first, That his elder Daughter would not be at all displeased, to have her younger Sister married before her provided it were to me, fince she had always ' loved me as her Brother, and more than once professed as much. And fecondly, I acquainted him, I would willingly flay for ten Years, instead of three Months that he ' should be from Home. At last, he told me in plain Terms, that I must think no more of his Daughter, and · fo turned from me. Having heard this, I immediately 6 determined to go Home and kill myself. But as I was drawing my Sword for that Purpose, the aforesaid Wi-' dow, that had been our Confident, came in upon me where I was, and prevented me in that Defign, by tell-' ing me she came from du Lys, and that she defired by her, not to afflict myself, but have Patience, and Mat-' ters might perhaps change to my Advantage. ther informed me from her, that I had her Mother and Sifter fure to my Interest, and above all, herself, whose Kindness and Constancy to me was unalterable. She likewife told me, the Sifters had refolved, as foon as their Fa-6 ther was gone, to give me an Opportunity to continue

' my Visits as before. Tho' this Discourse was extremely * pleafing to me, yet could it not altogether comfort me; for I alterwards fell into fo deep a Melancholy, that De-' spair suggested to me, to consult the Devil about my ' Fate. He eupon, a little before Monsieur du Fresne's · Departure, I went to a large Copice, about half a League ' from the Town, where it was the vulgar Report, that ' evil Spirits inhabited, and where 'tis certain the Fairies, who are, no doubt, the Devil's Imps, had formerly been. I went a grear Way into this Copice, and when · I thought I was far enough, began to call upon and invoke the Spirits to affift me in this worst of Misfortunes; but after I had prayed and bauled for some Time to no Purpose, and only heard the Birds warble, which I in-' terpreted to be their Concern for my Misfortune, I re-' turned Home to my House, not at all satisfied; then throwing myfelf upon the Bed, I was immediately feized with so wild a Phrenzy, that I even lost my Speech; insomuch, that it was thought I could never have escaped Death. Du Lys was ill at the same Time, and much after the same Manner; and that has inclined me to believe ever fince there is fomething more in Sympathy ' than ordinary; for as the Cause of our Sickness was the fame, so was its Effect; and this we understood by our · Doctor and Apothecary, having both the fame; but as ' for our Surgeons, they were feveral. I recovered a lit-' tle before du Lys, which made me to go (or I might rather fay, be carried) to fee her. When I came to her · House, I found her in Bed, and her Father gone to Court. She no fooner faw me, than she seemed to recover, which made me desire her to rise; but she no fooner got out of Bed than she fainted away in my Arms. · This made me extremely forry that I had requested fo unreasonable a Thing of her, and therefore I had her ' immediately put to Bed again, where, after fome Time, ' I left her to recover by Sleep, which perhaps she could onot have done had I staid with her. Not long after we · were both entirely recovered, and passed our Time very e pleafantly all the while her Father continued absent, 'till at last returning again, he was informed by some secret Enemies of ours, that I had kept his Daughter com-

pany ever fince he had been from Home. This made ' him to fave extremely, and to forbid his Wife and Daugh-' ter's feeing me any more; which I learned afterwards by our Confidant; as likewife, that they had, notwith-' standing, engaged in a Resolution to see me often, and ' informed me of the Means by this Widow: The first .e was, That I should observe when this unkind Father came into the City, when I might go to his House, and · continue there till his Return, and that was understood · by his Knock. Then was I to step behind the Tapest y, and afterwards, whilst either a Man, Maid, or one of his Daughters took off his Cloak, I might very eafily ' flip out behind him, and he should never hear, by Reafon (as I have told you before) he was deaf. This Con-' trivance I frequently made use of; but being at length discovered, I was forced to have Recourse to another; and that was, to meet my Mistress and Friends in our · Confidant's Garden, which I did feveral Times; but at last that Plot was likewise detected. We then made ' use of the Churches for our Meeting, but which also · came to be known: So that at last we had nothing to e rely upon but common Chance, that now and then af-' forded us an Interview in one or other of the Walks of the Park; but then we were fain to use a great deal of Caution to prevent being feen. One Day, after I " had been with du Lys a confiderable Time, for we dived to the very Bottom of our Misfortunes, and took all the Measures imaginable to surmount them, I must needs · accompany her to the Lower-Court-Gate, where being ' just come, we perceived at a Distance her Father coming ' directly towards us from the Town. To fly was to no · Purpose, for he had already seen us. She then immediately intreated me to think of fome Invention to excufe us: I put off that Task to her, alledging she had ' the more subtle Capacity. In the mean Time the old Gentleman came up to us, and whilst he was going to ' fcold, the told him, that I having understood he had fome Rings and other Jewels by him (for he had Jewelers always at work for him, being as covetous as he was deaf) I was come to know if he would pleafe to furnish . fine with fine, to prefinite a upon Tade of M ϵ .

whom I was going to marry. He was eafily inclined to ' credit my Pretence; and carrying me up Stairs, shewed ' me feveral, whereof I chose two, one a small Diamond, ' the other a Rose of Emeralds. We presently agreed on ' the Price, which I paid him down on the Spot. Expedient gained me a Continuance of my Visits for ' fome Time, 'till at length beginning to grow jealous of the Cheat, he demanded of his Daughter, why I did not ' make more hatte to Mans? She thereupon advised me to go thisher for a little Time; the which I did. This ' City is one of the Pleasantest in the whole Kingdom, as ' ye know well, and where there is the most Quality, - which induced me to make plenty of Acquaintance. ' lodged at the Green-Oaks, where also lay at the same Time ' an Operator, who kept a Stage to fell his Physic on, but ' that only till fuch Time as he could get a Company of . Strollers together to act, that being his principal Defign. . He had already-got feveral Persons of Quality, and a-" mong others a Count's Son, whose Name I shall beg · leave to conceal; a young Lawyer of Mans, who had of formerly belonged to a Company, together with a Bro-' ther of his, and an old Comedian, who was a great " Proficient in Farce. He besides expected a young Lady of from Laval, that had promifed him to run away from - her Father for that Purpose. With this Man I got acof quainted; and one Day, for want of better Discourse, ' made him acquainted with all my Misfortunes; where-' upon he persuaded me to engage with him in his Design, and that might prove a Means to make me forget my ' hard Usage. I readily excepted his Offer, and would " certainly have engaged in it, had but the Lady that was expected come. But it feems her Parents had been ac-' quainted of her Intentions, and therefore took care to frustrate them, which obliged me to quit the Undertak-' ing. Love notwithstanding furnished me with a Stratagem to renew my Conversation with du Lys without Suf-' picion, and that was, to carry the Lawayer beforementioned, and another young Man of my Acquaintance, to both whom I had discovered my Defign, along with me to Alencon. They foon after appeared in this City, one under the Title of a Brother, and the other a

· Cousin-German of an imaginary Mistress of mine. I carried them to the Sieur du Fresne's House, whom I had before desired to pass for my Relation, which he conde-· scended to do. He did not fail likewise to say a great maony fine Things in my Favour, affuring them they had pitched upon a very deferving Person to make Alliance with; after which he invited us to Supper. My Mistress's · Health was drank, and du Lys pledged it. After my · Friends had continued about four or five Days in this · City, they returned to Mans, but I staid behind, and had a freer Access than ever to my Mistress. At last Monfieur du Fresne asked me, Why I delayed so long to conclude my Marriage? Which made me apprehend that · my Stratagem might be at length discovered, and then I · should shamefully be driven out of the House as before. This made me to enter into the most barbarous Resolution that ever Man in Despair conceived, and which was, to kill du Lys to prevent another's ever having the Posies-6 fion of her. For this Purpose I got a Poniard, and go-' ing to her, defired her to take a Walk out with me, which she granted. I thereupon led her, before she was aware, into a brambly Part of the Park, quite out of any Pathway. There I discovered to her the cruel Defign Despair had suggested to me to preserve her to myfelf, and at the same Time drew the naked Poniard out of my Pocket. She looked so charmingly upon me, and fpoke so many foft Things to divert my Intentions, that fhe at length found it no difficult Matter to disarm me. · She feized the Poniard then, and throwing it into the Bushes, told me she must be gone, and that she should onot care to trust herself any more with me alone. She was going to tell me farther, that she never had deserved this Usage at my Hands; when I interrupted her, defiring the would afford me a Meeting next Day at her Confident's. She promifed, and accordingly came. I faluted her; and we lamented our common 6 Misfortune together; and after a great deal of Difcourse, she advised me to go to Paris, and pro-' mised, that tho' I staid away ten Years, yet would she onot entertain any Body else in the mean Time; which · nevertheless she did not keep to. When I was about to take

take leave of her, which you may imagine I could not do without a great many Tears; she said she thought it e necessary that her Mother and Sister should be of the Secret, and therefore the Widow was immediately fent to ' call them, whilft I continued alone with her. It was then we opened our Minds to each other more than we had ' hitherto done; whereupon at length she told me, That ' if I had Thoughts of carrying her away, she would willingly confent to it, and follow me wherefoever I ' pleased; and that if any were sent out after us, and ' should overtake us, she would pretend to be with Child by me. However, my Love was fo honourable towards her, that I would by no Means confent to any ' Hazard of her Reputation on my Account, but leave the Event of all Things to Fo tune. In the Interim her ' Mother and Sister came, and we broke our Resolution ' to them, which caused fresh Tears and Embraces on all Sides. In short, I took my Leave of them, in order to ' my Journey to Paris. Before I fate cut, I wrote a Letter to du Lys, the Contents whereof I have forgot, but you may imagine I omitted nothing therein that might serve to raise her Compassion; and my Confidente that carried it, affured me she could not read it for weeping, and much less return an Asswer. I have forborn telling the feveral other Adventures that happened during our Amour, to the End I might not trefpass too far on your Patience; such as the Jealousy du Lys conceived at a Cousin German of her's that came to fee her, and lived at her Father's for three Months together, and also on Account of the Gentleman's Daughter that brought the Gallant whom I fent away packing; together with several Rencounters I had by Night for her Sake, in two whereof I was wounded, once in the Arm, and another Time in the Thigh. But to end all Digressions, I must even let you know that I departed at last for Paris, where I arrived safe, and continued about a Year. Not being able to maintain myfelf equal to what I had done in this City, as well by Reason of the excessive Dearnels of Provisions, as by having diminished my Fortune by the Expences I was R

at on account of du Lys, as you have heard before, I was ' fain to put myself to one of the King's Secretaries, who had been married to his Predecessor's Widow. ' this Lady confer'd many Favours upon me, yet was I ' always fo blind as not to perceive 'em, tho' fome of them ' were fo open, that most of the Family took notice of ' them. One Day having bought some Holland for Neckbands and Wriftbands to my Shirts, and given them to ' fome of the Maid-fervants to make, my Mittress came by and observ'd them; when asking who they were for, and understanding they were mine, she bid them to finish 'em as foon as they could, but leave the Lace for her to ' put on. Afterwards whilft fhe was working on them I by chance enter'd the Chamber, when she call'd to me, ' and told me she was at work for me; which surprized " me so much, that I could only return her Thanks, and ' fo went out. But one Morning, to my great Wonder, ' whilst I was writing in my Bed-chamber, which was onot very far off hers, she fent for me by one of her Laqueys. Whilft I was going to wait on her, I heard her ' rave like mad against one of her Chamber-maids and ' her Waiting-Gentlewoman, in these Words, ' Get ye out ' of my Chamber, ye Blunderers, ye Buffleheads; you know not how to do any thing as ye should, 'As they went out · I came in; whereupon, having rallied them yet a little · longer, she bid me that the Door, and come and dress her, and particularly to take the clean Smock from the ' Toilet, and put it on for her. At the fame time the stript · off her foul one, and expos'd herfelf naked to my fight. 1 was fo greatly asnamed of this Action of he.s, that I ' told her I should be less serviceable to her that way than her Maids, therefore defir'd her to fend for them again; ' which she was nevertheless oblig'd to do by the sudden ar ival of her Husband. I had no reason to doubt of her ' Intentions, but as I was young and timerous, was likewife apprehensive of some unlucky Accident, and there-' fore resolved to ask Leave speedily to be gone, which I did foon after, whereto the Hufband answer'd nothing, ' and the Wife fullenly turn'd her Chair towards the Fire, and bid the Butler clear the Table. After this, I went 4 down

' down to Supper with the Steward; being at Table a ' Neice of my Ladies, of about twelve Years old, came to me from her Aunt, to know whether I had the · Courage to eat before I went. I forgot what Answer'l fent her, but I well remember she immediately fell sick, and was forced to keep her Bed. Next Morning betimes · she sent for me to go for a Physician. When I came near her Bed-fide, the catch'd me by the Hand, and told me, I had · been the Occasion of her Illness. This augmented my o former Apprehensions, and therefore the same Day I · listed myself in the Troops that were then raising at Paris, for the Duke of Mantua, and departed without faying ought to any body. Our Captain came not along with us, leaving the Command of his Company to his Lieuteonant, who was a common Robber. The same were · the two Serjeants, for they plundered wherever they came; the Lieutenant and one of the Serjeants were at « last hanged by the Provost of Trojes in Champagn, but he · spared one of the Serjeants on account of his being Bro-. ther to a Valet de Chambre of the Duke of Orleans. · We hereby remain'd without a Leader; whereupon the · Soldiers with commonConfent pitch'd upon me to command the Company, which confisted of fourfcore Men. · I took this Post upon me, with that Authority as if I had really been their Captain. I drew out my Company, · muster'd them, and distributed Arms among it them, which · I receiv'd at St. Reine in Burgundy. At length we filed off to Ambrun in Dauphine, where our Captain came to us, expecting scarce to find a Man in his Company; but when he perceived all I had done, and that I had pre-' ferved Sixty-eight of the Men, having lost only Twelve ' in our march, he hug'd me heartily, and gave me the Colours and his Table. The Army was one of the fincst that ever went out of France, but which had the ill Success you may have heard of meerly thro' the bad Intelli-' gence between the Generals. After its Defeat, I stay'd at Grenoble, to avoid the Barbarity of the Peasants of Burgumdy and Champagne, who murther'd all that fled, ' in fuch greatNumbers, that it introduced the Plague into those two Provinces, the which afterwards likewise fpread

' fpread throughout the whole Kingdom. Having staid ' fome Time at Grenoble, where I had got a great deal of ' Acquaintance, I at length refolved to go for this City, ' where I was born; but travelling out of the high Road for the Reason above-mentioned, came at length to a ' finall Town, called St. Patrice, where the Lady of the ' Mannor's Son was raising a Company of Foot, to go to ' the Seige of Mountauban. I listed under him, and he having discovered something more than ordinary in my ' Countenance, after having demanded of me who I was, and being told the Truth by me, he defired me to accept the Tutelage of a young Brother of his, to whom he had ' given the Colours, which I readily did. We departed then for Noous in Provence, being the Place of Rendezvous for the Regiment; but before we had been there three Days, our Captain's Steward robbed his Master and ' fled. He gave Orders to have him pursued but it proved ' to no Purpose. He then defired me take the Keys of his Coffers, which I did not keep long, by Peason he was . commanded from the Regiment, to wait on the Cardinal Richelica, who then headed the Army for the Siege of Montauban, and other rebellious Towns of Guyenne * and Languedoc. He nevertheless carried me along with ' him, and we found his Eminence in the Town of Albi; thence we waited on him to the aforesaid rebellious City, but it continued not long so after this great Stuseman's fetting down before it. During this March we had a great Number of Adventures, which I do not think it ' to bring you acquainted with, for fear of proving tiresom, ' having but too just Reason to believe I have been so too ' much already.' ---- To this Star replied, He would deprive them of a great deal of Pleasure, if he did not continue his Adventures to the End. He went on then, after the following Manner - 'I got a great Acquairt-' ance in this illustrious Cardinal's House, and that chiefly ' with the Pages, whereof there were Eighteen of Nor-· mandy, who all made extreme much of me, as did like ' wife the rest of his Eminence's Servants. As soon as the ' Town was furrendered our Regiment was disbanded, and ' we returned to St. Pairice. The Lady of the Mannor had

' had a Suit at Law with her eldest Son, and was going' to Grenoble to prosecute it. As soon as we were got home, we were defired to accompany her thither, the which I had no Manner of Mind to do, having determined to go as I told you before: We were however ' prevailed upon to comply with her Request, which I have onot fince repented of; for whilst we staid at Grenoble so-' liciting this Suit, the late King of France Lewis XIII. happened to pass by that Way into Italy, and I had the · Honour to meet in his Retinue all the great Lords of ' this Country, and amongst the rest the Governor of this ' City, who being well acquainted with Monsieur St. Pa-"trice, after having offered me what Money I wanted, recommended me heartily to him, fo that I had then no Reason to complain. I met likewise sive young Men of this City, three whereof were Gentlemen who had been ' my intimate Acquaintance: I t eated them the best I could, both at our House and at the Tavern. One Day as we were coming from Breakfast at an Inn in the ' Suburbs of St. Law ence, which is on the other Side of the Water, we happened to stop upon the Bridge to see the Boats pass, when one of the five told me serioully, he very much wondered I had not enquired of them after du Lys. I told him, I durst not, for fear of Hearing ' that which would not please me. They replied, I had 6 done wifely to flight her that had broke her Word to me. I thought I should have died at this News, but ' however must know more to the same Purpose; for they immediately acquainted me farther, That my De. s parture for Italy was no fooner heard of there, than du Lys was married by her Parents to a young Man, whom they named to me, and to whom I had the most Aver-' fion of any of her Pretenders. Then I began to break out and rail at her, in all the ill Language that Jealou-' fy could fuggest; I called her Tygres, Traitoress, and the like, for that the could fuffer herfelf to be married, when she-knew I was so near, and would certainly require an Account both from him and her. I then took a Purse out of my Pocket which she had given me, ' wherein I kept a Bracelet of her's, and a blue Ribbon, and putting a Stone into it, to make it fink, threw it R 3

' in a great Passion into the River, utidring these Words at the fame time; So may I blother out of my Memory, as I abandon this Purse to the Pleasure of the Waves. These Gentlemen were not a little surpriz'd at my Proceeding, and therefore told me, they were extremely forry they had let me know fo much; which nevertheless ' I should-have come to the Knowledge of some way or other. They added moreover, to comfort me, That what du Lys had done was wholiy by Compulsion; for they perfectly perceived an aversion in her to the Person; and which was demonstrable enough, in that she languish'd all the Time she was marri'd to him, and died not long after. This News encreas'd my Grief and comforted me at the same time. I took leave of these Gentlemen, and went home, but fo alter'd, that young Madam St. Patrice, the good Lady's Daughter observ'd it, and ask'd me what al ail'd. I gave her no Answer; yet at length, upon presfing me farther, I told her the Story of my whole Adventures, together with the News I had just then heard, · This good natur'd young Thing (being extremely concern'd at the Relation, which might be perceived by her crying) went immediately and told it to her Mother and Brothers, who all affured me they commiserated my Miffortunes, and would do all that lay in their power to re-· drefs 'em, but that in the mean time I must be comforted and have Patience. The Suit betwixt the Mother and the Son ended by an Arbitration, and so we return'd. I then began to think of fettling in the World. The · House where I was, would have been sufficient to have-· afforded me a Character, had I been disposed to marry, · but tho' feveral good Matches were offer'd me, yet would: · I accept of none. Then I return'd to my former Refo-· lution of being a Capuchine, and required the Habit, but-I met with so many obstacles in this Intention, which would be but tedious for you to hear, that I foon quittedthat defign likewise. About this time the King command. ed the Arrierban of the Gentry of Dauphine to go to Ca-· fal. Monsieur de St. Patrice desir'd me to go along with him, which I could not well refuse. We departed and arrived there, and you know what was the Success of 6 it:

' it. The Seige was rais'd, the Town given up, and Peace 'concluded thro' the Mediation of Mazarine. This was the first flep he made to the Cardinalship, and to that prodigious Grandeur which he arriv'd at, afterwards in the Government of France. We return'd to St. Patrice, "where I still persisted in becoming a Recluje, but divine ' Providence order'd it otherwise. One Day Monsieur de St. Patrice perceiving my Resolution, told me, he would ' advise me to take Orders as a Secular Priest. I reply'd, ' I had not Capacity: He answer'd, there were those that ' had less. I resolv'd then upon it, and took Orders upon ' an Allowance of a Hundred Livers a Year that Madam St. Patrice gave me. I said my first Mass in our Patish Church, and upon which Occasion my Patroness treated about thirty Priests and several Gentry of the Neighbourhood. I · liv'd with too rich People to want Preferment, for in fix " Months time I got a confiderable Priory, and two other · finall Benefices. Some Years after, I had a very large · Priory and a very good Curateship given me, for I had ta-' ken agreat deal of Pains in my Study, and was arriv'd to that Perfection in Preaching, that I could mount the Pul-' pit before the best Auditory, and even in presence of any " Bishop. I manag'd my Revenues with discretion, and in . a fhort time got together a confiderable Sum of Money, ' wherewith I retir'd into this City, where I think myself extremely happy in meeting with fo good Company, as 4 likewise in having done them some small Service.' Rather quoth Star, the greatest that could be done for at y Body. She was going to fay more, when Ragotin started up and faid, he would write a Comedy upon this Story, which would afford a more than ordinary Decoration of the Stage: For Example, a fine Park with a great Wood and a River, with Lovers walking and fighting, and a Priest faying his first Mass in it. What could be finer? This made . all the Company laugh, when Requebrune, who had all along contradicted Ragetin, told him, You will never be able to do any thing in the Matter. You know nothing of the Rules of the Stage; besides you must change the Scene, and continue three or four Years upon it. Then the Prior said, 'Gentlemen pray don't dispute upon this Point, for I R 4

' have taken Care of it myself already. You may re-' member that Monfieur du Hardy never observed Rules of fo flrictly, no more than some others of our late Poets have done, fuch as the Author of St. Euflace, &c. Monfeur Corneille likewise would not have been so nice in this Particular had not Monfieur Scudery been fo severe on his Cid. But for the most Part these are such Faults as the better Sort of Judges term beautiful ones. ' must tell you, quoth the Prior, I have composed a Play on the Subject of my Adventures myfelf, and have called it Fidelity preserved after Hopelost. I have also taken · for my Device a whithered Tree with only a few blatt-· ed Leaves on it, and a Spaniel-Dog lying at the Root of it with this Motto out of his Mouth, Deprived of ' Hope, yet always faithful. My Play hath been acted fe-· veral Times.' The Title you have chose for it, quoth Star, is as much a propos as your Device and Motto, for tho' your Mistress has proved false to you, yet you contime conflant to her, refolving never to marry any other. The Conversation ended by the Arrival of Monsieur Verwille and Monsieur la Garoussiere, and here ends this Chapter, which no doubt has been tedious as well in regard of its Length as Subject.

CHAP. XIV.

Verville's Return, accompanied by Monsieur la Garouffiere.

The Astors and Astresses Marriage; together with another Adventure of Ragotin's.

L L the Company were extremely surprized to see Monsseur la Garcussiere. As for Verville's Return, it had been long expected with Impatience, and that chiesty by the two Couples that were to be married. The Company demanded of la Garcussiere what News he had brought. He answered, None; but that Monsseur Verville having communicated an Affair of Importance to him, he was glad of the Occasion to come and see them again, and to offer them a Continuance of his Services. Hereupon Verville made a Sign to him that that Matter was to be talked

talked of in Private, and to break off the Discourse, prefently presented the Prior of St. Leavis to him, who he told him was his particular Friend, and moreover a Man of Worth. Then Star told them he had just concluded a Story the most entertaining that could be imagined, which . caused these two new arrived Gentlemen to profess their Concern for not having come before to have had their Share of it. After this, Verville went into another Room, whither Destiny followed him, when after they had continued there for some Time, they called in Star and Angelica, and afterwards Leander and Mrs. Cave, whom Monfieur la Garouffiere followed without Invitation. When they were all together Monsieur Verville told them he had acquainted Monfieur la Garouffiere with the Defign of their . Inter-marriages, whilst he was at Rennes, and that he had presently resolved to go home by Alenson, to assist at their Weddings. The two Couple gave him a great deal of Thanks, and returned him their Acknowledgments of the Honour he had done them. But now I think of it, quoth Monfieur Verville to la Garouffiere, had not we best have the Man up that waits below? I think so, replied la Garouffiere, if the Company were willing. They answered, any Friend of his or Monsieur Verwille's would be welcome at any Time to them. The Man was thereupon fent for up. As he entered the Room Mrs. Cave looked fledfaftly upon him, and began to be moved, tho' she knew not at what. She was asked if she knew that Man? She answered she could not remember she had ever seen him. Then she was desired to take more Notice of his Face. . which she did, and began to find so many of her own Features in him, that she cried out, It is not my Brother fure! Whereupon he immediately went to her, and embracing her, told her he was her Brother, whom Variety of Misfortunes had kept fo long from the Sight of her. He afterwards faluted his Niece and the Rest of the Company, and then affisted at the secret Conference, where it was concluded that the two Marriages should . be speedily solemnized. All the Difficulty at last was what Priest should marry them. Then the Prior who had been called in to the Conference stepped up, and faid he would talk about that with the Parfons of

R 5

the :

the two Parishes in the City, and of that of the Suburbs of Monfort; and if they made any difficulty about it, he would return to Sees, and obtain leave of that Bishop, and providing he would not grant it, he would go and procure it from the Bishop of Mans, who was his intimate Acquaintance, and within whose Diocess his small Con-The Company was very well pleafed with his Proposal, and desired him to take that trouble upon him. Then was a Notary privately fent for, and the Marriage Contracts drawn. Idon't tell you the Particulars of them, because they never came to my Knowledge; but certain it is, the Parties were foon after married accordingly. Monfieur Verville, Monfieur la Garcuffiere, and the Prior of St. Leavis were Witnesses to the Contracts. This last went immediately to discourse the aforesaid Parsons, but neither of them would marry them, alledging feveral Reasons that the Prior pe haps was unable to answer for want of Capacity. This made him refolve, according to his Promife, to go to Sces. For this purpose he took Leander's Horse, and one of his Servants, and went to wait on the Bishop of that Diocess, who was very unwilling to grant his request. The Prior urg'd, that these People were of no Dio. cefs, being here To-day, and gone To-morrow, and yet could not be reputed Vagabones as the three Parsons would needs have them to be, by reason they had the King's Licence, and by consequence we e Sbjects of that Diocess wherever they happen'd to come. Also, that those Persons for whom he repuired a Licence were at present in the Diocefs of Alenson, over which his Lordship had Jurisdiction, and that therefore he humbly requested the favour of a Licence for them, they being very honest People. Hereupon the Bishop gave the Prior liberty to have them married in what Chuch he pleased. He would have called his Secretary to have drawn up the Licence in Form, but the Prior told him, that a Word or two under his own Hand would be fufficient. Next Day our Solicitor return'd to Alenson, where he found the betroth'd Parties making all manner of Prepartion for their Nuptials. The other Strollers who had not been admitted of the Secret. wondred what all that Provision meant, especially Ragotin who

who was most concern'd to know it. What oblig'd them to keep it so fecret related wholly to Destiny, for as for Leander and Angelica, every body knew they were to be married. Another reason likewise was, their fear of not obtaining a Licence; but no fooner were they fecure of one than they made the Matter public, and having read the Marriage Contracts before all the Company, proceeded to appoint a Day for the Solemnization. This was a cruel Blow to poor Ragotin, whom Rancor whisper'd in the Ear, Did not I tell you what this would come to? I had always mistrusted it. Hereupon the poor little Man fell into a deep Melancholly, which inclin'd him to that despair, which you may read of in the last Chapter of this Romance. He became fo diforder'd, that while he was walking one Holiday before the great Church of Notre-dame, at the time of the ringing of the Bells, he fancied they were made to ring the following Words on purpose to affront him,

> This Morning-Ra-go-tine Got-drunk-by-toc-much-Wine: Go-home, go-kome.

This made him to go immediately into the Belfrey, and rattle the Sexton, telling he ly'd, for that he had not drank to much as he imagin'd. But quoth he, I should not have been angry if you had made your Bells to cry.

The Mu-ti-neer De-sti-ny Has-got-thy-dear-Star-from-thee, Ra-go tin, Ra-go-tin.

for then I should have rejoic'd to have found inanimate Bodies sensible of my Wrongs. But to call me Drunkard, a Name I never deserv'd, I will be reveng'd of you and your Bells, if possible. Having said this, and crouded on his Hat sast to his Head, he mounted up a Pair of winding Stairs, which he thought went to the Place where they were ringing, but which were indeed those belonging to the Organ. When he began to perceive that this was not the Belfry Staircase, he was somewhat troubled;

nevertheless going on forwards, he at length met with a little low Door which went under the Tiles. Here he crept in; and whereas other People would have been forced to creep on all-fours, by Reason of the Lowness of the Place, he nevertheless afterwards had room to walk upright; when coming at last to another Door that opened into the Ringing Room, he went in, and found feveral Persons at it Ding-dong, with such Eagerness that they never looked behind them. At his first Entrance he saluted the Fellow that flood next to him with all the injurious Language he could think of, calling him Villain, Rafeal, Sot, Puppey, Blockhead, Clown, and what not; which notwithstanding the Noise of the Bells hindered that Person (or any of the Rest,) from hearing. At this, Ragetin believing himself not only affronted but despised, went up to the faid Fellow and gave him a good lufty Thump on the Back with his Fift. The Fellow feeling himfelf struck turned about of a fudden, and cried, What little T-d. Fly's this?—I wonder who fent thee hither to strike me? Ragotin was about to have given him a Reason for what he had done, when the Ringer holding his Bell-rope in one Hand, and catching him by the Arm with the other twerled him about, and at the fame Time gave him fuch a Kick in the A-e, that he fent him headlong down a Pair of Stairs into the Chime-room. He tumbled fo violently, with his Head against some of the Clock-work, that his Nose gushed out with Blood, besides the many other Parts of his Body that were extremely bruifed. This made him roar out like a Bull, but perceiving no Remedy, and fearing to go up again to the Ringer, he ran down Stairs as fast as he could drive, to complain to the Lieutenant-Criminal, who lived hard by. This Magistrate seeing Ragotin in that Pickle, was eafily inclined to believe what he told him; but after having heard the Reason likewise from the Sexton that followed him to his House, he could not a forbear laughing immoderately, tho' he pitied him at the fame time, well knowing the little Man must needs have his Brains out of Order to be guilty of fuch Extravagances; nevertheless to content him what he could, he told him he would do him Justice, and confequently fent a Footman

for.

for the Ringer, who being come, he demanded of him why he had abused that little Gentleman there with his Bells. To which he answered, He knew not how he could abuse him, fince he and his Companions rung only after their wonted Rate,

Or-le-ans Bois-gen-cy No-tre-dame-de-Cle-ri: Ven-dosme-Ven-dosme

but that indeed after he had once fruck him he did kick him, which happening to be towards the Top of the Stairs, he could not help his falling to the Bottom. The Lieutenant-Criminal bid the Ringer be more cautious for the future how he bestowed his Favours of that Kind, and advised Ragotin to be wifer hereafter than to trult to his Imagination, fince it had so palpably deceived him. Ragotin not finding it likely to have any farther Justice done him in this Case, went home as well fatisfied as he could, when the Actors perceiving his Face bruifed and bloody in many Places, inquired of him what had been the Occasion of it, but he would by no Means tell them, yet they foon after came to know it by others, which caused them, together with Monf. Verville and Monf. la Garouffiere, to laugh exceedingly at him. The Wedding-day being at length come, the Prior of St. Leavis told the Parties he had made Choice of his own Church to marry them in, whither they went soon after, with as little Noise as they could, and were married, after a very pious Exhortation. Butiness being ended, they returned to their Lodgings, where they dined; after which they knew not how to pass their 'Time till Supper. As for Plays, Interludes, and Balls, they had been fo used to them, that they were not at all entertaining, and therefore they proposed to hear fome Novel read. Verville faid, for his Part he knew none. If Ragotin had not been melancholy, he had been the properest Person to relate one, but he was dumb. Then Rancour was defired to tell that of the Poet Roquebrune, which he had promifed the Company to do when ever Occasion served, and none could happen better than this.

this. His Answer was, He was not at all in Humour; and besides that, he did not care to bespatter his Friend Roquebrune with Aspersions, since he had better deserved of him of late than he had so merly done. At length Mons. la Garoussiere told the Company, that if they would accept of such as he could entertain them with, he would tell them some Adventures he had been an Eye-witness of; and which you'll find in the following Chapter.

C H A P. XV.

The two Jealous Ladies, a Novel.

Y Father, who was a Counfellor of the Parliament, of Rennes, said Mons. la Garoussiere, and who defign'd me for his Successor, as I am, fent me to the · College to qualify me for that Purpose; for whilst I continued in my own Country he fancied I profited but 1 little, and therefore refolv'd to fend me to la Fleche, where ' (you know) the Jesuits have the best College throughout all France. It was in this little Town that what I am about to tell you happen'd; and moreover, at the fame time I studied there. There were two Gen-" tlemen, the most accomplish'd in all that place, who altho' they were a little advanc'd in Years, were nevertheless not married, as it often happens amongst Persons of any Quality, who according to the Proverb, Between whom we would have, and whom we would not, we remain a · long time unmarried. This Saying was nevertheless coos'd at last by these two well-bred Gentlemen. One of them, call'd Monsieur de Fons-blanche, married a Daughter of the Family of Chateau d'un who were a meaner Sort of Gentry, but very rich. The other, whose Name was Monfieur du Lac, married a Lady from the City of Chartres, who was not rich, but nevertheless exceeding beautiful, and of fo good a Family, that she was related to ' feveral Dukes, Peers, and Mareschals of France. These ' two Gentlemen, who could share the Town betwixt 'em, had been always good Friends till after their Marriage, when their two Ladies looking enviously on each other, it quickly occasioned a Rupture between the Husbands. Madam

Madam de Fons-blanche was not, 'tis true, handsome in ' Countenance, yet she had nevertheless a graceful Mein. well shaped, had a great deal of Wit, and was very obliging. Madam du Luc, as beautiful as she was, yet wanted Address; she had wit indeed a great deal, but so ' ill manag'd that she thereby rather render'd herself avoid-' able than acceptable. These two Ladies were of the Humour of most Women now a-days, who never think they live great, unless they have a score or two of Beaux after them. This caus'd them to employ all the Arts they had in making Conquests, but therein du Lac succeeded much better than de Fons-blanche, for she had subdued all the Youth of the Town, I mean among the · Quality, for she would by no means suffer any other to ' speak to her. This Pride and Affectation occasion'd a great many Murmurings against her, which at length broke out into open Detractation, but nothing harm'd her, ' for 'tis thought it rather contributed to, than hinder'd her procuring new Lovers. Fons-blanche was not so de-' fi cus of having a great number of Sparks; she nevertheless had some, which she manag'd with a great deal of Address, and whereof there was one a very handsome voung Fellow, that had as much Wit as she, and was one of the bravest Youths of his Time. This Spark was her greatest Favourite, but at length his Diligence caus'd him to be suspected by the Neighbours, and Slander began to talk loud: It was here the Rupture began be-' tween these Ladies, who before had visited each other very civily, nevertheless with a little jealous Envy. Lac began at last to slander Fons-blanche openly, to pry into her Actions, and do all that lay in her power to ruin her Reputation, especially about the aforesaid Gen. tleman, whose Name was Monsieur du Val Rochet. foon came to Fons-blanche's Ears, who was extreamly e nettled at it, and faid, That if she had Lovers, it was not by Scores, as du Lac had, who every Day gain'd new " Conquests by her Impostures. Du Lac hearing this, quickly return'd her the like Reflections. Whence you may imagine that these two Women liv'd together in a Town like a Brace of Dæmons. Some charitable People did

6 did all they could to reconcile them, but which proved in vain, for they could never be prevailed upon fo much as to see each other. Du Lac thought, the only Way to offend Fons-blanche to the Quick would be to get aaway her Lover du Val-Rochet from her. She then caused Monsieur de Fons-blanche, to be acquainted under-hand, ' that he was no sooner out of Doors, which he was often either hunting or visiting, but that du Val-Rochet lay with his Wife; and farther, that several Persons of Credit were ready to testify, that they had feen him come 6 naked out of her Bed. Monsieur de Fons-blanche, who had onever yet had any Suspicion of his Wife, was neverthe-· less inclinable to restect a little upon what he had heard, and in Confusion, desired his Lady to oblige him so far, ' as to entertain du Val-Rochet's Visits no longer. feemed all Obedience, nevertheless infinuated so many Reasons why she might safely admit him, that he gave her Liberty, and fuffered her to act as before. Du Lac e perceiving this Contrivance of her's had not had its defired Effect, resolved to get some Opportunity to talk with Val-Rochet herself. She was both fair and subtle, ' two Qualities fufficient to furprize the wariest Heart, tho' it had been never so much engaged. De Fons-blanche was extremely concerned at being like to lose her Lover, but much more when she heard that Val-Rochet had spoke 6 unhandsomly of her. This Grief was augmented by her " Husband's Death, which happened a little while after. She went into close mourning 'tis true, but still Jealousy got the Ascendant of her outward Concern. Her Hufband had been scarce buried fifteen Days before she had a fecret Conference with Val-Rochet. I know not the Subject of their Discourse, but the Event makes me pretty well able to guess at it, for in little more than a Week after, their Marriage was made public, so that in . · less than a Month's Time she had two Husband's, a living and a dead. This seems to me to have been the most violent Esfect of Jealousy imaginable, for to deprive du Lac of her Lover, she both forfeited her Modesty by marrying fo foon, and forgave the unpardonable Affront " Val-Rochet had offered her: Du Lac was almost ready to 6 TUR

run mad when she first heard this News, and resolved forthwith to have him affaffinated as he went on a Journey to Britany; but which he being made acquainted with, the was prevented in that Defign. Then the entered upon the strangest Thought that ever Jealousy could fuggest, and that was, to fet her Husband and Val-Rochet together by the Ears, which she brought about by her pernicious A: tifices. They quarelled divers Times and at length came to a Duel, which du Lac encouraged her Husband in, being none of the wifest Men in the World. that du Val-Rochet might have an Opportunity to kill him, which she fancied no hard Matter, and then she proposed to hang him out of the Way for his Pains. But as Fortune would have it, it happened quite otherwise; for " Val-Rochet truffing to his Skill in Fencing, feem'd to defpife du Lac, thinking he durst not make a Thrust at him, but therein he was extremely deceived; for whilst ' he put himself out of Guard, du Lac made a home Thrust at him, and run him thro' the Body, whereof he instant-' ly died. This done, du Lac went home to his House, and acquainted his Wife therewith, who was not only ' furprized, but concerned at so unexpected an Accident. " He after this fled away privately to a Relation of his Wives, who as I have told you before, had several Persons of Quality to her Kindred, who laboured inceffantly to obtain her Husband's Pardon from the King. Madam · Fons-blanche was not a little assonished when she was first told that her Husband was killed; but coming afterwards to herfelf, she was advised to bury him quickly and · privately, to prevent his Body being arrested by the Bailiffs. 'Thus in less than fix Weeks Time Fons-blanche had been a Widow twice. Du Lac not long after obtained his Pardon, which was confirmed by the Parliament of Paris, onothwistanding all the Opposition the deceased Person's Widow could make. This made her to entertain a wilder Defign than Madam du Lac had done before, and that was to stab du Lac as he walked in the Market-place with some of his Friends. For this Purpose she provided herfelf a poniard, and marching up to him, attacked him 6 fo furiously, that before he could get himself into a Posture

flure of Defence, or have any of his Friends turn about to help him, she had stabb'd him mortally in two Places, whereof he died three Days after. His Wife immediately got this Virago feiz'd and clapt up in Prison. Her Trial came on, and she was condemn'd to die, but her Execution was respited, by reason of her being with Child; " nevertheless, not long after the Stench of the Prison did the Work of the Hang-man, for the died of a Difeate caus'd thereby, after having been first delivered before her ' time, and her Child being baptiz'd died likewife foon after. Madam du Lac began afterwards to resect on what she had been the Occasion of, and therefore forth. with resolv'd to turn a Nun, which she did, after having put her Affairs in order, in the Nunnery of Almee neche, in the Diocess of Sees, where she now continues, ' if she be not yet dead of her Austerities, which she vo-

· luntarily inflicted on herfelf.

The Actors and Actreffes continued their Attention, even while Monsieur la Garouffiere had done speaking, so well they lik'd the Story he entertain'd them with. Roquebrune starting up all of a sudden, told the Company, after his usual way, that this was a rare Subject for a grave Poem, and he would make an excellent Tragedy of it, which he would reduce to Dramatic Rules. Company took little notice of what he faid, but all admired at the wondrous Courage of the Women, who being push'd on by Jealousy, did not boggle at the most hazardous Attempts. Then it was disputed, whether Jealoufy were a Paffion or not; and all concluded, that whatfoever it was, it ruin'd the noblest of Passions, Love. There was a good while yet to Supper, when all the Company agreed to go and walk in the Park, which they did, and afterwards fat themselves down on the Grass. Then Destiny said, He thought nothing so pleasant as Novels, which Leander confirming offer'd to relate another concerning a Neighbour's Daughter of his, which was accepted, and after three or four times coughing, he began as follows.

CHAP. XVI.

The Capricious Lady, a Novel.

Here liv'd in a small Town of Britany call'd Vitray,
'anancientGentleman, who had been married a great while to a very virtuous Lady, without having any Children by her. Among other Houshold-Servants, he had a Ste. ' ward and a Housekeeper, thro' whose Hands most Matters relating to the Family passed. These two Persons, as most Servants do sooner or later, made Love, and " p. omis'd each other Marriage. They had fo well play'd their Parts in their feveral Stations, that both the good old Gentleman and his Lady died not long after very much ' incumber'd. As for the two Servants, they became rich, ' and married, having little or no regard to their Master's Misfortune. Some Years afterwards a certain ill Accident " fell out that caus'd the Steward to fly his Country, which to do the more securely, he listed himself in a Troop of Horse, leaving his Wife without Children. She having waited for his Return about two Years, and hearing nothing of him, caus'd a Report to be spread abroad that he was dead, and accordingly went into Mourning for ' him. When this was a little over, she was fought after by feveral Persons in Marriage, and amongst the rest by a rich Merchant, who married her, and at the Year's End had a Child by her, who might be about four Years old when her Mother's first Husband return'd home to his "House. To tell you which was the most surpriz'd, the two Husbands or the Wife, is not in my Power; but ' certain it is, the first Husband's Occasion of going away fill continuing against him, he was easily prevailed upon by the other Husband to take a small Sum of Money to be gone again. 'Tis true, he every now and then return'd ' secretly for a little Subsistance from his Wife, which was not refused him. In the mean time the Daughter, " whose Name was Margaret, grew up, and being rich, though she was not handsom, did not want for Sparks ' to court her. Among the rest was a rich Merchant's Son, who did not mind his Father's Bufiness, but lov'd to.

to frequent Gentry's Company, where he often met with his Mistress Margaret, who was received among them on Account of her Riches. This young Man, whose ' Name was Monsieur de St. Germain, had a good Coun-' tenance, and Courage enough to engage him often in Duels, which at that Time were very frequent. He ' danced gracefully, gamed with all the better Sort of ' Company, and was always well dreffed. In the many Meetings he had with this young Lass he took all Opportunities to let her know what a Kindness he had for " her, and how defirous he was to be her Husband. This " she seemed to approve of well enough, and consequently invited him to come and fee her at home, which he did by · Permission of her Father and Mother, who extremely favoured the Match. But afterwards, when he was about to ask her of her Parents, he would by no Means do it till he had her Confent first, not believing when 6 she had yielded so far in other Things she would oppose 6 him in that; but to his great Surprize, upon putting the Question, he found her to repulse him furiously, both in Words and Actions. Hereupon he went his Way, and forbore vifiting her for five or fix Days, hoping thereby he might in some Measure abate his Passion; but to his Disappointment found that it had taken too deep Root to be fo eafily removed, infomuch, that he was quickly forced to go fee her again. He had no fooner entered her House but she went out of it among her · Companions in the Neighbourhood, whither he followed her, after having had a Promise from her Father and " Mother to use their Endeavours to make her more foci-This nevertheless they durit not attempt to do with Rigour, she being their Darling and only Daughter, and therefore chose rather to represent to her mildly what ' Injuffice the did the young Man, after having once profelfed to love him. To this she gave no Answer, and notwithflanding all was faid, continued in her ill humours; for whenever he offered to come near her, she would still change her Place. Then he would follow her, but she always flew from him. One Day, as the was getting away, he caught her by the Sleeve; she told him he rumpled it, and that if he offered to come near her any more she 6-would .

would give him a Box on the Ear. In a Word, the " more he followed her, the more she avoided him. When 6 she was at the Ball, and he offered to dance with her, fhe affronted him, telling him she was out of Order, and at the fame Time danced with another. She at length 4 arrived to that Pitch of Ill-nature, that she occasioned him Quarrels, and he above four Times accepted Chalelenges on her Account, in all which he nevertheless ' came off fafe, which she seemed to be very forry for. All this ill Utage did but enflame his Passion the more, ' like Oil thrown upon the Fire, infomuch that his Vifits were made the more frequently for his being discouraged. One Day above the rest he fancied his Perseverance had wrought an Alteration in her, for that she suffered him to come near her, and feemed to hearken attentively to what he faid to her. His Language was this: Why do you thus fly me, insensible Fair one! that cannot live ' without you? If I have not Merit sufficient to deserve you, yet confider at least the Excess of my Passion, and the many Indignities I have born from you with Pati-4 ence. Very well, answered she, you may flatter yourself with that Fancy if you please, but I would have you to know, that the best Way for you to win upon me, is to get as far out of my Sight as you can; and because you cannot well do fo as long as you continue in this Town, I command you (which if you have that Respect you pretend for me, you will not fail to obey me in) to list your-" felf in the Troops that are now raifing; and after you ' have made a few Campaigns it may be you may find me 6 more kind. This small Pittance of Hope which I afford ' you ought to incline you to obey me; but if you will onot do it, lose me for ever. Then she drew off a Ring from her Finger, and gave it him, faying, Keep this Ring ' to put you in Mind of me, but remember I forbid you ' to come any more near me, tho' to take your Leave of " me. This faid, she suffered him to take a parting Kiss of her, and so went into an adjoyning Chamber, locking ' herfelf up. Then this wretched Lover went to take e leave of her Father and Mother, who pitied him extremely, promising to continue always his Friends, and e next Day he listed in a Troop of Horse that was raising 4 to

to go to the Seige of Rochelle. His Mistress having enjoined him not to see her again till after his Retu n, he
durst not pretend to attempt it; however, the Night before his departure he gave her a Serenade under her Window, with this Complaint at the End of it, which he sung

to the melancholy Strains of his Lute.

The Words of the SERENADE,

RIS, inexorable Fair!
whom neither Love nor Friendship sway,
Will you not pitty my Despair,
Rather than Innocence betray?
Will you for ever cruel prove,

Will you for ever truet prove,
And must I think your Heart of Stone?
Will you not yet consent to love,
But suffer me to be undone?

Alas! fair Nymph, at length I yield To Fate, and take my last Adieu: Never was Lover surer kill'd, Nor Mistress less concern'd than yon.

When I am dead, some Friend of mine Shall rip up this unhappy Breast, And to your Power my Heart resign, But leave to Earth and Worms the rest.

The capricious Creature at the found, of this Serenade got out of her Bed, and opening the Shutters of the Window, peep'd thro' the Glafs, and fet up so hearty a Laugh as might well make the poor Lover think he was not like to succeed in his Design. Just as he was about to express his Mind farther she clapt to the Shutter, crying out to him aloud, 'Keep your Promise, Sir, sor your ownstake, and it may be I may not be worse than mine.' With this Answer poor St. Germain retir'd, and a few Days afterwards set out with his Troop for the Seige of Rochelle. This Town, as you may have heard, held out very obstinately for some time, till at length it was forc'd to surfrender upon discretion. Then was it that the Troop wherein St. Germain rode was disbanded, and he consequently return'd

return'd to Vitray. He no fooner arriv'd than he went to wait on his unkind Mistress Margaret; who permitted him, 'tis true, to falute her, but afterwards told him he had return'd to foon, and that she was not yet dispos'd to receive him, therefore desir'd him to be gone again. His answer was in these mournful Words. ' You are certainly the most cruel Creature of your Sex, and I plainly perceive you defire nothing more than the Death of him that has all-along approv'd himfelf the most faithful Lover in the World, You have put me four times upon fingle Trials of my Courage, and I have always had honourable Escapes. ' You then would have me hazard my Life in the Army, and I have likewise come off safe there, even where many a less unhappy Wretch than I has met his End. But fince I find 4 you fo ardently covet my Ruin, I will go feek my Fate in of fo many places, that it shall be out of the power of Fortune to afford meany more Deliverances; it may be you will onot be able to forbear repenting of having occasion'd this fince my Death shall be of that kind, as will not only fur-· prize, but incline you to pity me. Adieu, then added he, most cruel of your Sex, adie u for ever. 'Having utter'd these words, he was rising to be gone, but she would not fuffer it till she had told him, that she did not by any means defire his Death, and that what she had done by engaging him in Duels, was only to be the better convinc'd of his · Courage, that he might be the more worthy of her. And · lastly, she let him know, that she was not yet dispos'd to · receive his Addresses, but that Time, for ought she knew might make an alteration upon her to his Advantage. With these Words she left him, and retir'd. The small Hopes ' she gave him put him upon a Stratagem which was like to have spoil'd all, and that was, to make her jealous. · He consider'd with himself, that since she had shew'd fome Good will towards him, she would not fail to be e jealous if the really lov'd him. He therefore fought out a · Comrade of his that had a Mistress that lov'd him as much as his flighted him. He defir'd to give him leave to make is his Addresses to her, and he would do the like to his, to the end he might observe how she wou'd take it. His Comrade would by no means grant his Request till he had his Mistress's Consent which nevertheless soon after demanding,

384 Scarron's Comical Romance. Part III. manding, he eafily obtained. The first Time that these two Ladies came together, which I should have told you they did almost every Day, the two Lovers made their · Exchange according to Agreement, St. Germain slepping up to and courting his Comrade's Mistress, whilst his · Comrade did the like to the haughty Margaret, who received him but very coldly. But as foon as she perceived her former Spark and his Mistress laugh, she began to flye out into a g eat Passion, well knowing then that this · Exchange had been concerted on Agreement, and there-· fore immediately flung out of the Company with Tears in her Eyes. This caused the obliging Mistress to go after and endeavour to appeale her, telling her, this Strastagem of her Lover's was only to know her Mind the · better, and not to either circumvent or affront her, and · therefore earnestly entreated her to take no farther No-· tice of it, but rather to favour the constant Addresses of s fo fincere a Lover as St. Germain had long been to her. · All this notwithstanding gained little upon the humour-· fome Margaret; whereupon the unfortunate St. Germain was driven to fo fierce Despair, that for the future he · fought nothing fo much as to shew the Violence of his · Love by some rash Action, which he hoped might procure his Death. This Resolution, one Night not long · after, he had an Occasion to put in Practice; for whilit . he and feven of his Comrades were coming out of a · Tavern half drunk, and with their Swords by their Sides, they chanced to meet three or four Gentlemen, amongst whom was a Captain of Horse. With these they began to difpute the Wall, and which they obtained by being the greater Number; but the Gentlemen returning im-· mediately after with four or five more of their Com-· pany, purfued these Persons that had so greatly affronted them, and overtook them in the High Street: when · St. Germain being the foremost, and having been the · forwardest in the Affront, the Captain discovering him to be a Trooper by his Hat, stepped up to him, and gave him fuch a lufty Blow with a Backfword, that he

cut thro' his Hat, and cleft Part of his Skull. Having done this, and thinking themselves sufficiently revenged, the Captain and his Companions marched off, leaving St. Germain for dead in the Arms of his Friends.

He had little or no Pulse left, and less Motion, insomuch that they immediately carried him home, and fent for fe-' veral Surgeons, who found Life yet remaining in him. ' These dressed his Wound, stitched up his Skull, and then bound it up. The Noise of this Contest had at first a-' larmed the Neigbourhood; but they were much more ' furprized, when they heard a Man had been fo dangerously ' wounded. The Thing was talked about from one to the other after a different Manner, however all concluded St. Germain was a dead Man. The Report quickly got to his cruel Mistress's House; who, tho' und ested, yet ' immediately ran to fee him, and whom she found in the " Condition I have told you, As foon as she saw Death begin to shew itself in his Face she fell down in a Swoon, ' and it was found no easy Matter to recover her. When ' she came to herself the Neighbours began to accuse her of being the Cause of this Disaster, and that if she had onot been fo unkind to him, he would never have been for desperately rash, this being but the Result of what he had ' frequently threatned. Then began she to tear her Hair, " wring her Hands, and do all that mad People are wont to do. She afterwards proceeded to ferve him with that Diligence, that all the Time of his Illness she would nei-6 ther undress herself, lie down on the Bed, nor permit any of his Sisters to do any Thing about him. After he came to himself, and began to know People, it was judged o necessary she should absent herself, which she was never-' theless with great Difficulty prevailed on to do. He at · length was cured, and when he came to be perfectly well, was married to his capricious Mistress Margaret, to the · Satisfaction of every Body, but much more of himself: After Leander had finished this Novel, the Company returned to the Town, whe e having well supped, and the like, they put the new married Couples to Bed. These Weddings had been kept so secret, that they had no Visitors for two Days after, but on the third they were so embarraffed with Company that they had not Leifure left them to fludy their Pa.ts. After a little Time they all returned to their Exercise as before, except Rogotin, who was fallen into a perfect Despair; as you will find in the following Chapter. S CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Ragotin's Despair and Death, with the End of the Comical Romance.

Ancour now perceiving, that he as well as Ragotin had no more Hopes left of his succeeding in his Loveto Star, got up betimes, and went to the little Man, whom he found likewise risen and writing at the Table. Upon his Enquiry what he was doing, he told him, he was writing his own Epitaph. How! quoth Rancour, do People use to make their Epitaphs before they are dead? But what surprizes me yet more, continued he, is that you make it yourself. Yes, I have made it myself, answered Ragotin, and will shew it you. He thereupon opened a Paper which was folded, and read these Verses.

Ragotin's EPITAPH.

Here th' unlucky Ragotin lies,
Who lived a Slave to fair Star's Eyes,
Yes Destiny him of her depriv'd;
Which made him take a Journey strait
To th' other World compell'd by Fate,
For needs must where the Devil driv'd.
For her a Stroller he became,
And here with Life concludes the same.

This is fine indeed, quoth Rancour; but you will never-bave this Satisfaction to read it on your Tomb; for it is the common Opinion that dead Reop'e neither fee nor understand any Thing they do that survive them. 'Ah! answered Ragotin, you have partly been the Cause of my Missfortunes, for you always gave me Hopes I should succeed, and yet. I am very well assured you all-along knew the contrary.' Then Rancour protested to him, that he knew nothing certainly of it, but consessed, he had all-along suspected it he had told him before, when he advised him to stifle his Passion, she being the proudest Woman in the World. But methinks, added he, her Prosession of a Stroller, which

you know is none of the most honourable, might have somewhat abated her self-conceit; yet has always so happened, that these Sort of Women take much more upon them than belongs to them. But at length, continued he, I must discover something to you that I have kept a Secret till now, and that is, That I was as much in love with Madam Star as you, and I know not how a Person that had so much Conversation as I had with her could have well avoided it; but now that I find myself out of Hopes, as well as you, I am resolved to leave the Company, especially since Mrs. Cave's Brother is come to it, who can all all those Parts, I did; and therefore I believe they will be the more willing to part with me. I will then go to Remes, where the other Company is, and whereinto I do not question I shall be received, because they at present want an Actor. 'Then, quoth Ragotin, fince you was in love with the same Person, I do not know how you should speak to her for me. But Rancour swore like a Devil he was a Man of Honour, and had done all that in him lay to promote his Interest, but said he could never prevail to be heard. Well then, quoth Ragetin, you have resolved to quit the Company, and so have I, but I have determined to make a larger Leap, and for fake the World too. Rancour made no Reflections on his Epitaph, thinking he meant only retiring to a Convent, and therefore took no: Care to prevent his doing himself harm. As for the Epitaph, he never spoke of it to any Body except the Poet Roquebrune, to whom at his Request he gave a Copy. When Ragotin was alone, he began to think what Method he should make use of to rid himself of the World. took a Pistol and charged it with a Brace of Bullets, to shoot himself thro' the Head, but then he was afraid that they would make too much Noise. Then he took the Point of his Sword and put it against his Breast, but as foon as he felt it prick, it made him fick, and therefore that Method was rejected. At last he went down into the Stable, where whilst the Hostlers were at Breakfast he took one of the Halters that he found lying there, and fastening one End to the Rack, put the other with a Noose about his Neck; but when he was about to let himself swing, he found he had not the Heart to do it.

S 2

and

and therefore waited till fome body came in when he was resolved upon it. At length a Gentleman came, and then he let go the Hold of his Hands, but still kept one Foot bearing on the Manger. However he might have been strangled had he continued so hanging for any while. The Boy that went to put up the Gentleman's Horse, seeing Ragotin hang in that Manner, thought verily he had been dead, and therefore began to bawl out like mad for Help. All the Family came down, and feeing a Man hanged, immediately took the Rope from his Neck, and brought him to himself; which you may imagine was not very easy to do. Then he was asked what made him to enter upon fo strange a Resolution, but no Answer could be got out of him. Afterwards Rancour took Madam Star afide, whom I might have called by the Name of Destiny, but being so near the End of this Romance, it will be scarce worth while, and told her the Occasion, as he believed, cf this strange Undertaking. She seemed much surprized, but was much more when she heard this wicked Man tell her he was still in the same Mind, to make away with himfelf, but would not attempt it any more by a Halter. To this Star answered not one Word, whereupon Ragotin took his Leave and departed. Some little Time after he made known to the Company a Design he had to accompany Monsieur Verville to Mans. The Company was willing enough to part with him as long as he had a Companion, but would not have cared to trust him alone. Next Morning they fet out betimes, after that Monsieur Verville had made a thousand Protestations of continued Friendship to the Actors and Actresses, but especially to Destiny, whom he embraced, professing the great Joy he had to see his Designs accomplished. Ragoin made a long Harangue by Way of Compliment, but which was so confused that I do not think fit to infert it. When they were ready to go, Verwille enquired if the Herses had drank. The Hostler told him it was too early in the Morning, but he might let them do it on the Road if he pleased. Then having taken Leave of Monsieur la Carouffiere, they mounted and set forwards. Monsieur la Caroussiere mounted likewise, to go home, to whom the newsmanied Couples returned Abundance

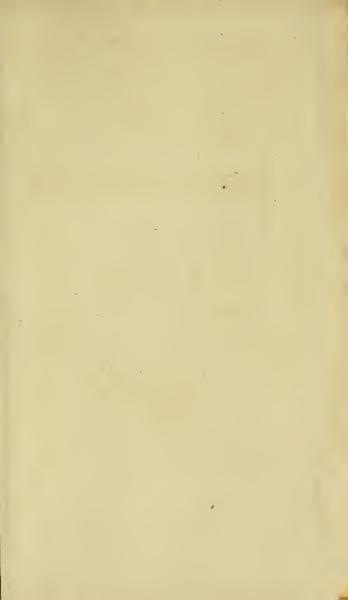
dance of Acknowledgements, for coming fo far to honour their Nuptials with his Presence. After a hundred Protestations of Service on both Sides, he set out, and Rancour followed him, who notwithstanding his Insensibility could not forbear weeping. Destiny wept also, calling to Mind the many Services Rancour had done him, especially that upon the Pont-neuf at Paris, when he was there fet upon and robbed by la Rappiniere and his Followers. soon as Verville and Ragotin were got to a River, they immediately went therein to water their Horses, but it was Ragotin's peculiar ill Fortune to light on a Place where the Bank had been cut down, which causing his Horse to stumble, he threw the little Man violently over his Head into the River, which was exceeding deep in that Part above others. Poor Ragotin knew not how to swim, and tho' he had, his Equipage of Carabine, basket-hilted Sword, and Cloak, would have funk him in spite of his Teeth. One of Verville's Men immediately rode after Ragotin's Horse to catch him, whilst another stripped himfelf and leaped in after the Master to save him, but found him dead. Then Company was called and the Body taken out and laid on the Grafs. Next the Strollers were fent for, who mightily condoled poor Ragotin's Fate; which having done, they took him and baried him in St. Catherine's Chapel, which is not very far from this River. This dismal Event nevertheless verified the Proverb, That he that was born to be hanged would never be drowned. Ragotin experienced the reverse, for he could not strangle himself, and so might be drowned. Thus ended the Life and Adventures of this little comical Advocate, who shall be remembered by the Inhabitants of Mans and Alens n as long as they have any Taste for Strolling, or relish for Stage-plays. Roquebrune seeing Ragotin in his Grave, said, That his Epitaph must be altered in the following Manner.

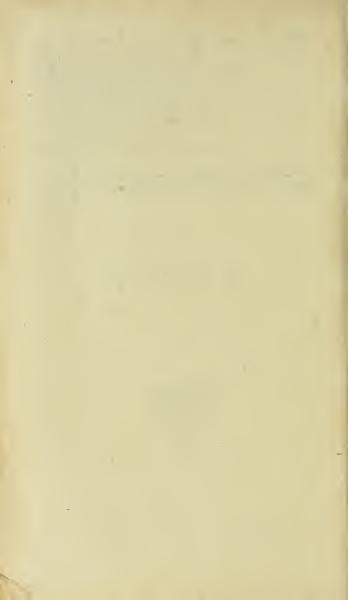
Here th' unlucky Ragotin lies,
Who lived a Slave to fair Star's Eyes,
Yet Destiny him of her depriv'd;
Which made him strait resolve to sloat
To th' other World without a Boat;
For needs must when the Devil driv'd.
For her a Stroller he became,
And here with Life he ends the same.

The Actor and Actresses returned home to their Lodgings, and continued their Exercise with their ordinary. Applause.

FINIS

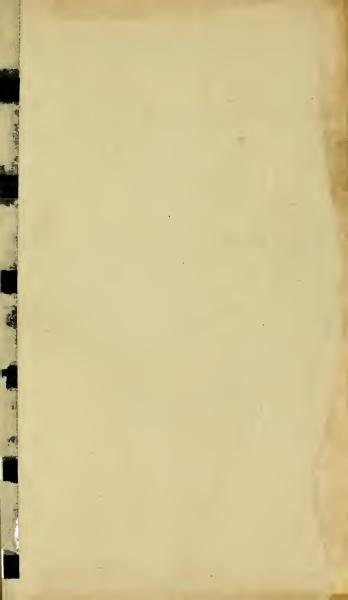


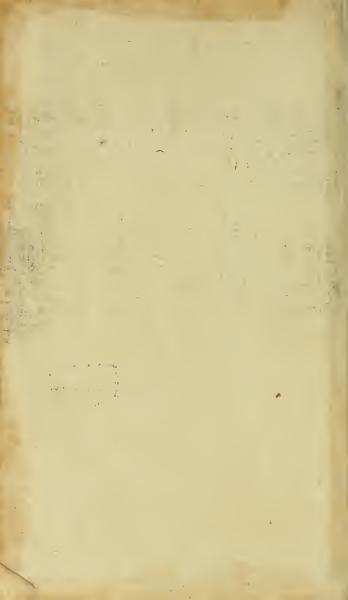






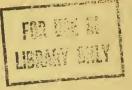






1919 ..23 1759 v.1 Scarron, Paul
The whole comical works

NOT WANTED IN RBSC



PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE

CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

Not wanted in RBSC 12/15/86



